



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Edge 1 15 19, 13, 40's
(

Harvard College
Library



By Exchange

pages 55-19 missing
41-4

3 2044 102 859 337

EX LIBRIS

Sharon Thomas



Illustrated by myself



closed.

Litter

estimated to be
about

all now

It's like this - trying
to make all the drama
and stuff

It's interesting to
when your best friend
"cuts you out"

FRASER AND SQUAIR'S FRENCH GRAMMARS

A French Grammar. 550 pages.....\$1.15

The *original* book, containing: Part I., Elementary Lessons; Part II., Systematic Grammar; III., French Reader; IV., Vocabularies.

Elementary French Grammar. 312 pp. .90

Containing: Part I.; the Irregular Verbs in Part II.; III., the French Reader; IV., Vocabularies.

Abridged French Grammar. 450 pages, 1.10

Containing: Part I.; Part II., with a limited number of Special Exercises on the salient facts of Grammar; IV., Vocabularies.

Shorter French Course. 350 pages.... 1.10

A *later* book than the above. It is elementary, contains the essentials, and has an abundance of exercises.

Alternative English Exercises. 76 pages, .15

Correspond with those in Part I. and Part II. Enable teachers to avoid use of the same written exercises in successive classes.

Death's Modern Language Series

A

SHORTER FRENCH COURSE

BY

W. H. FRASER AND J. SQUAIR

PROFESSORS IN THE ROMANCE DEPARTMENT, UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS
BOSTON NEW YORK CHICAGO

P
Acad
Eduet 1519.13.445

COPYRIGHT, 1913,
BY D. C. HEATH & CO.

ID 6

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
BY EXCHANGE FROM
OBSTETRIC

PREFACE

In preparing this book the authors have had particularly in mind the requirements of elementary classes in schools and colleges.

The amount of grammatical material in each lesson is small, and in nearly all cases the exercises are based on extracts of connected French illustrating the points of grammar under observation. These extracts cover a wide range of topics relating to every-day life. The vocabulary employed has been kept within moderate limits, and consists of words and expressions in common use.

The numerous oral exercises based on the French extracts are not intended to be exhaustive, but are designed rather to furnish suggestions for additional practice of a similar kind, to which the authors attach great importance. In most of the lessons oral or written practice is also provided in the continuation of tense-forms combined into connected phrases. Such exercises should be thoroughly studied and committed to memory, particularly since they often furnish additional examples of constructions which illustrate grammatical points contained in the lesson.

The English sentences in the exercises are provided for translation into French as a final test of knowledge. It is recommended that written tests of this nature should be required only after the translation has been mastered orally. Where two or more sets of English sentences are given, the first one is regularly based directly on the French above it, the additional set or sets being of a more difficult and general character suitable for extra drill and review.

For the convenience of teachers who prefer to begin with the spoken language rather than with the written language, a phonetic transcription of the French of the first ten lessons has been given at the end of the Introduction.

It is hoped that the exercises in general will prove suitable for the purposes of teachers who desire to combine in their class-work

the advantages of the direct method with those of the grammatical method.

The book is not primarily intended to serve as a reference grammar, but the addition of a copious index and the prominent type of the section headings will render it easy of consultation for this purpose.

The authors take this opportunity of expressing their thanks to a large number of teachers for advice and criticism in the preparation of the work, and in particular to Professors Saint-Elme de Champ and W. C. Ferguson, of the University of Toronto, for assistance in the revision of the manuscript and proofs.

JANUARY, 1918

A. H. COOPER
E. J. MELLER

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION:

	PAGE
Pronunciation, etc.	ix
Exercises on Pronunciation	xxiii
Phonetic Transcription of Lessons I-X	xxv

LESSON

	PAGE
I. Indefinite Article	1
II. Definite Article	2
III. Present Indicative of <i>avoir</i> . — Pronouns in Address	3
IV. Present Indicative of <i>être</i> . — Agreement of Pronoun	4
V. Present Indicative Interrogative of <i>avoir</i> and <i>être</i> . — Interrogation. — Possessive de	6
VI. Present Indicative Negative of <i>avoir</i> and <i>être</i> . — Use of à	8
VII. Present Indicative Interrogative Negative of <i>avoir</i> and <i>être</i> . — Agreement of Adjectives	10
VIII. The Possessive Adjective	12
IX. <i>Voici</i> and <i>voilà</i> . — Some Personal Pronoun Objects	14
X. Present Indicative of <i>donner</i> . — Interrogation. — Indirect Object	16
XI. Conjunctive Personal Pronouns	19
XII. The General and Partitive Noun	21
XIII. Expressions of Quantity. — Use of <i>en</i>	23
XIV. Omission of Article and Partitive Sign. — <i>Il y a</i>	25
XV. Irregular Plurals. — Position of Adjectives	28
XVI. Irregular Feminine Adjectives	31
XVII. Use of <i>ce</i> . — Some Relative Pronouns	33
XVIII. Indefinite Pronoun <i>on</i> . — Use of <i>y</i> . — <i>Tout</i>	35
XIX. Regular Conjugations. — Present Indicative of <i>donner</i> , <i>finir</i> , <i>vendre</i> . — Demonstrative Adjective	37
XX. Compound Tenses. — Past Indefinite and Word-Order	40
XXI. Agreement of Past Participle. — Interrogative Adjective <i>quel</i>	42
XXII. Compound Tenses with <i>être</i>	45
XXIII. Disjunctive Personal Pronouns	47
XXIV. Disjunctives (<i>continued</i>). — Present Indicative of <i>voir</i>	48

LESSON	PAGE
XXV. Comparatives and Superlatives	50
XXVI. Infinitive. — Present Indicative of <i>aller</i> and <i>pouvoir</i>	52
XXVII. Imperfect Indicative. — Present and Imperfect of <i>faire</i>	55
XXVIII. Position of Pronoun Objects	58
XXIX. Imperative. — Position of Pronominal Objects	61
XXX. Future and Future Anterior	64
XXXI. Demonstrative Pronouns	66
XXXII. Possessive Pronouns. — Present Indicative of <i>vouloir</i>	69
XXXIII. Interrogative Pronouns and Locutions	72
XXXIV. Relative Pronouns. — Conjunction <i>que</i>	75
XXXV. Indefinite Adjectives and Pronouns. — Negatives . .	78
XXXVI. Orthographical Peculiarities. — Present Indicative of <i>dire</i>	82
XXXVII. Place-Names. — Present Indicative of <i>partir</i>	84
XXXVIII. Conditional and Conditional Anterior	88
XXXIX. Impersonal Verbs	92
XL. Reflexive Verbs	94
XLI. Passive Voice	97
XLII. Reflexive Compound Tenses	99
XLIII. Cardinal Numerals. — Money, Weights, Measures .	102
XLIV. Ordinals. — Fractions. — Numeral Adverbs. — Col- lectives. — Year Dates. — Numerical Titles. — Dimensions	106
XLV. Days. — Dates. — Age. — Holidays	109
XLVI. Time of Day	113
XLVII. Present and Perfect Participle. — Forms in <i>-ing</i> . .	115
XLVIII. Present Subjunctive. — In Noun Clauses. — Tense Sequence	118
XLIX. Subjunctive. — In Adjectival and Adverbial Clauses and in Principal Sentence	122
L. Past Definite. — Pluperfect. — Past Anterior	125
LI. Imperfect Subjunctive. — Tense Sequence	128
LII. Irregular Verbs. — Principal Parts	131
LIII. Verb and Subject. — Agreement and Position . . .	134
LIV. Principal Parts: <i>pouvoir</i> , <i>vouloir</i> , <i>voir</i>	136
LV. Auxiliary Function	137
LVI. Principal Parts: <i>aller</i> , <i>devoir</i> , <i>venir</i>	139
LVII. Use of <i>devoir</i> , <i>aller</i> , <i>venir</i>	140
LVIII. Principal Parts: <i>dire</i> , <i>faire</i> , <i>mettre</i> , <i>prendre</i> . .	143
LIX. Causative Use of <i>faire</i>	144

CONTENTS

LESSON		vii
	PAGE	
LX.	Principal Parts: <i>envoyer, recevoir, mouvoir, mourir</i>	146
LXI.	Additional Verb-Phrases	147
LXII.	Principal Parts: <i>croire, lire</i>	149
LXIII.	Infinitive for Noun Clause	150
LXIV.	Principal Parts: <i>boire, coudre, moudre, résoudre</i>	152
LXV.	Use of Infinitive	153
LXVI.	Principal Parts: <i>battre, dormir, servir, nettoyer</i>	155
LXVII.	Government of Verbs	156
LXVIII.	Principal Parts: <i>partir, sentir, suivre</i>	159
LXIX.	Use of <i>c'est</i> and <i>il est</i>	160
LXX.	Principal Parts: <i>traduire, construire</i>	163
LXXI.	Impersonal Verbs	164
LXXII.	Principal Parts: <i>cuire, courir, valoir</i>	166
LXXIII.	Use of Tenses and Moods	167
LXXIV.	Principal Parts: <i>asseoir, suffire</i>	170
LXXV.	Remarks on Subjunctive	171
LXXVI.	Principal Parts: <i>offrir, souffrir</i>	174
LXXVII.	Infinitive or Subjunctive	175
LXXVIII.	Agreement of Past Participle	177
LXXIX.	Principal Parts: <i>écrire, vivre</i>	179
LXXX.	Partitives. — Article with Titles. — Apposition	180
LXXXI.	Principal Parts: <i>plaire, rire</i>	183
LXXXII.	Omission of Article. — Article for Possessive	184
LXXXIII.	Principal Parts of <i>tenir</i>	187
LXXXIV.	Adjective Forms and Agreement. — Comparatives	188
LXXXV.	Principal Parts: <i>cueillir, ouvrir, tressaillir</i>	191
LXXXVI.	Personal, Possessive and Relative Pronouns	192
LXXXVII.	Principal Parts: <i>craindre, joindre, peindre</i>	195
LXXXVIII.	Pronoun <i>on</i> . — <i>Whoever, Whatever</i>	196
LXXXIX.	Adverbs from Adjectives. — Adverbial Distinctions	199
XC.	Negation	203
XCI.	Use of <i>à, de, en, sur</i> . — Prepositional Distinctions	207
XCII.	Conjunctions	210
MATERIAL FOR CONVERSATION		215
REVIEW EXERCISES		218
APPENDIX		233
VOCABULARIES:		
French-English		263
English-French		287
INDEX		313

INTRODUCTION

A. — The Alphabet

The letters of the alphabet, with their French names, are as follows:

a	a	h	ache	o	o	v	vé
b	bé	i	i	p	pé	w	double vé
c	cé	j	ji	q	ku	x	iks
d	dé	k	ka	r	èr	y	i grec
e	é	l	él	s	ëss	z	zéd
f	éf	m	ém	t	íté		
g	gé	n	én	u	u		

In addition to the letters, the following orthographic signs are employed: —

1. The acute accent (*accent aigu*), as in *étés*.
2. The grave accent (*accent grave*), as in *voilà*, *père*, *où*.
3. The circumflex accent (*accent circonflexe*), as in *âme*, *tête*, *île*, *côté*, *fât*.

NOTE. — None of these marks serve to denote stress.

4. The cedilla (*cédille*), used under *c* to give it the sound of *s* before *a*, *o* or *u*, as in *avançais*, *légon*, *reçu*.
5. The diæresis (*tréma*), to show that the vowel bearing it is to be pronounced separately from the preceding vowel, as in *Noë*.

NOTES. — 1. Words are commonly spelled orally by naming the letters as above, together with the other orthographic signs, if any, e.g. *bonté* = b-é-o-à-n-té-é *accent aigu*; when, however, *e* has no accent mark, it is often named by the sound which it has in *me*, *le*, etc. (cf. *H*, below), e.g. *mer* = èm-e-èr.

2. According to a newer method of spelling, employed by some, the letters are named thus: *a*, *be*, *ce*, *de*, *e*, *fe*, *gueu*, *heu*, *i*, *je*, *ke*, *le*, *me*, *ne*, *o*, *pe*, *re*, *se*, *te*, *u*, *ve*, double *vé*, *kse*, *i*, *ze*.

3. The names of the letters are all masculine, according to some, while others make the names of *f*, *h*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, *s*, feminine, thus: *un f* or *une f*.

B. — Pronunciation and Spelling

The pronunciation will be explained, as far as possible, by comparison with English sounds, but it must never be forgotten that the sounds of any two languages rarely correspond ex-

actly. Moreover, the spelling of French, like that of English, is irregular and inconsistent; hence, to avoid confusion, a phonetic alphabet will be employed, in which each sound is represented by but one symbol, and each symbol represents but one sound.

C. — Phonetic Alphabet

[The examples are in ordinary spelling; the heavy type indicates the letters which correspond to the sounds of the symbols, and the phonetic transcription is given within brackets, as will be done wherever used throughout the book. The alphabet employed is that of the *Association Phonétique Internationale*.]

SYMBOLS	EXAMPLES	SYMBOLS	EXAMPLES
:	(sign of length)	n	agneau, digne [ano, din]
a	patte, part [pat, pair]	o	beau, notre [bo, noitr]
ɑ	pas, passe [pa, paɪs]	ɔ	note, fort [not, foir]
ã	tant, tante [tā, tāt̪]	ɔ̄	bon, oncle [bɔ̄, ɔ̄kl̪]
b	beau, robe [bo, rob̪]	œ	neuf, neuve [nœf, nœv̪]
d	dame, fade [dam, fad̪]	œ̄	un, humble [œ̄, œ̄bl̪]
e	été [ete]	ø	peu, creuse [pø, krøz̪]
ɛ	près, père [pre, peir̪]	p	pas, attrape [pa, atrap̪]
ẽ	pin, mince [pẽ, mẽ:s̪]	r	drap, rare [dra, ra:r̪]
ə	le [le]	s	si, pense [si, pã:s̪]
f	fort, neuf [foir̪, nœf̪]	ʃ	chou, vache [ʃu, vaʃ̪]
g	gant, longue [gã, lõ:g̪]	t	ta, patte [ta, pat̪]
h	aha! [a(h)o]	u	tout, tour [tu, tur̪]
i	ici, vive [isi, viv̪]	y	tu, mur [ty, my:r̪]
j	hier, soleil [jeir̪, sole:j̪]	ɥ	huile [ɥil̪]
k	car, roc [kar, ròk̪]	v	va, cave [va, ka:v̪]
l	la, cale [la, kal̪]	w	oui [wi]
m	mot, dame [mo, dam̪]	z	zone, rose [zo:n, ro:z̪]
n	ni, une [ni, yn̪]	ʒ	je, rouge [ʒe, ru:ʒ̪]

NOTE. — Before studying the pronunciation in detail, there are three important matters affecting it to be considered, namely, (1) syllabication, (2) stress, (3) vowel quantity.

D. — Syllabication

When consonants come between vowels in French the following rules are to be observed: —

1. A single consonant sound goes with the following vowel sound to form a syllable: a-mi, fi-nir, a-gneau, tâ-cher.

2. So also combinations of consonants which may be pronounced together, of which the last consonant is l or r (but not rl, lr): é-clai-rer, ou-vrir, pre-scrit.

3. Other combinations of consonants are divided: par-ler, mon-trer, per-du, fac-teur, mer-cre-di.

4. Final e (usually silent in prose) is regarded as forming a syllable: dou-z(e), bra-v(e), fi-n(e), u-n(e).

5. Doubled letters have regularly only a single sound, but are divided where necessary in writing: pa(s)-ser.

6. The prefix ex- is divided in speaking, but not in writing: ex-a-men (=eg-za-men).

NOTE. — Observe from the above that French syllables end in vowel sounds wherever possible, and hence that the consonantal ending of syllables, so frequent in English, must be carefully avoided. Compare in this respect ci-té, ta-bleau with 'cit-y,' 'tab-leau.'

E. — Stress

In French the syllables of words are uttered with almost equal force, a very slight additional force ("stress") being given to the last syllable, or to the last but one, in case the word ends in e, thus: che-val, par-ler, par-lons, fa-ta-li-té, per-dre, ta-ble.

NOTE. — Remember that accent marks have nothing to do with stress.

F. — Vowel Quantity

By vowel quantity is meant the length of time consumed in uttering a vowel sound. The following are the principal general rules: —

1. Final vowel sounds (including nasals) are short: fini, vie, parler, tableau, donner, tant, sapin.

2. All stressed vowels are long before the sounds [v], [z], [ʒ], [j], [r final]: cave [ka:v], amuse [amy:z], rouge [ru:ʒ], feuille [fœ:j], faire [feɪ:r], livre [li:vʁ].

3. Of stressed vowels standing before other consonant sounds, nasals are long: grande [grã:d], prince [prɛ:s]; [ø] and [ɛ] are long: faute [fɔ:t], meute [mœ:t]; [ɑ] long (almost always): passe [pa:s]; [ɛ] long or short: reine [ʁe:n], vienne [vjɛn]; other vowels regularly short.

NOTE. — It is also possible to distinguish between "long" and "half-long" vowels in unstressed syllables, but for simplicity only long vowels will be indicated in the transcription.

G. — Pronunciation of Vowel Sounds

In pronouncing French vowel sounds the following general rules should be carefully observed:—

1. Never drawl a vowel sound or allow it to become a diphthong, as often happens in English; French vowels are uniform throughout their utterance, the position of the organs of speech remaining unchanged during the whole continuance of the sound.

2. Never slur over or clip out vowel sounds (except *e* in certain cases, see below), but give each its full value.

3. Lip rounding (as observed in ‘who,’ ‘no,’ ‘law’) and lip retraction, that is, drawing the corners of the mouth backward as in smiling (to be observed in ‘let,’ ‘hat’) are much more definite and energetic than in English.

NOTE. — Some vowel sounds are denoted by a single letter; others are denoted by two or more letters; see below.

H. — Single Letters denoting Vowel Sounds

- a usually like *a* in ‘pat,’ but with wider mouth opening and definite lip retraction; the point of the tongue is against the lower teeth — Symbol [a]: patte [pat], part [pair], chat [ʃa], malade [malad], papa [papa], mal [mal].
- à always as above: là [la], voilà [vwala].
- â usually like *a* in ‘ah!’ ‘father,’ but with the mouth well open, the lips neither rounded nor retracted, and the tongue not touching the lower teeth — Symbol [ɑ]: pâte [paɪt], bâter [batɪr], bâton [batɔ̃].

EXCEPTIONS: 1. a before final s, usually before medial s, and also in some rarer combinations (but with varying usage) = [ɑ]: pas [pa], passer [paœ̃], gagner [gane], nation [nasjɔ̃], occasion [ɔkazjɔ̃], bataille [batœ̃]. 2. à in verb-endings = [a]: nous donnâmes [donam], vous donnâtes [donat].

- é almost always like *a* in ‘patience,’ but with definite lip retraction — Symbol [e]: été [ete], allé [ale], né [ne], déréglé [deregle].
- è, ê always like *e* in ‘let,’ but with the mouth wider open and the lips definitely retracted — Symbol [e]: près [pre], prêt [pre], père [peir], espèce [espes], fête [fert], même [me:m], êtes [eit].
- e (1) like *e* in ‘the boy,’ but with slight lip rounding — Symbol [œ]. It is so pronounced in monosyllables and in any syllable

- not final before a single consonant sound (but see note, below): *me* [mə], *le* [lə], *que* [kə], *cheval* [ʃəvall], *tenir* [təni:r], *tu seras* [sera], *ceci* [səsi], *mercredi* [merkrədi], *appartement* [apartəmã]. This letter is commonly called *e* mute (*e muet*).
 (2) but in the endings *-er*, *-ez* (r, z silent), in words like *les*, *mes*, etc., in *et* and a few other words, *e* = [e]: *donner* [dənə], *février* [fevrje], *avez* [ave], *chez* [sel], *les* [le], *ses* [sel], *et* [e], *pied* [pjel], *clef* [kle], etc.
 (3) it regularly has the sound of [e] (cf. è, above), before a doubled consonant, or before two or more consonant sounds: *cesser* [sesel], *perdre* [perdr], *espérer* [espere]; also before a final consonant sound, and before silent final t: *avec* [avek], *cet* [set], *fier* [fje:r], *jouet* [ʒwe] (but not in *et*); also before *il*, *ill*: *soleil* [sole:j], *abeille* [abe:j]; further, in *tu es* [e], *il est* [e].

EXCEPTIONS: Observe *descendre* [desõ:dr], *femme* [fam], and adverbs in *-emment*, e.g., *prudemment* [prydamã]. Words in *eff-*, *ex-* (before vowel), *dess-* may be pronounced either with [e] or [e]: *effet* [efe or efe], *example* [egzã:pl or egzã:pl], *dessert* [*deseir* or *deseir*], but observe *deessus* [dësy], *deessous* [dësu] and words like *ressembler* [rësble].

Silent e: The letter *e* is silent in prose (1) at the end of words: *rue* [ry], *donnée* [dønel], *place* [plas], *ai-je* [e: ʒ], *table* [tabl], *vendre* [vãdr]; (2) within words after a vowel sound: *gaieté* [gete], *remercierons* [rëmersirɔ]; (3) in the verb-endings *-es*, *-ent*: *tu donnes* [don], *ils donnent* [døn], *ils donnaient* [døne].

NOTE. — In ordinary speech the [e] sound is usually slighted or wholly omitted in most cases where consonantal combinations resulting therefrom can be readily pronounced, e.g. *mad(e)moisell(e)*, *ach(e)ter*, *maint(e)nant*, *am(e)ner*; but *mercredi*, *apercevant*, *lentement*, etc.

i, i like *i* in ‘machine,’ with energetic lip retraction (never like *i* in ‘city’) — Symbol [i]: *ici* [isi], *vive* [vir], *vie* [vi], *il* [il], *île* [il], *famille* [fami:j].

EXCEPTION: For *i* = [j], see Semi-Vowels, below.

o usually like *o* in ‘not,’ but with definite lip rounding — Symbol [ɔ]: note [nɔt], dot [dɔt], fort [fɔ:r], robe [rob], école [ekɔl], votre [vɔ:tʁ], étoffe [etof], orner [ɔrne].

ø regularly like *o* in ‘ocean,’ but with much tenser lip rounding and protrusion, as for whistling — Symbol [ø]: côté [kote], vôtre [vo:tʁ], bientôt [bjë:tô].

EXCEPTIONS: 1. *o* = [o] as a final sound, and in a few other words: *mot* [mo], *nos* [no], *gros* [gro]; *rose* [roiz], *chose* [sɔ:z],

grosse [gro:s], *fosse* [fos], *position* [pozisjɔ], etc. 2. **ø** = [ɔ] in a few words: *hôtel* [ɔtel], *rôti* [rɔti], etc.

u, û has no English counterpart; the tongue position is the same as for [i], but with tense lip rounding, without protrusion; best acquired by prolonging the [i] sound, meanwhile rounding the lips, or by rounding the lips and bringing the tongue to the [i] position — Symbol [y]: *tu* [ty], *mur* [my:r], *mûr* [my:r], *vu* [vy], *rue* [ry], *utile* [ytill], *fût* [fy], *sur* [syr].

EXCEPTION: For **u** = [u], see Semi-Vowels, below.

y when not beginning a syllable, **y** has the same sound as **i** — Symbol [i]: *syllabe* [silab].

EXCEPTION: For **y** beginning a syllable, see Semi-Vowels, below.

I. — Combinations denoting Vowel Sounds

ai, aî usually = [ɛ], see **è**, above; **aî** always thus: *mais* [me], *faire* [feir], *j'aimais* [eme], *j'aimerais* [emre], *maitre* [me:tr].

EXCEPTIONS: 1. **ai** = [e], as in *été*, when final in verb-endings: *je donnai* [dɔne], *je donnerai* [dɔnre], *j'ai* [e]; also in *gai* [ge], and usually in *je sais* [se], *il sait* [se], *maison* [mezɔ]. 2. **ai** = [ə], as in *le*, in *-ais-* of certain forms of the verb *faire*: *nous faisons* [fəzɔ], *je faisais* [feze], *faisant* [fezə], etc.

au, eau regularly = [o], see **ø**, above: *autre* [otr], *aux* [o], *eau* [o], *chevaux* [ʃøvo], *sauter* [sote], *tableau* [tablo], *beau* [bo].

EXCEPTIONS: **au** = [ɔ], see **o** above, in the future and conditional of *avoir*, and in a few other words: *j'aurai* [ɔre], *j'aurais* [ɔre], etc., *Paul* [pol], *mauvais* [møve], etc.

ay, ey when a final sound = [ɛ]: *je paye* [pe], *Cambray* [käbre], *Ney* [ne]; but **a** or **e** in this combination = [e] when the **y** belongs to the next syllable: *ayez* [eje], *payer* [peje], *grasseyer* [graseje].

EXCEPTIONS: *pays* [pei], *paysan* [peizə].

ei always = [e]: *reine* [rein], *Seine* [se:n].

eu, eû (1) a sound which has no English counterpart; the tongue position is the same as for [e], as in *été*, with tense lip rounding and protrusion, as for whistling; to acquire the sound, prolong [e] and round the lips, or round the lips and bring the tongue to the [e] position — Symbol [ø]. Thus pronounce **eu**, **œu** as a final sound, and also **eu** before **s** and sometimes **t** within a word: *peu* [pø], *feu* [fø], *il veut* [vø], *heureux*

[œrø], bœufs [bø], creuser [krøze], meute [mø:t]; also, èù in jeûne [ʒø:n], jeûner [ʒøne]; further, déjeuner [deʒøne].

EXCEPTIONS: eu, èù in tenses of avoir = [y], e being regarded as silent: eu [y], nous èûmes [ym], ils èurent [yr].

(2) also a sound which has no English counterpart; the tongue position is the same as for [e], as in près, with definite lip rounding; best acquired by combining the two positions as explained for (1) above — Symbol [œ]. Thus pronounce eu, œu before a final consonant sound (not s), and before il, ill: neuf [nœf], neuve [nœ:v], fleur [fœir], leur [lœir], bœuf [bœf], feuille [fœ:j].

ue, œ the same sound as eu (2), above: orgueil [ɔrgœ:j], cueillir [kœjir], œil [œ:j].

ou, oû regularly like oo in ‘boot,’ but with much tenser lip rounding and protrusion, as for whistling — Symbol [u]: tout [tu], doux [du], tour [tur], ou [u], oû [u], goût [gu], goûter [gute], rouge [ru:ʒ]; observe aôût [u], a being silent.

NOTE. — For ou, ol, ol, oe, oû, see also Semi-Vowels, below.

K. — The Nasal Vowels

These sounds are quite foreign to English, and are formed by uttering the French vowel sounds [ɑ], [ɛ], [ɔ], [œ], and at the same time allowing the soft palate to hang freely as in breathing, thus causing the breath to escape partly through the nose. Control of the soft palate may be acquired by prolonging the first part of the sound of ang as in ‘sang,’ but carefully avoiding the completion of the sound. It must be especially noted that there is absolutely no sound of n, m or ng, in French nasal vowels, and hence great care must be taken neither to raise the tongue nor close the lips until the sound is complete.

The sign of nasality orthographically is a single n or m in the same syllable with the vowel; thus, nasal are: tant, sembler, fin, peindre, plein, leçon, bon, tomber, chacun; but if n or m is followed by a vowel, or is doubled, or if mn occurs, there is regularly no nasality; thus, non-nasal are: fine, commune, pleine, ennemi, innocent, inutile, bonne, condamner.

NOTE. — The rule does not apply to certain words having en-, enn-, emm-, for which see note, below.

an, am like nasalized [ɑ] as described above — Symbol [ã]: tant [tã], tante [tã:t], gant [gã], an [ã], viande [vjã:d], champ [ʃã], en [ã], encre [ã:kʁ], temps [tã], sembler [sã:bλ].

EXCEPTIONS: en = [ɛ̃], see ain, etc., below, in some forms of tenir, venir, as a final sound, and in some other words: vient [vjɛ̃], tiendrai [tjɛ̃dʁe], bien [bjɛ̃], examen [egzamɛ̃], chien [ʃjɛ̃], Benjamin [bɛ̃zamɛ̃].

NOTE. — Observe ennui [ãnɥi], emmener [ãmne], with doubled n, m, and emivrer [ãnvri].

ain, aim like nasalized [ɛ] as explained above — Symbol [ɛ̃]: pain [pɛ̃], faim [fɛ̃], plein [plɛ̃], peindre [pɛ̃dr], Reims [rɛ̃s], pin [pɛ̃], prince [prɛ̃s], jardin [ʒardɛ̃], simple [sɛ̃pl], impossible [ɛ̃pɔsibl], syntaxe [sɛ̃taks], symbole [sɛ̃bol].

NOTE. — Observe also the same sound in tñmes [tɛ̃:m], vñmes [vɛ̃:m].

on, om like nasalized [ɔ] as explained above — Symbol [ɔ̃]: bon [bɔ̃], oncle [ɔ̃:kl], mon [mɔ̃], ont [ɔ̃], leçon [leɔ̃], tomber [tɔ̃be], ombre [ɔ̃br], compter [kɔ̃te].

EXCEPTION: on in monsieur = [ə]: monsieur [məsjø].

un, um like nasalized [œ] as explained above — Symbol [œ̃]: un [œ̃], chacun [ʃakœ̃], emprunter [œ̃prœ̃te], parfum [parfœ̃], à jeun [a ʒœ̃].

oin for the sound of oin, see Semi-Vowels, below.

L. — Semi-Vowels

When i, y, ou do not of themselves form a syllable, but come before another vowel sound in the same syllable, they are pronounced with greater rapidity and tenseness of the vocal organs concerned, thus assuming a partially consonantal value, as described below, thus:

i, y like very brief and forcible y in 'yes' — Symbol [j]: viande [vjã:d], hier [je:r], fier [fje:r], bien [bjɛ̃], faience [fajã:s], yeux [jø], ayez [eje], payer [peje], Lyon [ljɔ̃].

ou like very brief and tense w in 'we,' with close lip rounding and protrusion, as for whistling — Symbol [w]: oui [wi], jouer [ʒwe], louer [lwe], Louis [lwi].

NOTE. — When u of gu, qu (usually silent) is pronounced, as it sometimes is, it has the sound [w] before a in some words: lingual [lɪgwal], équateur, [ekwateœr].

oi, of have the sound of [w]+[a] or [a], the latter usually after r, and in a few other words: moi [mwa], voici [vwasi], boîte

[bwɑ:t], froid [frwa], roi [rwa], trois [trwa], croire [krwa:r], le bois [bwa], le mois [mwa], pois [pwa], etc.

- œ, oe** in a few words = [w] + [a]: poëlle [pwal], moëlle [mwal], etc.
- oin** has the sound of [w] + [ɛ]: loin [lwɛ], joindre [ʒwɛ:dr].
- u** has no counterpart in English; best acquired by substituting [y] for it (as in tu, etc.), and gradually increasing the speed and force of utterance: lui [lui], suis [su:i], puis [pu:i], fruit [frui], pluie [plui], tuile [tu:i], cuisine [kuzin], nuance [nɥis], aiguille [eguij] or eguij, questeur [kuestœir], Quirinal [kjirinal].

NOTE.—When u of *gu*, *qu* (usually silent) is pronounced, as it sometimes is, it commonly has this sound before e, i, as in the last three examples.

M. — Consonants

The sounds of the consonants can be sufficiently described, for the most part, by noting the differences between their mode of formation and that of the nearest English sounds, and by observing the following general rules:—

1. The movements of the vocal organs are more prompt, definite and vigorous in uttering French consonants than for the corresponding English sounds.
2. Note the distinction of “voice,” which means the humming or droning sound produced by the vibration of the vocal chords (as observed in the v of ‘vine’ as compared with f of ‘fine’), and remember that French voiced consonants are much more fully voiced than corresponding English sounds.
3. Final consonants are more usually silent, but final c, f, l and r in monosyllables are more usually sounded.
4. With slight exceptions, French doubled consonants have only a single sound.

NOTE.—The doubling of consonant sounds is characteristic of very careful speech, and only some of the more striking cases are mentioned below.

- b** regularly like b in ‘bit,’ ‘tub,’ fully-voiced — Symbol [b]: beau [bo], robe [rob], bon [bɔ], table [tabl], là-bas [la ba], tomber [tɔbe], abbé [abe].

EXCEPTION: b has the sound of p when next before a voiceless consonant: absolument [apsɔlymã], obtenir [ɔptənir], etc.

c (1) like **k** in 'take' — Symbol [k]. Thus **c** before **a**, **o**, **u** or a consonant, or when final: *car* [kar], *école* [ekɔl], *écoutter* [ekute], *curé* [kyre], *craie* [kre], *classe* [klas], *avec* [avek], *sec* [sek].

(2) **c** has the same sound as **s** (1) below when standing before **e**, **i**, **y** — Symbol [s]: *ce* [sə], *ceci* [səsi], *avancer* [avãsɛ], *ces* [sɛ], *bicyclette* [bisiklet].

EXCEPTION: **c** = [g] in second [segɔ̃] and its derivatives.

c always like **s** (1) below — Symbol [s]: *j'avançais* [avãsɛ], *avançons* [avãsɔ̃], *leçon* [lesɔ̃], *reçu* [resy].

NOTE. — The letter **c** is used only before **a**, **o**, **u** in order to denote the [s] sound.

ch usually like **sh** in 'show,' but is more energetically uttered — Symbol [ʃ]: *chou* [ʃu], *vache* [vaʃ], *chaise* [ʃe:z], *chercher* [ʃerʃe], *architecte* [arʃitekt].

EXCEPTION: **ch** = [k], in some words from Greek: **choléra** [kolera], **chœur** [kœir], etc.

d like **d** in 'did,' fully voiced, with the point of the tongue thrust against the lower teeth, its upper surface forming a closure with the upper teeth, gums and palate; or with the tongue so far advanced that its point forms a closure with the upper teeth and gums — Symbol [d]: *dame* [dam], *malade* [malad], *dans* [dã], *donner* [done], *devant* [devã], *viande* [vjã:d], addition [adisjɔ̃], *sud* [syd].

NOTE. — It must be observed that in forming English **d** (as also English **l**, **n**, **t**) the point of the tongue touches the roof of the mouth some little distance from the teeth, and that for corresponding French sounds the point of the tongue must be brought down and advanced to the teeth.

f like **f** in 'fife' — Symbol [f]: *fort* [fɔ:r], *neuf* [noef], *œuf* [œf], *fine* [fin], *frère* [frer], *affaire* [afe:r].

g (1) like **g** in 'gig,' fully voiced — Symbol [g]. Thus **g** before **a**, **o**, **u** (but see **gu**) or a consonant: *gare* [gair], *gant* [gã], *Gobelin* [gɔblɛ̃], *goût* [gul], *aigu* [egy], *grand* [grã], *glace* [glas].

(2) like **s** in 'measure,' but more energetically uttered and fully voiced — Symbol [ʒ]. Thus **g** before **e**, **i**, **y**: *gens* [ʒã], *rouge* [ru:ʒ], *agir* [azi:r], *manger* [mãʒe], *gymnase* [simna:z].

gu before **e**, **i**, regularly like **g** (1): *guérir* [geri:r], *longue* [lɔ:g], *langue* [lã:g], *guide* [gid], *languir* [lãgi:r], *guère* [ge:r].

ge always = [ʒ]: *je mangeais* [mãʒe], *mangeons* [mãʒɔ̃], *je mangrai* [mãʒe], *Georges* [ʒɔ:rʒ].

NOTE. — **ge** must be used to denote this sound before **a** or **o** in the conjugation of verbs in -**ger**.

- gn** regularly somewhat like *ni* in 'opinion'; it is formed by pressing the upper middle surface of the tongue against the roof of the mouth, the tip being at the same time thrust against the back surface of the lower front teeth — Symbol [n]: agneau [aŋø], digne [dipn], campagne [kãpaŋ], gagner [gaŋe], accompagner [akɔpɑŋe], magnifique [majnikif], régime [ʁeim].

EXCEPTION: gn=[g]+[n] in some learned words: cognition [kognisjɔ̃], etc.

- h** when heard at all, which occurs only in hiatus, has a sound much weaker than *h* in 'hat' — Symbol [h]: aha! [a(h)a].

NOTE. — The letter *h* is known as *h* mute (*h* *muet*) when it gives rise to elision and liaison (cf. *N*, *O*, below), e.g. l'homme [lom], les hommes [les om], and *h* aspirate (*h* *aspire*) when it does not, e.g. le héros [le ero], les héros [le ero]. The learner should regard *h* as absolutely silent.

- j** always has the same sound as *g* (2), above — Symbol [ʒ]: je [ʒø], jeu [ʒø], jour [ʒuir]; so also *je* (*e* being regarded as silent); Jean [ʒã].

- k, ck** always like *k* in 'take' — Symbol [k]: kilogramme [kilogram], bifteck [biftek].

NOTE. — *k* is a rare letter in French.

- l** regularly like *l* in 'law,' fully voiced, but with the tongue advanced as for [d] — Symbol [l]: la [la], cale [kal], aller [ale], table [tabl], oncle [ɔ:kł], ils [il], village [vila:ʒ], fil [fil].

NOTES. — 1. The sound of *l* is frequently doubled when written double in initial syllable: illégal [illegál], illustre [illystr]; and by some in words like intelligent.

2. The *l* is silent in fils [fis].

- ll** the letters *ll* after *i* (not initial), and *il* or *ill* after other vowels, have the same sound as that described for *i* as a semi-vowel (cf. *L*, above) — Symbol [j]: fille [fi:j], billet [bij], briller [brije], soleil [sôle:j], feuille [fœ:j], fauteuil [fotœ:j], écureuil [ekyrœ:j], bataille [batu:j], travail [trava:j], travailler [travaje].

NOTE. — This sound of *l* is called *l mouillé*.

EXCEPTIONS: mille [mil], millier [milje], million [miljɔ̃], ville [vil], village [vila:ʒ], tranquille [träkil], etc.

- m** regularly like *m* in 'main,' fully voiced — Symbol [m]: même [me:m], mot [mo], dame [dam], plume [plym], mon [mɔ̃], homme [ɔm], femme [fam].

EXCEPTIONS: *m* is silent in automne [oton], condamner [kɔdane].

- n** regularly like **n** in 'none,' fully voiced, and with the tongue advanced as for [d] — Symbol [n]: non [nɔ̃], ni [ni], lunettes [lynɛt], bonne [bon], donner [dɔ̃ne].

EXCEPTION: **n** is silent in the 3d plural of verbs: ils parlent [parl], ils vendaient [vāde].

- p** regularly like **p** in 'pat,' 'rap' — Symbol [p]: patte [pat], at-trape [atrap], père [peir], papier [papje], plume [plym], apporter [apɔ̃ter].

EXCEPTIONS: **p** is silent in some words: sept [set], compter [kɔ̃te], sculpter [skylte], etc.

- ph** always like **f** — Symbol [f]: philosophe [filozof], Sophie [sofi].

- q, qu** the letter **q** always and **qu** regularly = [k]: cinq [sɛk], coq [kɔk], qui [ki], que [ke], quand [kā].

- r** the sound of **r** has no English counterpart; it is formed by trilling the tip of the tongue against the upper gums, or even against the upper front teeth. The tongue must, of course, be well advanced, and never retracted or turned upward. The sound may be best practised at first in combinations with **d**, e.g. dry, drip, drop (as in Scotch or Irish dialect) and afterwards in combinations in which it is less easily pronounced — Symbol [r]: drap [dra], très [tʁe], prêt [pre], rare [ra:r], frère [fre:r], sœur [sœ:r], sur [syr], encre [ã:kṛ], erreur [erœ:r]; **r** is doubled in the irregular future and conditional of certain verbs: je courrai [kurre], il mourrait [murre].

NOTE. — The above **r** is called "lingual" **r** (*r lingual*). Another **r** sound (called in French *r uvulaire* = "uvular" **r**), used especially in Paris and in other large cities and towns of France, is formed by drawing the tongue backward and elevating its root so as to cause a trilling of the uvula, but this **r** is usually more difficult for English-speaking people to acquire.

- s**
- (1) like **s** in 'see,' but with the tongue advanced; sometimes the tip of the tongue is thrust against the lower teeth — Symbol [s]. Pronounce **s** thus when it begins a word (or a word in a compound) and in general when not between vowels; **ss** always: si [sil], pense [pā:s], son [sɔ̃], sœur [sœ:r], vraisemblable [vresãblabl], classe [kla:s], laisser [lese], mars [mars], ours [urs], fils [fis].
 - (2) like **z** in 'zone,' **s** in 'rose' with the tongue as for **s** (1), fully voiced — Symbol [z]. Pronounce **s** thus regularly between vowels: rose [ro:z], chaise [sɛ:z], maison [mezɔ̃], cousin [kuze], amuser [amyze].

- sc** always like s (1): science [sjū:s], scène [se:n].
- t** (1) regularly like t in 'time,' but with the tongue advanced as for [d] — Symbol [t]: ta [ta], patte [pat], ton [tɔ], tes [te], tante [tā:t], écouter [ekute], lettre [letr], sept [set], huit [qit].
 (2) but in words whose English forms have the sh or ch sound t=[s]: nation [nasjɔ:s], patience [pasjū:s], prophétie [profesi], etc.
 Note. — t is always silent in et (conjunction).
- th** always like t (1): thé [te], théâtre [tea:tr].
- v** always like v in 'five,' fully voiced — Symbol [v]: va [va], cave [kav], voilà [vwala], vous [vu], pauvre [po:vvr], trouver [truve].
- w** (1) like [v], in some English and German words: wagon [vagɔ], Wagram [vagram], etc.
 (2) like [w], in some English words: tramway [tramwe], etc.
- x** (1) usually = [ks]: extrême [ekstrem], excellent [eksəlā].
 (2) in ex- followed by a vowel x=[gz]: exemple [egzā:pl or egzā:pl], exercice [egzersis or egzersis].
 EXCEPTIONS: 1. x=[s] in dix [dis], six [sis], soixante [swasɔ:t] and rarer words. 2. x=[z] in deuxième [døzjem], sixième [sizjem], dixième [dizjem], dix-huit [diz qit], dix-neuf [diz nœf], etc.
- z** like s (2) above: onze [ɔ:z], zone [zo:n], gaz [ga:z].

N. — Liaison

In a group of words closely connected grammatically, a final consonant sound is usually joined in pronunciation with a following word beginning with a vowel or h mute (*liaison* = "linking," "joining"):

1. Certain consonants change their sound in liaison, thus: d=t, f (in *neuf*)=v, g=k, s or x=z; moreover, the n of a nasal is joined, and the nasal sometimes loses its nasality.

2. The groups requiring liaison are:

(a) Article, noun, adjective: un homme [œ nœm], les autres plumes [le zo:tœr plym], bon ami [bo nami].

(b) Adjective, noun: petit enfant [peti tā:fā], petits enfants [peti zā:fā], dix ans [di zā], sang humain [sā kymē], des hommes aimables [de zom zemabl].

(c) Adverb, adjective or adverb: très âgé [tre zazé], fort habilement [for tabilmā].

(d) Pronoun, verb: vous avez [vu zave], sont-ils [sɔ̃ til], vend-il [vã til], nous y sommes [nu zi som].

(e) Preposition and governed word: sans eux [sã ze], chez un ami [se zɛ nam].

(f) The **d** of quand (not interrogative): quand il parle [kã til parl].

(g) Forms of être and avoir, especially as auxiliaries: ils sont ici [il sɔ̃ tisi], ils étaient arrivés [il zete tarive].

(h) A few common phrases, e.g. de temps en temps [də tã zã tã], etc.

3. The **t** of et, and the **m** of a nasal are never joined: lui et elle [lui e el], le champ est à moi [le ſy e ta mwa].

Note. — The sounds joined belong in pronunciation to the following word, as shown above, but, for simplicity, they will be indicated in the transcriptions as final of the preceding word, e.g. les hommes [lez om].

O. — Elision

The letters **a**, **e**, **i** are silent in certain cases before a vowel or **h** mute, and are replaced by an apostrophe (*apostrophe*): —

1. Thus **a** of la (article or pronoun): l'amie (=la amie), l'huile (=la huile), nous l'avons (=la avons).

2. Thus **e** of le (article or pronoun), of je, me, te, se, de, ce, ne, que (and some of its compounds): l'ami (=le ami), j'aime (=je aime), il m'écoute (=me écoute), d'un (=de un), c'est (=ce est), n'a-t-il (=ne a-t-il), qu'est-ce (=que est-ce), jusqu'à (=jusque à), etc.

3. Thus **i** of si before il or ils (not elsewhere): s'il (=si il).

P. — Punctuation

The same punctuation marks are used in French as in English.

1. Their French names are:

· point	- trait d'union	[] crochets
,	tiret, or tiret de	{ accolade
; point et virgule	séparation	
:	... points suspensifs	* astérisque
? point d'interrogation	" " guillemets	† croix de renvoi
! point d'exclamation	() parenthèse	

2. They are used as in English, but the *tiret* (dash) commonly serves to denote a change of speaker: Qui est là? dis-je. — Personne. — Quoi! personne! — Personne.

Q. — Capitals

Capitals (lettres majuscules or capitales) are used much as in English. Note however the following:

Un livre français.

A French book.

Cet Anglais parle français.

That Englishman speaks French.

Il arrivera le mardi 10 mai.

He will come on Tuesday the 10th of May.

Je dis ce que je pense.

I say what I think.

EXERCISES ON PRONUNCIATION

NOTE. — These exercises contain, for the most part, words chosen from the first twelve lessons, and should be frequently practised, selecting a paragraph or two at a time for this purpose, with a review of the phonetic principles involved. Pronouncing in unison, either for the whole class, or in groups, will be found of great advantage.

1. [a] and [ɑ]: la, ta, il a, là, avec, table, classe, pas, pâte, nous avons, Marie, femme, quatre, arbre, là-bas, dame, papa, moi, trois, ami, village, boîte, voilà, donnât, donnâmes, occasion, écraser.

2. [e] and [ɛ]: école, et, élève, chaise, crayon, Seine, fenêtre, papier, j'ai, avez, craie, église, mes, ses, elle, tu es, il est, cahier, vous êtes, derrière, grammaire, jouer, mère, mais, même, lunettes, français, lettre, donnai, il sait, abeille.

3. [ø] and [œ]: deux, peu, monsieur, sœur, leur, professeur, feu, il veut, heureux, neuf, bœuf, fleur, facteur, creuser, œufs, œil, il cueille.

4. [ə]: le, me, te, se, fenêtre, devant, maintenant, cheval, ceci, mercredi, monsieur, que, petit, promenade, leçon, donnestu, faisant, je faisais, faisons, venir, tenir, appeler.

5. [i] and [y]: livre, ils, Marie, une, plume, sur, ici, oui, qui, lunettes, amuser, étudier, église, diligent, fille, jolie, petite, amie, style, mûr, il fût, ile, nous eûmes, ils eurent, eu.

6. [ɔ] and [o]: école, porte, homme, nos, vos, gros, encore, fort, joli, aussi, pauvre, chapeau, votre, vôtre, beau, alors, cocher, autre, bonne, donner, pomme.

7. [u]: nous, vous, cour, sous, ou, où, pour, cousin, tout, beaucoup, rouge, goût, goûter, le mois d'août.

8. [ɑ] and [ã]: bas, an, tas, tant, tâte, tante, encre, dans,

Jean, devant, ensemble, sembler, enfant, gant, champ, encore, content, grande, viande.

9. [e] and [ɛ]: prêt, père, fait, fin, paix, pin, lait, lin, mais, main, jardin, plein, simple, peintre, plaindre, besoin, loin.

10. [ɔ] and [œ]: bonne, bon, personne, son, donne, donc, crayon, oncle, mon, ton, onze, maison, content, leçon, monter, accompagner, compter, tomber.

11. [œ] and [œ̃]: leur, un, peur, chacun, quelqu'un, parfum, emprunter.

12. [i] and [j]: vie, viande, si, sienne, vienne, fille, pièce, bille, papier, cahier, étudier, crayon, monsieur, ayez, travailler, travail, billet, abeille, vieil, œil, yeux.

13. [y] and [ɥ]: su, suis, lu, lui, tulle, tuile, saluer, nuage, pluie, cuisine, celui, minuit, juin, juillet.

14. [u] and [w]: où, oui, loue, louer, bout, boîte, Louis, voiture, mademoiselle, histoire, poire, moi, tramway.

15. [p] and [b]: pas, bas, papa, baba, père, peur, bon, bonne, porte, papier, pu, bu, pain, bain, obtenir, apporter, appeler.

16. [t] and [d]: ton, don, tant, dans, tout, doux, quatre, jardin, lettre, mettre, admettre, dame, diligent.

17. [f] and [v]: fin, vin, feu, il veut, livre, élève, frère, enfant, avec, affaire, géographie, devant, pauvre.

18. [k] and [g]: canne, gant, coup, goût, que, quatre, garçon, langue, craie, grand, grammaire, qui, expliquer, exemple.

19. [s] and [z]: son, sa, zone, onze, sous, sur, chaise, église, ici, garçon, dix, six, six hommes, dixième, sixième, maison, classe, passer, leçon, pièce, expliquer, examen.

20. [ʃ] and [ʒ]: champ, gens, chaise, joli, riche, image, poche, chapeau, chercher, jardin, Jean, Georges.

21. [l] and [n]: le, la, les, nous, nôtre, nos, leur, plume, table, non, canne, bonne, oncle, village, ville, tranquille, année, annoncer, automne, aller, allons, semblable.

22. [b] and [m]: bon, mon, bas, ma, homme, femme, Marie, madame, même, mère, grammaire, nous sommes.

23. [r]: drap, très, trois, près, grand, craie, crayon, porte, forte, riche, arbre, encre, derrière, jardin, sur, fleur, cour, cœur.

Note. — As an additional exercise, writing words chosen from the above, in phonetic symbols, is recommended.

PHONETIC TRANSCRIPTION OF LESSONS I-X

I

A. 1. yn sœ:r. 2. œ fre:r. 3. œ li:vr. 4. œ krejɔ̄. 5. yn plym.
 6. yn tabl. 7. yn ſeiz. 8. yn feneitr. 9. yn port. 10. yn ekol.
 11. yn plym e œ krejɔ̄. 12. yn tabl e yn ſeiz.

II

A. 1. la kre. 2. lā:kr. 3. la klaus. 4. ləm. 5. lə profesœir.
 6. lɔ:kl. 7. la fam. 8. la tā:t. 9. lə papje. 10. cén (or cen) ɔm e yn
 fam. 11. lez ɔm e le fam. 12. cén eleiv e œ profesœir. 13. lez eleiv e
 le profesœir. 14. lā:kr e lə papje. 15. yn bwa:t.

III

A. 1. ɔ e yn bwa:t. 2. vuz ave dø krejɔ̄. 3. lez eleiv ɔt œ pro-
 fesœir. 4. nuz avɔ̄ cén ɔ:kl e yn tā:t. 5. ɔ:a a le dø plym dāz yn bwa:t.
 6. mari a trwa li:vr syr la tabl. 7. la klaus a katr feneitr. 8. lə pro-
 fesœir a la kre e osi lā:kr. 9. lə fre:r e la sœ:r ɔ dø li:vr. 10. ty az œ
 fre:r e osi yn sœ:r. 11. ɔ:a e mari ɔ trwa fre:r. 12. le fam ɔ le dø
 bwa:t. 13. nuz avɔ̄ le dø kle.

IV

A. 1. le li:vr sɔ̄ syr la tabl; il sɔ̄ syr la tabl. 2. lə profesœir e lez
 eleiv sɔ̄ dā la klaus. 3. la ku:r e derjeir l ekol. 4. la klaus a yn port; el
 a osi dø feneitr. 5. nu som dā la klaus. 6. vuz eit dā la ku:r. 7. l arbr
 e dəvā la port. 8. il e dəvā la port. 9. ɔ:a squi dəvā la feneitr. 10. ty
 e derjeir la tabl. 11. lɔ:kl e su l arbr. 12. la tā:t et avek lɔ:kl. 13. il
 sɔ̄t ūsābl. 14. le fam sɔ̄ dā lə zardē. 15. el sɔ̄t ūsābl su lez arbr.
 16. la grameir e lə diksjoneir sɔ̄ syr la tabl.

V

A. 1. lə li:vr də ɔ:a e la plym də mari. 2. lə papje dy profesœir e
 lə li:vr də l eleiv. 3. la meir dez ūfā. 4. lez ūfā də la fam.

C. 1. ɔ:a a t il le plym? 2. ki a le krejɔ̄? 3. ave vu le li:vr dy pro-
 fesœir? 4. nɔ̄, mæsjø, il sɔ̄ syr la tabl. 5. lez ūfā sɔ̄t il isi? 6. u sɔ̄ le
 plym dez eleiv? 7. mari, e ty la? 8. u som nu mētnā? 9. mari et el
 dā la ku:r? 10. e: ɔ la plym də l eleiv? 11. lez eleiv ɔt il le krejɔ̄?
 12. lə peir də l ūfā et il isi? 13. wi, madam, il et isi. 14. u sɔ̄ le meir
 dez ūfā? 15. a ty la kan dy mæsjø? 16. ki a le gā də la dam? 17. avɔ̄
 nu le gā? 18. u eit vu? 19. u squi:z? 20. k a t el dā la bwa:t.

VI

A. Continue the following throughout the singular and plural: 1. ʒə n e pa lə liivr də l eleiv, ty n a pa lə liivr də l eleiv, etc. 2. ʒə n e s̄qi paz a l ekol ɔzurdqı, ty n e paz, etc. 3. e: ʒ l ū:kr e le plym? etc.

B. 1. lez eleiv n e s̄s̄ paz a l ekol; u s̄t il? 2. il s̄t o ſā. 3. la mez̄ dy profesceir n e paz isi. 4. el e la ba o vila:z. 5. vu n ave pa le liivr; u s̄t il? 6. il s̄t a la mez̄. 7. nu n av̄ po le liivr. 8. le dam n e s̄s̄ paz a l egli:z. 9. mari, ty n e paz a l ekol ɔzurdqı. 10. ʒə n e s̄qi paz o ʒardē. 11. la tāit n e paz a la kāpaj mētnā. 12. el et a la vil avek lez ū:fā. 13. l eleiv n a pa la plym, mez̄ il a l krej̄. 14. ʒə n e pa də li:vr. 15. lez ū:fā n ɔ paz ū:ko:r l ū:kr.

VII

A. Continue, as in Exercise VI, A: 1. ʒə s̄qi kōtā (or kōtā:t), ty e, etc. 2. ʒə s̄qi grā (or grā:d) e fō:r (or fō:t). 3. s̄qi: ʒ diližā (or diližā:t)? 4. n e s̄qi: ʒ pa riʃ? 5. n e: ʒ paz yn grā:d mez̄?

B. Turn into negative interrogative: 1. et el riʃ? 2. s̄s̄t il isi? 3. l ū:kl a t il yn ʒoli mez̄? 4. lez ū:fā s̄t il kōtā? 5. purkwa e:t vu kōtā:t, madam? 6. ave vuz yn grā:d mez̄? 7. e: ʒ ū:zli liivr? 8. a ty le gā də la dam?

C. Answer in the affirmative and also in the negative: 1. n e:t vu pa lez ū:fā də mēsjø ribo? 2. n e s̄qi: ʒ pa grā:d e fō:t? 3. mēsjø ribo n e:t il pa riʃ? 4. n ave vu pa də pētit s̄cēr? 5. madam lədyk n a t el paz yn grā:d mez̄? 6. le pētit fi:j n e s̄t el paz isi? 7. le pēti gars̄ n ū:t il pa le plym? 8. n e: ʒ pa l e papje?

VIII

A. Continue: 1. ʒ e mō livr, ty a tō, etc. 2. u e mōn ū:kr? u e tōn ū:kr? etc. 3. ʒə n e pa ma plym, ty n a pa ta, etc. 4. n e: ʒ pa me krej̄? n a ty pa te? etc.

C. 1. ʒə s̄qi la fi:j də mēsjø lənwā:r. 2. la mez̄ də mō pe:r et a kote də la mez̄ də mēsjø ribo. 3. sa mez̄ e tre ʒoli. 4. notr mez̄ e ʒoli osi. 5. no mez̄ s̄s̄ preskē ū:abl. 6. notr mez̄ a di pjes. 7. lcer mez̄ a ū:z pjes. 8. mēsjø ribo e mōn ū:kl. 9. il e l freir də ma me:r. 10. sa fam e ma tā:t. 11. el e la s̄cēr də mō pe:r. 12. lcer ū:fā ū:s̄ no parū. 13. mari ribo e ma pētit kuzin. 14. ū:s̄ freir e mō kuzē. 15. nuz av̄ le me:mz ami. 16. kleir lədyk e mon ami. 17. el et osi l ami də ma kuzin. 18. ū:arl lədyk e mon ami. 19. il et osi l ami də ū:z ribo.

D. (Oral.): 1. u e la mezð dø votr peir? 2. votr mezð et el ȝoli? 3. ki e mæsjø ribo? 4. dø ki et il lø freir? 5. madam ribo et el votr tā:t? 6. ki sð vo dø kuzē? 7. ki e votr ami? 8. ki e l ami dø votr freir? 9. u e mon oistr plym? etc.

IX

A. Continue: 1. ȝø l e, ty l a, etc. 2. ȝø lez e, etc. 3. ȝø nø l e pa, etc. 4. ȝ e ma kan, ty a ta kan, etc. 5. ȝ e me gā, ty a te, etc. 6. n e : ȝ pu mð pardøsy? n a ty pu tð? etc.

B. (mæsjø dypð e lwi) 1. lwi, u e tð pardøsy? — 2. ȝø l e, mð peir. — 3. a ty tð ȝapo osi? — 4. wi, mð peir, lø vwasi. papa, a ty te gā? — 5. wi, mð ȝfð, ȝø lez e dð ma poj. — 6. e tð ȝapo? — 7. lø vwala syr la tabl la ba. — 8. me ty n a pa te lynet. u sðt el? — 9. le vwasi su mð ȝapo. alðr nuz avð tut noz afeir? e la vwatyr et el preit? — 10. wi, papa, la vwala a la port. — 11. e lø køse et il la? — 12. lø vwala osi a kote dø la vwatyr. — 13. mætnā nu som pre pur nôtr prømnad.

C. (Oral.) 1. u e votr pardøsy? 2. ave vu votr ȝapo? 3. ave vuz osi vo gā? 4. u sð le lynet dø votr peir? 5. ave vu tut voz afeir? 6. eit vu pre mætnā? 7. u e la vwatyr? 8. u e lø køse? etc.

X

A. Continue: 1. ȝø lær døn me plym, ty . . . te plym, etc. 2. e s kø ȝø lqi døn mð kaje? e s kø ty . . . tð . . . ? etc. 3. ȝø nø lqi (or lær) parl pa, etc. 4. e s kø ȝø nø travaj: j pa? nø travaj: j ty pa? etc. 5. ȝø lø (or le) røgard, etc. 6. ȝø nø l (or lez) ekut pa, etc.

B. 1. e s kø vu travaje, mez ȝfð? 2. wi, madmwazel, nu travajð. 3. parl ty lwi? 4. e s kø ty parl, mari? 5. ȝð, ty parl? 6. wi, madmwazel, nu parlð. 7. mari døn lø liivr a la dam. 8. el lqi døn le papje osi. 9. lez ȝfð røgard le ȝoliz ima:z. 10. l ðstitytris lær døn ðe gro liivr. 11. ȝø travaj: j boku.

C. 1. nu somz a l ekol. 2. l ðstitytris døn le kaje oz eleiv. 3. nu travajð. 4. el eksplik la lœsð. 5. nu l ekutð. 6. el parl boku oz eleiv. 7. nu lqi parlð osi kælkøfwa. 8. le pøti garsð zu a prezð dā la kur. 9. il parl e kri boku. 10. le petit fiþ sð su lez arbr. 11. el røgard lez ima:z dðz ðe gro li:vr. 12. lez ima:z lez amy:z boku. 13. lez ima:z amy:z le pøti garsð osi. 14. el lær døn lø liivr.



LESSON I

1.

Indefinite Article

MASCULINE	FEMININE	
un [œ]	une [yn]	<i>a, an, (as numeral, one)</i>
Un frère et une sœur.		<i>A brother and (a) sister.</i>
Un livre, une plume.		<i>A book, a pen.</i>

1. There are only two genders in French, the masculine and feminine, as seen in the examples above.
2. Un is used before masculine nouns and une before feminine nouns.
3. The indefinite article is repeated before each noun.

EXERCISE I

une chaise [œɪz], <i>a chair</i>	un livre [livr], <i>a book</i>
un crayon [krejɔ], <i>a pencil</i>	une plume [plym], <i>a pen</i>
une école [ekɔl], <i>a school</i>	une porte [pɔrt], <i>a door</i>
et [e], <i>and</i>	une sœur [sœyr], <i>a sister</i>
une fenêtre [fene:tʁ], <i>a window</i>	une table [tabl], <i>a table</i>
un frère [fre:r], <i>a brother</i>	

- A. 1. Une sœur. 2. Un frère. 3. Un livre. 4. Un crayon.
5. Une plume. 6. Une table. 7. Une chaise. 8. Une fenêtre.
9. Une porte. 10. Une école. 11. Une plume et un crayon.
12. Une table et une chaise.

- B. 1. A book and (a)¹ pencil. 2. A school. 3. A pen and (a) book. 4. A chair and (a) table. 5. A window. 6. A door. 7. One pen. 8. A door and (a) window. 9. A table. 10. One book. 11. A brother and (a) sister.

¹ English words in parenthesis to be expressed in French.

LESSON II

2.

Definite Article

MASCULINE SINGULAR

le, l' [lə, l]

FEMININE SINGULAR

la, l' [la, l]

PLURAL

les [le] the

Le frère et la sœur.

The brother and (the) sister.

L'ami, l'homme, l'école.

The friend, the man, the school.

Les livres et les plumes.

*The books and (the) pens.*Les amis, les hommes, les écoles. *The friends, the men, the schools.*

1. Le is used before a masculine singular, and la before a feminine singular, beginning with a consonant; l' is used before any singular beginning with a vowel or h mute, i.e. the e or the a is elided (cf. Introd., O); les is used before any plural.

2. The definite article is repeated before each noun.

3. The plural of nouns is regularly formed by adding s to the singular.

EXERCISE II

Note. — The gender of nouns beginning with a vowel or h mute is indicated in the vocabularies by m. or f.; the gender of all other nouns is known by the article, which should be carefully learned along with the noun; for the gender of nouns denoting inanimate objects the rules in the Appendix may be found useful.

la boîte [bwait], <i>box</i>	la classe [klas], <i>classroom</i>	la craie [kre], <i>chalk</i>	l'élève [eleiv], m. f., <i>pupil</i>	l'encre [ü:kr], f., <i>ink</i>	la femme [fam], <i>woman, wife</i>
------------------------------	------------------------------------	------------------------------	--------------------------------------	--------------------------------	------------------------------------

l'homme [om], <i>man</i>	l'oncle [5ikl], <i>uncle</i>
le papier [papje], <i>paper</i>	le professeur ¹ [profesœir], <i>teacher</i>
la tante [tä:t], <i>aunt</i>	

- A. 1. La craie. 2. L'encre. 3. La classe. 4. L'homme.
 5. Le professeur. 6. L'oncle. 7. La femme. 8. La tante. 9. Le papier. 10. Un homme et une femme. 11. Les hommes et les femmes. 12. Un élève et un professeur. 13. Les élèves et les professeurs. 14. L'encre et le papier. 15. Une boîte.

¹ A teacher in a secondary school, a college or university professor.

B. 1. The school. 2. The chairs. 3. The table. 4. The doors and (the) windows. 5. The teachers and (the) pupils. 6. The paper and (the) ink. 7. The uncles and (the) aunts. 8. The pencil and (the) chalk. 9. A man and (a) woman. 10. An uncle and (an) aunt.

✓ C. 1. One sister and one brother. 2. The books and paper. 3. The pens and ink. 4. The school and classroom. 5. The women and men. 6. The tables and boxes. 7. The man and the pupil. 8. The schools and the classrooms. 9. A box and a table. 10. The brothers and sisters. 11. The schools and the teachers. 12. The pupils, the women, the uncles, the aunts.

NOTE.—For the use in classes of this and following English exercises, see Preface.

LESSON III

3. Present Indicative of *avoir*, 'have'

j'ai [ʒ e], I have	nous avons [nuz avɔ̃], we have
tu as [ty a], thou hast, you have	vous avez [vuz ave], you have
il a [il a], he (it) has	ils ont [ilz ɔ̃], they (m.) have
elle a [el a], she (it) has	elles ont [elz ɔ̃], they (f.) have

NOTE.—Observe the elision of e in je (cf. Introd., O). A knowledge of this principle will be taken for granted henceforth.

4. Verb and subject agree in number and person:

L'élève a un livre.

The pupil has a book.

Les élèves ont les plumes.

The pupils have the pens.

5. Pronouns in Address.—1. In ordinary formal address **vous** = *you*, whether singular or plural.

2. But *you* = *tu* in familiar or affectionate address, as usually between members of a family, very intimate friends, children; usually also by grown persons to children, and always in addressing animals and things.

NOTE.—*Vous* is to be used in the exercises, unless rule 2 is clearly applicable. Foreigners in speaking French will rarely require to use any other form than *vous*.

EXERCISE III

aussi [os̪i], *too, also*

la clef [kle], *key*

dans [dõ], *in, within*

deux [dø], *two*

Jean [ʒã], *John*

Marie [marɪ], *Mary*

quatre [katr], *four*

sur [syr], *on, upon*

trois [trwɑ], *three*

A. 1. J'ai une boîte. 2. Vous avez deux crayons. 3. Les élèves ont un professeur. 4. Nous avons un oncle et une tante. 5. Jean a les deux plumes dans une boîte. 6. Marie a trois livres sur la table. 7. La classe a quatre fenêtres. 8. Le professeur a la craie et aussi l'encre. 9. Le frère et la sœur ont deux livres. 10. Tu as un frère et aussi une sœur. 11. Jean et Marie ont trois frères. 12. Les femmes ont les deux boîtes. 13. Nous avons les deux clefs.

B. 1. The teacher has three pupils. 2. We have the ink and (the) pens. 3. I have the chalk in a box. 4. You have the books and papers. 5. The school has three doors. 6. You have the paper and the pen. 7. John and Mary have the pencils. 8. The women have four chairs and two tables. 9. We have two boxes on the table. 10. Mary has an uncle and an aunt.

C. 1. She has also a brother and two sisters. 2. The men have three brothers. 3. The classroom has two doors and four windows. 4. He has one uncle and one aunt. 5. The teachers have the books. 6. The pupils have three teachers. 7. They (*m.*) have the pen and the ink. 8. You (*tu*) have four pens in the box. 9. I have also four pens on the table. 10. We have the pencils and the chalk. 11. The women have the keys.

LESSON IV

6.

Present Indicative of *être*, 'be'

je suis [ʒø sɥi], *I am*

tu es [ty e], *thou art, you are*

il est [il e], *he (it) is*

elle est [el e], *she (it) is*

nous sommes [nu som], *we are*

vous êtes [vuz eit], *you are*

ils sont [il sɔ̃], *they (m.) are*

elles sont [el sɔ̃], *they (f.) are*

7. Agreement. 1. The personal pronoun regularly agrees with its antecedent in gender, number and person; hence, in the third person *il(s)* and *elle(s)* will stand both for persons and things:

Où est la plume? — Elle est sur la table.
Where is the pen? — It is on the table.

2. A pronoun referring to two or more antecedents of different gender is masculine plural:

Ils (= Jean et Marie) sont là. *They* (= *John and Mary*) are there.

Ils (= livre et plume) sont ici. **They** (= book and pen) are here.

EXERCISE IV

l'arbre [arbr], m., *tree*

avec [avek]. with

la cour [ku:r], *yard, court(yard)*

derrière [dərje:r], *behind*

devant [dəvā], *before, in front of*

le dictionnaire [diksjɔneɪ], *dictionary*

ensemble [ənsə:bł]. *adv., together*

la grammaire [grameɪr], grammar

le jardin [ʒardɛ], garden

sous [su], *under, below*

A. 1. Les livres sont sur la table; ils sont sur la table. 2. Le professeur et les élèves sont dans la classe. 3. La cour est derrière l'école. 4. La classe a une porte; elle a aussi deux fenêtres. 5. Nous sommes dans la classe. 6. Vous êtes dans la cour. 7. L'arbre est devant la porte. 8. Il est devant la porte. 9. Je suis devant la fenêtre. 10. Tu es derrière la table. 11. L'oncle est sous l'arbre. 12. La tante est avec l'oncle. 13. Ils sont ensemble. 14. Les femmes sont dans le jardin. 15. Elles sont ensemble sous les arbres. 16. La grammaire et le dictionnaire sont sur la table.

B. 1. The tree is in front of the door. 2. The pupils are in the yard. 3. The yard has three trees. 4. We are in the garden. 5. It is in front of the school. 6. The chair is behind the door. 7. The pupils are together under the trees. 8. You are in the classroom. 9. The aunt is with the uncle. 10. They are together in the garden. 11. The grammars are on the table.

C. 1. You (*tu*) are a pupil. 2. I am with the teacher. 3. We have three books and you have two books. 4. They are on the table. 5. I am the teacher; I am with the pupils. 6. I have three

sisters; they are in the classroom. 7. The teacher has a pen; it is on the table. 8. The pens are on the table; they are in a box. 9. John and Mary are in the yard. 10. They are under the trees. 11. The dictionary is on the chair.

LESSON V

8. Present Indicative Interrogative of *avoir* and *être*

ai-je?	[eɪ ʒ], have <i>I</i> ?	suis-je?	[sɥi: ʒ], am <i>I</i> ?
as-tu?	[a ty], have <i>you</i> ?	es-tu?	[e ty], are <i>you</i> ?
a-t-il?	[a t il], has <i>he</i> ?	est-il?	[et il], is <i>he</i> ?
a-t-elle?	[a t el], has <i>she</i> ?	est-elle?	[et el], is <i>she</i> ?
avons-nous?	[avɔ̃ nu], have <i>we</i> ?	sommes-nous?	[sɔm nu], are <i>we</i> ?
avez-vous?	[ave vu], have <i>you</i> ?	êtes-vous?	[e:t vu], are <i>you</i> ?
ont-ils?	[ɔ̃t il], have <i>they</i> ?	sont-ils?	[sɔ̃t il], are <i>they</i> ?
ont-elles?	[ɔ̃t el], have <i>they</i> ?	sont-elles?	[sɔ̃t el], are <i>they</i> ?

1. In a question the personal pronoun subject follows the verb and is joined to it by a hyphen.

2. When the third person singular ends in a vowel, -t- is inserted.

9. Remarks on Interrogation. — 1. When the subject of an interrogative sentence is a noun, this noun usually comes before the verb, and is repeated after it in the form of a pronoun:

L'élève a-t-il les plumes? *Has the pupil (lit. the pupil has he) the pens?*

2. Questions may also be asked by means of interrogative words, as in English:

Qui a l'encre et les plumes? *Who has the ink and the pens?*
Où sont les plumes? *Where are the pens?*

3. These two forms of interrogation may be combined:

Où le professeur est-il? *Where is the teacher?*

4. *What?* = *que*, as direct object or predicate:

Qu'avez-vous là? *What have you there?*

10. Possessive. — 1. Possession is denoted by **de** = *of*:

Le livre de Marie. *Mary's book.*

2. **De** is repeated before each noun:

Les amis de Jean et d'Albert. *The friends of John and Albert.*

3. **De + le** (article) is always contracted to **du**, and **de + les** to **des**, but **de la**, **de l'** are not contracted:

La plume du frère. *The brother's pen.*

Les plumes des sœurs. *The pens of the sisters.*

But: La plume de la sœur, de l'élève, etc.

EXERCISE V

la canne [kan], <i>cane, stick</i>	le monsieur [møsjø], <i>gentleman,</i> <i>Sir, Mr.</i>
la dame [dam], <i>lady</i>	non [nø], <i>no</i>
l'enfant [əfɑ̃], <i>m. f., child, boy, girl</i>	où [u], <i>where?</i>
le gant [gã], <i>glove</i>	oui [wi], <i>yes</i>
ici [isi], <i>here</i>	le père [pe:r], <i>father</i>
là [la], <i>there</i>	qui [ki], <i>invar., who? whom?</i>
madame [madam], <i>madam, Mrs.</i>	que, qu' [kø, k], <i>invar., what?</i>
maintenant [mætnã], <i>now</i>	
la mère [me:r], <i>mother</i>	

A. 1. Le livre de Jean et la plume de Marie. 2. Le papier du professeur et le livre de l'élève. 3. La mère des enfants. 4. Les enfants de la femme.

B. 1. John's father. 2. Mary's mother. 3. The windows of the school. 4. The child's father. 5. The children's mother.

C. 1. Jean a-t-il les plumes? 2. Qui a les crayons? 3. Avez-vous les livres du professeur? 4. Non, monsieur, ils sont sur la table. 5. Les enfants sont-ils ici? 6. Où sont les plumes des élèves? 7. Marie, es-tu là? 8. Où sommes-nous maintenant? 9. Marie est-elle dans la cour? 10. Ai-je la plume de l'élève? 11. Les élèves ont-ils les crayons? 12. Le père de l'enfant est-il ici? 13. Oui, madame, il est ici. 14. Où sont les mères des enfants? 15. As-tu la canne du monsieur? 16. Qui a les gants de la dame? 17. Avons-

nous les gants? 18. Où êtes-vous? 19. Où suis-je? 20. Qu'a-t-elle dans la boîte?

D. 1. Turn orally into interrogative form all the sentences in Exercises III, A, and IV, A. 2. Form answers to the questions in part C of this exercise.

E. 1. Have you the teacher's cane? 2. What have you there? 3. Is Mary here now? 4. Where is she? 5. Where is Mary's mother? 6. Are the boy's pens and pencils in the box? 7. Yes, madam, and the box is on the chair. 8. Have the pupils (m. or f.) the books?

*F. 1. Have we the pupils' books now? 2. Who has the lady's gloves? 3. Mary, have you the child's box? 4. Have I the gentleman's paper? 5. John, where are you (*tu*)? 6. Are you the teacher's uncle? 7. No, sir, I am the teacher's brother. 8. Are the ladies' gloves here?*

LESSON VI

11. Present Indicative Negative of *avoir* and *être*

I have not, etc.

I am not, etc.

je n'ai pas [ʒə n e pa]

je ne suis pas [ʒə ne sɥi pa]

tu n'as pas [ty n a pa]

tu n'es pas [ty n e pa]

il n'a pas [il n a pa]

il n'est pas [il n e pa]

nous n'avons pas [nu n avɔ̃ pa]

nous ne sommes pas [nu nə som pa]

vous n'avez pas [vu n ave pa]

vous n'êtes pas [vu n eit pa]

ils n'ont pas [il n ɔ̃ pa]

ils ne sont pas [il nə sɔ̃ pa]

NOTE.—*Elle(s)* will henceforth be omitted from the paradigms.

1. With verbs, *not = ne . . . pas*, the verb being placed between them.

12. Place.—1. The preposition *à = to, at, in*, often denotes place, and must be repeated before each noun:

Il est à Paris ou à Rome.

He is in Paris or (in) Rome.

3. Since *son* (*sa, ses*) = *his, her, its*, it can be known only from the context which is meant:

Jean (Marie) a *son* livre.

Chaque jour a *ses* peines.

John (Mary) has his (her) book.

Each day has its troubles.

EXERCISE VIII

✓ <i>ami</i> [ami], m., <i>friend</i>	dix [dis], <i>ten</i>
✓ <i>amie</i> [ami], f., <i>friend</i>	même [me:m], <i>same</i>
✓ <i>autre</i> [oitr], adj., <i>other</i>	onze [5:z], <i>eleven</i>
✓ <i>Charles</i> [ʃarl], <i>Charles</i>	les parents [parū], <i>relatives, relations, parents</i>
<i>Claire</i> [kleir], <i>Clara, Claire</i>	la pièce [pjε], <i>room</i>
le côté [kote], <i>side</i>	presque [presk], <i>almost</i>
le cousin [kuzē], m., <i>cousin</i>	semblable [səblabl], <i>like, alike</i>
la cousine [kuzin], f., <i>cousin</i>	

à côté de, *by the side of, beside; de qui? whose? of whom?*

A. Continue: 1. J'ai mon livre, tu as ton, etc. 2. Où est mon encre? où est ton encre? etc. 3. Je n'ai pas ma plume, tu n'as pas ta, etc. 4. N'ai-je pas mes crayons? n'as-tu pas tes? etc.

B. Make the possessive adjectives agree: 1. Le professeur a *son* canne (craie, papiers). 2. Les élèves ont *leur* livres (plumes). 3. J'ai *mon* plume (encre, papier). 4. Nous avons *notre* gants (chaises, tables). 5. Vous avez *votre* plumes (canne, papier). 6. Marie a *son* boîte (boîtes). 7. As-tu *ton* plume (encre, livres)?

C. 1. Je suis la fille de M. Lenoir. 2. La maison de mon père est à côté de la maison de M. Ribot. 3. Sa maison est très jolie. 4. Notre maison est jolie aussi. 5. Nos maisons sont presque semblables. 6. Notre maison a dix pièces. 7. Leur maison a onze pièces. 8. M. Ribot est mon oncle. 9. Il est le frère de ma mère. 10. Sa femme est ma tante. 11. Elle est la sœur de mon père. 12. Leurs enfants sont nos parents. 13. Marie Ribot est ma petite cousine. 14. Son frère est mon cousin. 15. Nous avons les mêmes amis. 16. Claire Leduc est mon amie. 17. Elle est aussi l'amie de ma cousine. 18. Charles Leduc est mon ami. 19. Il est aussi l'ami de Jean Ribot.

D. (Oral.) 1. Où est la maison de votre père? 2. Votre maison est-elle jolie? 3. Qui est M. Ribot? 4. De qui est-il le frère?

5. M^{me} Ribot est-elle votre tante? 6. Qui sont vos deux cousins?
 7. Qui est votre amie? 8. Qui est l'ami de votre frère? 9. Où est
 mon autre plume? etc.

E. 1. Our house is in the country. 2. Your house is beside our
 house. 3. Is their house not very large? 4. Are our houses not
 very pretty? 5. His house has ten rooms. 6. My house has eleven
 rooms. 7. Your (thy) aunt has a house in the village. 8. Our
 relatives are in (the) town. 9. My mother's brother is my uncle.
 10. My little sisters have the same books.

F. 1. Your father's sister is your aunt. 2. John Ribot is my
 cousin. 3. Charles Leduc is my friend's (f.) brother. 4. Who is
 your friend? 5. Are your friends not yet here? 6. Mary Ribot
 is my cousin. 7. Where is your (thy) ink? 8. Where is her other
 pen? 9. Where are their other pens? 10. The two rooms are
 almost alike.

LESSON IX

17. *Voici, voilà.* — When objects are pointed out by look,
 gesture or the like, *here is, here are* = *voici* [vwasi], and *there is,
 there are* = *voilà* [vwala], *here* and *there* being stressed:

Voici mon ami.

Here is my friend.

Voilà mes plumes.

There are my pens.

NOTE. — *Voici* (= vois + ici) means literally *see here*, *voilà* (= vois + là), *see there*.

18. Some Personal Pronoun Objects

MASC. SING.

FEM. SING.

MASC. OR FEM. PLUR.

le, l' [lø, l], *him* or *it* la, l' [la, l], *her* or *it* les [le], *them*

Je le blâme; je l'admire.

I blame him; I admire him (her).

Je la donne; nous l'avons.

I give it; we have it (e.g. pen).

Vous ne les avez pas.

You haven't them (e.g. books, pens).

Où est Marie? — La voilà.

Where is Mary? — There she is.

1. These pronouns denote the direct object in the third person, and have the same forms as the definite article.

2. They are placed before the verb (but see § 72), and before *voici* and *voilà*.

EXERCISE IX

l'affaire [afɛir], f., <i>affair, business, thing</i>	le pardessus [pardɛsy], <i>overcoat</i>
alors [aloʁ], <i>then</i>	la poche [poʃ], <i>pocket</i>
le chapeau [ʃapo], <i>hat</i>	pour [pur], <i>for</i>
le cocher [koʃe], <i>coachman, driver</i>	prêt [pre], <i>ready</i>
Louis [wi], <i>Louis</i>	la promenade [prɔmnad], <i>walk, drive</i>
les lunettes [lynet], f., <i>spectacles, glasses</i>	tout [tu], f. <i>toute, all, every</i>
papa [papa], <i>papa</i>	la voiture [vwatyr], <i>carriage</i>

A. *Continue:* 1. Je l'ai, tu l'as, etc. 2. Je les ai, etc. 3. Je ne l'ai pas, etc. 4. J'ai ma canne, tu as ta canne, etc. 5. J'ai mes gants, tu as tes, etc. 6. N'ai-je pas mon pardessus? n'as-tu pas ton, etc.

B. (*Monsieur Dupont et Louis*) 1. Louis, où est ton pardessus? — 2. Je l'ai, mon père. — 3. As-tu ton chapeau aussi? — 4. Oui, mon père, le voici. Papa, as-tu tes gants? — 5. Oui, mon enfant, je les ai dans ma poche. — 6. Et ton chapeau? — 7. Le voilà sur la table là-bas. — 8. Mais tu n'as pas tes lunettes. Où sont-elles? — 9. Les voici sous mon chapeau. Alors nous avons toutes nos affaires? Et la voiture est-elle prête? — 10. Oui, papa, la voilà à la porte. — 11. Et le cocher est-il là? — 12. Le voilà aussi à côté de la voiture. — 13. Maintenant nous sommes prêts pour notre promenade.

C. (*Oral.*) 1. Où est votre pardessus? 2. Avez-vous votre chapeau? 3. Avez-vous aussi vos gants? 4. Où sont les lunettes de votre père? 5. Avez-vous toutes vos affaires? 6. Êtes-vous prêts maintenant? 7. Où est la voiture? 8. Où est le cocher? etc.

D. 1. Have you my overcoat? 2. Yes, sir, here it is. 3. Where are my gloves? 4. There they are on the table. 5. Have you your hat? 6. Yes, sir, I have it. 7. Where are your glasses? 8. I haven't them. 9. Where is the carriage? 10. There it is at the door. 11. Where is the coachman? 12. There he is beside the carriage. 13. Have we all our things? 14. Yes, papa, we have them. 15. Are we ready for our drive? 16. We are ready.

E. 1. Who has my ink? 2. Haven't you it? 3. I haven't it.
 4. John hasn't it. 5. Here it is; I have it now. 6. Where are
 your books? 7. Haven't you them here? 8. We haven't them
 here to-day. 9. There they are on the table. 10. The teacher's
 chalk is here; here it is. 11. There is his cane; there it is. 12. My
 pens are in my box; here they are.

LESSON X

19. Present Indicative of *donner*, 'give'

1. AFFIRMATIVE

I give, am giving, do give, etc.

je donne	[ʒø dɔn]
tu donnes	[ty dɔn]
il donne	[il dɔn]
nous donnons	[nu dɔnɔ̃]
vous donnez	[vu dɔne]
ils donnent	[il dɔn]

3. INTERROGATIVE

Am I giving? do I give? etc.

donné-je?	[dɔnɛ̃ ʒ]
donnes-tu?	[dɔn ty]
donne-t-il?	[dɔn t il]
donnons-nous?	[dɔnɔ̃ nu]
donnez-vous?	[dɔne vu]
donnent-ils?	[dɔnt il]

2. NEGATIVE

I do not give, am not giving, etc.

je ne donne pas	[ʒø nə dɔn pa]
tu ne donnes pas	[ty nə dɔn pa]
il ne donne pas	[il nə dɔn pa]
nous ne donnons pas	[nu nə dɔnɔ̃ pa]
vous ne donnez pas	[vu nə dɔne pa]
ils ne donnent pas	[il nə dɔn pa]

4. NEGATIVE INTERROGATIVE

Am I not giving? do I not give? etc.

ne donné-je pas?	[nə dɔnɛ̃ ʒ pa]
ne donnes-tu pas?	[nə dɔn ty pa]
ne donne-t-il pas?	[nə dɔn t il pa]
ne donnons-nous pas?	[nə dɔnɔ̃ nu pa]
ne donnez-vous pas?	[nə dɔne vu pa]
ne donnent-ils pas?	[nə dɔnt il pa]

1. Conjugate as above all regular verbs in -er.

2. Observe particularly that most English tenses have various forms, e.g. *I give*, *I am giving*, *I do give*, while French tenses have only one form (in this case, *je donne*); so also for interrogative and negative forms, e.g. *does he give?* *is he giving?* (= *donne-t-il*), *they are not giving*, *they do not give* (= *ils ne donnent pas*).

20. Interrogation. — 1. By prefixing **est-ce que** [ɛ s kə] (lit. *is it that?*), any statement may be turned into a question:

Il a ses gants.

He has his gloves.

Est-ce qu'il a ses gants?

Has he his gloves?

NOTE. — This form usually replaces the 1st sing. interrog., e.g. **est-ce que je donne? = donné-je?**

2. An interrogative word, if used, precedes **est-ce que**:

Qu'est-ce qu'il désire?

What does he wish?

Où est-ce qu'ils demeurent?

Where do they live?

3. Inflection of the voice may serve to indicate interrogation:

Vous demeurez ici?

Do you live here?

21. Indirect Object. — 1. The indirect object is denoted by **à**:

Je donne une plume **à** Jean.

I give John a pen (a pen to John).

Je parle **aux** élèves.

I am speaking to the pupils.

2. With a verb, *to him, to her* = **lui** [lɥi], *to them* = **leur** [lœ:r]; they precede the verb:

Je lui (leur) parle.

I speak to him or her (to them).

EXERCISE X

amuser [amyze], *amuse*
 beaucoup [boku], *much, very much, a great deal*
le cahier [kaje], *exercise book*
 crier [kriet], *cry out, shout*
 donner [donə], *give, give away*
 écouter [ekute], *listen (to)*
 expliquer [eksplike], *explain*
 gros [gro], *large, big*

l'image [imaʒ], f., *image, picture*
 l'institutrice [ɛ̃stitytris], f., *teacher*
 jouer [ʒwe], *play*
 la leçon [laɛsɔ], *lesson*
 mademoiselle [madmwazel], *Miss*
 parler [parle], *speak*
 quelquefois [kelkafwa], *sometimes*
 regarder [rəgarde], *look at*
 travailler [travajel], *work*

à présent [prezɑ], *at present, now*

A. *Continue:* 1. Je leur donne mes plumes, tu . . . tes plumes, etc. 2. Est-ce que je lui donne mon cahier? est-ce que tu . . . ton . . .? etc. 3. Je ne lui (*or leur*) parle pas, etc. 4. Est-ce que je ne travaille pas? ne travailles-tu pas? etc. 5. Je le (*or les*) regarde, etc. 6. Je ne l' (*or les*) écoute pas, etc.

B. 1. Est-ce que vous travaillez, mes enfants? 2. Oui, mademoiselle, nous travaillons. 3. Parles-tu, Louis? 4. Est-ce que tu parles, Marie? 5. Jean, tu parles? 6. Oui, mademoiselle, nous parlons. 7. Marie donne le livre à la dame. 8. Elle lui donne le papier aussi. 9. Les enfants regardent les jolies images. 10. L'institutrice leur donne un gros livre. 11. Je travaille beaucoup. 12. Turn sentences 1-11 into negative form.

C. 1. Nous sommes à l'école. 2. L'institutrice donne les cahiers aux élèves. 3. Nous travaillons. 4. Elle explique la leçon. 5. Nous l'écoutons. 6. Elle parle beaucoup aux élèves. 7. Nous lui parlons aussi quelquefois. 8. Les petits garçons jouent à présent dans la cour. 9. Ils parlent et crient beaucoup. 10. Les petites filles sont sous les arbres. 11. Elles regardent les images dans un gros livre. 12. Les images les amusent beaucoup. 13. Les images amusent les petits garçons aussi. 14. Elles leur donnent le livre.

D. 1. I am speaking. 2. You are not working. 3. John is not listening. 4. Doesn't the pupil listen? 5. The pupils speak to the teacher; they speak to her. 6. She speaks to them. 7. Are you not working? 8. We work a great deal. 9. We give the little boys our book. 10. Where are you? 11. What are you looking at? 12. We are looking at our exercise books. 13. What are the little girls looking at? 14. They are looking at the pictures. 15. We are listening to the children. 16. They are playing in the yard.

E. 1. Who is speaking to the pupils? 2. The teacher (*f.*) is speaking to them. 3. Are the children playing in the yard now? 4. Yes, miss, they are playing under the trees. 5. The teacher is explaining our lessons. 6. We are listening to her. 7. Are the boys not shouting a great deal? 8. We are amusing the little boys. 9. We give them our pictures. 10. Are the little boys not working? 11. No, sir, they are not working. 12. Do the men work much? 13. Yes, sir, they work in the fields. 14. Are the grammars not on the table? 15. Yes, they are on the table with the dictionary.

LESSON XI

22.

Conjunctive Personal Pronouns

SINGULAR

me [mə], me, (to) me	
te [tə], thee, you, (to) thee, (to) you	
le [lə], m., him, it }	
la [la], f.; her, it }	
lui [lɥi], m. f., (to) him, (to) her	
se [sə], m. f., himself, herself, it- self, (to) himself, etc.	

PLURAL

nous [nu], us, (to) us	
vous [vu], you, (to) you	
les [le], m. f., them	
leur [lœ̃], m. f., (to) them	
se [sə], m. f., themselves, (to) them- selves	

(a) These forms are called "conjunctive" because they are used along with verbs as objects.

(b) Le, la, les (§ 18), lui, leur (§ 21, 2) are repeated here for completeness.

23.

Use of Conjunctive Objects

Il me (te, nous, vous) frappe.	He strikes me (you, us, you).
Il me (te, nous, vous) parle.	He speaks to me (to you, etc.).
Ma mère m'aime (t'aime).	My mother loves me (loves you).
Il se coupe; il se dit.	He cuts himself; he says to himself.

1. Me, te, se, nous, vous serve both as direct and as indirect objects of verbs.

2. All conjunctive personal pronoun objects precede the verb, unless it be an imperative affirmative (§ 72).

EXERCISE XI

accompagner [akɔ̃pajne], accom- pany, go (come) with	laisser [lase], let, leave
aimable [amabl], amiable, kind	la lettre [letʁ], letter
apporter [apɔʁte], bring	montrer [mɔ̃tʁe], show
la bonne [bon], servant, maid	prêter [prete], lend
la carte [kart], map	quand [kā], when
chercher [ʃɛʁʃ], seek, look for	remercier [remersje], thank
le facteur [faktœʁ], postman, letter-carrier	rencontrer [rãkɔ̃tre], meet
	saluer [salɥe], salute, bow to, etc.
	souvent [suvã], often
	trouver [truve], find

A. *Continue:* 1. Il me cherche, il te, etc. 2. Les images m'amusent, . . . t'amusent, etc. 3. Mon frère me prête ses livres, . . . te prête ses livres, etc. 4. Mes amis m'accompagnent à l'école, . . . t'accompagnent, etc. 5. Le professeur m'explique la leçon, . . . t'explique, etc.

B. 1. Mon frère m'apporte le gros livre. 2. Il me montre les images. 3. Les images du livre t'amusent-elles? 4. Elles m'amusent beaucoup. 5. Votre père nous cherche. 6. Il nous accompagne à l'école. 7. Le professeur vous montre la carte. 8. Je salue le professeur quand je le rencontre. 9. Il me salue aussi. 10. Louis me prête souvent ses livres. 11. Il est très aimable. 12. Vous prête-t-il ses livres aussi? 13. Oui, et je lui prête mes plumes et mon encre. 14. Le facteur apporte les lettres. 15. Il les laisse dans la boîte à la porte. 16. La bonne les trouve dans la boîte et les apporte à mon père. 17. Il la remercie. 18. Les enfants s'amusent dans le jardin.

C. (*Oral.*) 1. Qui m'apporte le gros livre? 2. Qui nous montre les images? 3. Qu'est-ce qu'il vous montre? 4. Saluez-vous votre professeur? 5. Quand est-ce qu'il nous salue? 6. Qu'est-ce que tu prêtes à Louis? 7. Qui m'apporte les lettres? 8. À qui les donne-t-elle? 9. Votre père la remercie-t-il? 10. Est-elle contente? 11. Où les enfants s'amusent-ils? etc.

D. 1. I bring him the big book. 2. Who is showing us the pictures? 3. Don't the pictures amuse you? 4. Yes, Miss Ribot, they amuse me [very]¹ much. 5. My brother is looking for you (thee). 6. The teacher is explaining the map to us. 7. He explains the map to them also. 8. I bow to him when I meet him. 9. He bows to me when he meets me.

E. 1. I am lending you (thee) my books. 2. What does the postman bring us? 3. He brings the letters and leaves them on the table at the door. 4. Here are your letters on the table. 5. The maid brings us the letters. 6. We thank her. 7. Are the children not amusing themselves? 8. Do we not bring her the book? 9. There are our sisters; we bring them the pictures.

¹ Words in brackets to be omitted in translating.

m
te
le
la
lui
se

LESSON XII

LESSON XII

24. The General Noun. — A noun used in a general sense regularly takes the definite article in French, though not usually in English:

La vie est courte.
L'homme est mortel.
J'aime les Français.
Le fer est dur.
Le cheval est très utile.

Life is short.
Man is mortal.
I like Frenchmen (the French).
Iron is hard.
The horse is very useful.

25. The Partitive Noun. — 1. *Some, any*, either expressed or understood with a noun = **de** + the definite article:

J'ai de la craie, du papier.	<i>I have (some) chalk, (some) paper.</i>
Avez-vous de l'encre?	<i>Have you (any) ink?</i>
A-t-il des frères (amis)?	<i>Has he any brothers (friends)?</i>

2. Thus is formed the plural of a noun with un(e):
Un livre; des livres. *A book; (some) books.*

3. The general and partitive sense must be distinguished:

Les arbres ont des feuilles.	<i>Trees (gen.) have leaves (part.).</i>
Les chiens sont des animaux.	<i>Dogs are animals.</i>

s'aimer [e'me], *love, like, be fond of*
l'amusement [amyzmā], *m., amusement*
l'argent [arʒü], *m., silver, money*
la bille [bij], *marble (plaything)*
étudier [etydje], *study*
facilement [fasilmā], *easily, readily*
le français [frūse], *(the) French language*

la géographie [zeɔgrafi], *geography*
l'histoire [istwair], *f., history, story*
la langue [lã:g], *tongue, language*
la lecture [lektyir], *reading*
la poire [pwa:r], *pear*
la pomme [pom], *apple*
la toupie [tupi], *top*
la viande [vjāid], *meat*

je aime le français, *I am fond of (like) French; but note: parlez-vous français? do you speak French?*

A. *Continue:* 1. J'aime la lecture, tu . . . etc. 2. Est-ce que je parle français? parles-tu . . . etc. 3. Je ne parle pas français, tu ne . . . etc. 4. Je leur donne des cahiers et des plumes, tu leur donnes . . . etc. 5. J'aime les pommes et les poires, tu . . . etc. 6. J'ai de l'encre et du papier, tu as . . . etc. 7. J'aime l'argent, tu aimes . . . etc. 8. J'ai de l'argent dans ma poche, tu as . . . dans ta, etc.

B. 1. J'aime la viande. 2. Avez-vous de la viande? 3. Aimez-vous les pommes? 4. Je les aime beaucoup. 5. Les hommes aiment-ils l'argent? 6. Ils l'aiment. 7. Avez-vous de l'argent dans votre poche? 8. Je lui prête de l'argent. 9. Les enfants étudient-ils la géographie et l'histoire? 10. N'aiment-ils pas la lecture? 11. Ils l'aiment beaucoup. 12. Avez-vous des pommes? 13. Non, monsieur, mais nous avons des poires.

C. *Complete the partitive form:* 1. J'ai d . . . encre, d . . . plumes et d . . . papier. 2. A-t-il d . . . craie et d . . . crayons? 3. Nous avons d . . . frères et d . . . sœurs. 4. Elle a d . . . argent. 5. Ils ont d . . . pommes. 6. A-t-elle d . . . viande? 7. Nous avons d . . . arbres dans notre cour.

D. Mes frères et mes sœurs étudient leurs leçons. 2. Ils aiment beaucoup l'histoire et la géographie. 3. Ils aiment aussi le français. 4. À l'école nous parlons français. 5. Les enfants parlent facilement les langues quand le professeur les parle. 6. Les élèves ont des amusements à l'école. 7. Les petits garçons ont des billes et des toupies. 8. Les petites filles ont des livres. 9. Elles aiment beaucoup la lecture. 10. Elles trouvent aussi des images dans les livres. 11. Les images amusent les enfants.

E. 1. Have you any apples? 2. Do you like apples? 3. I don't like them. 4. We like reading. 5. We are studying history and geography. 6. I have some money in my pocket. 7. Are you fond of money? 8. I am giving them some money. 9. Children like apples. 10. Has John any apples? 11. Has he any ink? 12. No, madam, but I am lending him some paper and ink.

F. 1. We like reading. 2. Little boys like marbles. 3. They have marbles and tops. 4. Our teacher speaks French. 5. Do you speak French? 6. Don't you like French? 7. Have you any amuse-

ments at school? 8. Little girls like books. 9. The little girls have books. 10. Books amuse them. 11. Do not men love money? 12. Have you any money in your pocket? 13. Are you studying histcry and the languages?

LESSON XIII

26. Quantity. — 1. The word limited by a noun or adverb of quantity is preceded by **de**, usually without article:

Une livre de viande.	<i>A pound of meat.</i>
Beaucoup de thé.	<i>A great deal of tea (much tea).</i>
Beaucoup de pommes (d'amis).	<i>A great many apples (friends).</i>
Un peu de pain; trop de pain.	<i>A little bread; too much bread.</i>
Assez d'argent.	<i>Enough (of) money or money enough.</i>

2. But observe the following expressions:

La plupart des hommes.	<i>(The) most (of the) men.</i>
J'ai bien des amis ici.	<i>I have many friends here.</i>
Désire-t-il encore des pommes?	<i>Does he wish some more apples?</i>

27. Use of *en*. — 1. *Some* or *any*, as a pronoun = **en** [ə] (lit. *of it, of them*); it must be used to replace a partitive noun, even though *some*, *any*, be omitted in English:

A-t-il de l'encre? — Il en a.	<i>Has he any ink? — He has (some).</i>
Désire-t-il du thé? — Il en désire.	<i>Does he wish tea? — He does.</i>

2. Similarly **en** must replace a noun preceded by a numeral, or the governed word of an expression of quantity:

A-t-elle une plume?	<i>Has she a pen?</i>
Elle en a une (deux, etc.).	<i>She has one (two, etc.).</i>
Elle en a beaucoup.	<i>She has a great many.</i>

3. Besides the above uses, observe that **en** in general has the force of **de** (= *of, from, with, etc.*) + a noun or pronoun:

J'en suis content.	<i>I am pleased with (glad of) it or them.</i>
--------------------	--

4. **En** has the same position as a conjunctive pronoun object (cf. § 23, 2).

L'automne et le chambon
LESSON XIII

EXERCISE XXI

SUR SAINT-MARTIN RAI

assez [asɛ], *enough*

l'automne [otɔn], m. or f., *autumn*
cent [sü], *a hundred*

combien [kɔbjɛ], *how much (many)?*

désirer [dezire], *desire, wish, want*

l'écureuil [ekyroe:j], m., *squirrel*

en [ã], *in*

la faîne [fem], *beechnut*

la feuille [fœij], *leaf* ~~call~~

(un) peu [pø], (a) *little, few; en automne* [ẽ otɔn], *in autumn*

la livre [livr], *pound*

ramasser [ramase], *pick up, gather*
rester [reste], *remain, stay*

le sac [sak], *bag, sack*

souffler [sufle], *blow*

le thé [te], *tea*

tomber [tɔbel], *fall*

le vent [vã], *wind*

le verger [verʒe], *orchard*

NOTE. — Forms like *I do, I have*, with a verb understood, must not be used in French; the sentence must be complete.

A. Continue: 1. J'ai beaucoup de pommes, tu, etc. 2. J'en ai beaucoup, etc. 3. Je n'en ai pas beaucoup, etc. 4. J'en ai dix, etc. 5. J'ai peu d'argent, etc. 6. J'en ai peu, etc. 7. J'ai encore de l'argent, etc. 8. J'ai bien de l'argent, etc. 9. J'en ai encore beaucoup, etc. 10. J'ai bien des amis, etc.

B. 1. Avez-vous assez d'argent? 2. J'en ai assez. 3. Que désirez-vous? 4. Je désire une livre de thé. 5. Avez-vous beaucoup de pommes? 6. Nous n'en avons pas beaucoup. 7. Nous avons peu de pommes. 8. Nous en avons très peu. 9. Combien en avez-vous? 10. J'en ai trois. 11. Désirez-vous encore des pommes? 12. J'en désire encore.

C. 1. Nous sommes en automne. 2. Peu de feuilles restent sur les arbres. 3. Le vent souffle et beaucoup de faînes tombent. 4. Les écureuils en ramassent beaucoup. 5. Les enfants aiment les faînes et en ramassent aussi. 6. Dans son verger M. Dupont a cent sacs de pommes. 7. Il en donne dix sacs à son frère. 8. Son frère en donne à ses enfants. 9. La plupart des enfants aiment les pommes. 10. Les autres enfants en désirent aussi. 11. Les enfants de M. Dupont en donnent à leurs petits amis.

D. (Oral.) 1. Quand les feuilles tombent-elles? 2. Qu'est-ce que les écureuils ramassent? 3. Est-ce que les enfants ramassent des faînes? 4. Qu'est-ce que vous avez dans votre verger? 5. En avez-vous beaucoup? 6. À qui en donnez-vous? 7. Êtes-vous contents de votre verger? 8. Combien de pommes avez-vous? etc.

E. 1. Have you many apples? 2. We have a great many.
 3. Have you any more apples? 4. Yes, sir, we have some more.
 5. What do the squirrels pick up in autumn? 6. They pick up a
 great many beechnuts. 7. Our friends have four sacks of apples.
 8. We have a great many also. 9. Have your friends much money?
 10. They have (= they have much of it). 11. Has the little boy
 any pears? 12. He has. 13. We are picking up pears in the
 orchard. 14. Are you picking up any? 15. Do you give any
 [away] to your relatives? 16. We give some away to our cousins.

F. 1. Do you wish any money? 2. No, sir, I have some. 3. Have
 you much? 4. I have enough. 5. Has Louis enough? 6. He has
 (enough of it). 7. How many apples have you? 8. How many
 has John? 9. I have one; John has two. 10. You haven't enough;
 you have very few. 11. Here are some more. 12. Here are some
 on the table. 13. Do most men love money? 14. They do (= they
 love it).

LESSON XIV

28. Omission of Article. — With a partitive noun (§ 25) the definite article is omitted, and *de* alone is used:—

1. In a general negation, complete absence of the object in question being implied:

Je n'ai pas de pain. *I have no (haven't any) bread.*

Il n'a pas d'amis ici. *He has no friends here.*

Je n'ai pas de plume. *I have no pen.*

2. When an adjective precedes the noun, and likewise when a noun is understood after an adjective:

Marie a de jolies fleurs. *Mary has (some) pretty flowers.*

J'ai de votre argent. *I have some of your money.*

De grands arbres et de petits. *Large trees and small (ones).*

But: Des pommes mûres. *Ripe apples (adj. following).*

NOTE. — For exceptions and special cases, see Lesson LXXX.

29. Observe the omission of a partitive sign in the following:

Il n'a ni pommes ni poires. *He has neither apples nor pears.*

Sans amis et sans argent. *Without friends and without money.*

Le panier est plein de pommes. *The basket is full of apples.*

30. Observe the use of de in the following expressions:

- | | |
|------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Une robe de soie. | <i>A silk dress (dress of silk).</i> |
| Une leçon de français. | <i>A French lesson.</i> |
| Une salle de classe. | <i>A classroom.</i> |

31. Il y a. — *There is, there are*, are rendered thus when no stress rests on the word *there*, and when the expression is not accompanied by look or gesture (cf. § 17):

- | | |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Il y a un livre sur la table. | <i>There is a book on the table.</i> |
| Y a-t-il des livres ici? | <i>Are there any books here?</i> |
| Il n'y a pas de plumes ici. | <i>There are no pens here.</i> |
| N'y a-t-il pas de plumes ici? | <i>Are there no pens here?</i> |
| Il y en a. | <i>There is (are) some.</i> |
| Il n'y en a pas. | <i>There is (are) none.</i> |
| Y en a-t-il? | <i>Is (are) there any?</i> |
| N'y en a-t-il pas? | <i>Is (are) there none (not any)?</i> |

(a) Observe that *en* follows *y*.

✓ EXERCISE XIV

brouter [brute], <i>browse</i> , <i>crop</i> , ✓	partout [partu], <i>everywhere</i> ,
déjà [deʒa], <i>already</i>	plein [plɛ], <i>full</i> {of, de}
la fleur [flear], <i>flower</i> , ✓	pousser [puse], <i>grow</i>
la glace [glas], <i>ice</i>	le printemps [prɛtɑ], <i>spring</i>
l'herbe [erb], f., <i>grass</i> , ✓	la salle [sal], <i>hall, room</i> ,
la joie [ʒwa], <i>joy, happiness</i> , ✓	sans [sã], <i>without</i>
même [me:m], adv., <i>even</i>	le sud [syd], <i>south</i>
le mouton [mutõ], <i>sheep</i>	la vache [vaʃ], <i>cow</i>
la neige [ne:j], <i>snow</i>	vert [ver], <i>green</i>
le pain [pe], <i>bread</i> , ..	

ne . . . ni . . . ni [nø ni ni], *neither . . . nor*; au printemps, *in spring*

A. Continue: 1. Je n'ai ni plumes ni encre, tu, etc. 2. J'ai de jolis livres, etc. 3. Je n'ai pas d'argent, etc. 4. Je suis sans gants et sans chapeau, etc. 5. J'étudie ma leçon de français, tu . . . ta, etc. 6. Je suis dans la salle de classe, etc. 7. Il y a de grands arbres dans ma cour, . . . dans ta, etc. 8. Y a-t-il de jolies fleurs dans mon jardin? . . . dans ton, etc. 9. Il y en a dans mon jardin, . . . dans ton, etc. 10. N'y en a-t-il pas dans mon jardin? . . . dans ton, etc.

B. 1. Avez-vous du pain? 2. Je n'ai pas de pain. 3. Nous n'avons ni pain ni viande. 4. Vous avez là de jolies fleurs. 5. Nous avons beaucoup de jolies fleurs. 6. À la ville il y a de grandes maisons et de petites. 7. Avez-vous beaucoup d'amis? 8. Nous n'en avons pas ici. 9. Y a-t-il de jolies maisons à la campagne? 10. As-tu de mon papier? 11. J'en ai. 12. Y a-t-il des livres sur la table? 13. N'y en a-t-il pas? 14. Il n'y en a pas.

C. 1. Voici maintenant le printemps. 2. Il n'y a ni neige ni glace. 3. Le vent du sud souffle. 4. Les arbres sont déjà verts. 5. L'herbe pousse aux champs. 6. Les vaches et les moutons la broutent. 7. Partout il y a de jolies fleurs. 8. Nous en trouvons dans les champs et dans les jardins. 9. Les arbres des vergers en sont pleins. 10. Il y a de la joie partout. 11. Même sans amis et sans argent les hommes sont contents.

D. (Oral.) 1. Y a-t-il de la neige au printemps? 2. Où trouvons-nous de jolies fleurs? 3. Y a-t-il de la joie partout? 4. Les arbres sont-ils pleins de fleurs? 5. Où sont les moutons et les vaches? 6. Qu'est-ce qu'ils broutent? 7. N'avez-vous pas de fleurs? 8. Qui a de jolies fleurs? 9. Qui nous donne une leçon de français? 10. Où nous donne-t-il notre leçon de français? 11. Qu'est-ce qu'il y a sur la table? 12. Y a-t-il des plumes dans votre boîte? etc.

E. 1. I have no flowers. 2. We have no French lesson to-day. 3. Have you no large trees in your yard? 4. John has some of my paper. 5. There are some pretty flowers in our garden. 6. There are large houses and small houses in the city. 7. I have neither ink nor pens here. 8. The poor boy is without money. 9. The teacher is giving us a French lesson in the classroom. 10. There are a great many books on the table. 11. Are there any large houses in the village? 12. There are some very large [ones].

F. 1. Are there any pretty flowers in the fields? 2. There are already some in the fields and gardens. 3. Do the cows crop grass? 4. Yes, sir, and the sheep crop it too. 5. Sheep and cows like grass. 6. Sometimes there is snow in spring. 7. But there isn't much. 8. We have neither ice nor snow now. 9. The grass is already green. 10. The south wind is blowing. 11. There is no ice to-day. 12. Flowers grow in spring. 13. The gardens are full of them.

LESSON XV

32. Irregular Plurals. — Observe the following exceptions to the general rule of adding **s** to the singular (cf. § 2, 3): —

1. Nouns in **-s**, **-x**, **-z**, and adjectives in **-s**, **-x**, are unchanged:

bois, wood(s)	nez, nose(s)	bas	bas, low
voix, voice(s)		heureux	heureux, happy

2. Nouns in **-au**, **-eu**, and a few in **-ou**, add **x**:

chapeau(x), hat(s)	jeu(x), game(s)	bijou(x), jewel(s)
--------------------	-----------------	--------------------

(a) Also in **-ou**: caillou(x), pebble, chou(x), cabbage, genou(x), knee, hibou(x), owl, joujou(x), toy, but sou(s), cent, halfpenny, etc.

3. Adjectives in **-eau** also add **x**:

beau(x), fine	nouveau(x), new
---------------	-----------------

4. Nouns, and the commoner adjectives, in **-al** take **-aux**:

animal	animaux, animal	égal	égaux, equal
--------	-----------------	------	--------------

(a) Ball(s), ball, carnaval(s), carnival, and some rarer nouns are regular.

5. Seven nouns in **-ail** take **-aux**; the commonest are:

travail	travaux, work(s)	corail	coraux, coral(s)
---------	------------------	--------	------------------

6. Note also:

ceil	yeux, eye(s)	ciel	cieux, sky, skies, heaven(s)
------	--------------	------	------------------------------

33. Position of Adjectives. — Qualifying adjectives, used with nouns, regularly follow, especially when denoting: —

1. Physical quality, such as colour, shape, heat, cold, etc.:

De l'encre noire;	de l'eau froide.	Black ink; cold water.
-------------------	------------------	------------------------

Une pierre dure (ronde).		A hard (round) stone.
--------------------------	--	-----------------------

Du vin doux (aigre).		Sweet (sour) wine.
----------------------	--	--------------------

2. Nationality, religion and the like:

Le droit anglais;	l'église catholique.	(The) English law; the Catholic church.
-------------------	----------------------	---

3. So also participles used as adjectives:

La cruche cassée.		The broken pitcher.
-------------------	--	---------------------

Un tableau frappant.		A striking picture.
----------------------	--	---------------------

4. But certain adjectives of frequent use generally precede:

<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> beau, fine	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> long, long	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> jeune, young
<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> joli, pretty	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> court, short	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> vieux, old
<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> vilain, ugly	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> gros, big	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> nouveau, new
<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> bon, good	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> grand, large	
<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> mauvais, bad	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/> petit, small	

NOTES. — 1. Adjectives used figuratively, unemphatically or when merged in sense with the noun, often precede, irrespective of the above rules, e.g. une étroite amitié, an intimate (lit. narrow) friendship; but une rue étroite, a narrow street.

2. Many adjectives vary in meaning, before or after the noun, e.g. mon cher enfant, my dear child; une robe chère, a costly dress.

EXERCISE XV

abondant [abɔ̃dã], abundant.
 l'animal [animal], m., animal.
 beau [bo], fine, beautiful, hand-some, good-looking
 bleu [ble], blue
 le bois [bwa], wood
 le bruit [brɥi], sound, noise
 la cerise [sériz], cherry
 le chant ([ʃ]), song, singing
 chargé [ʃarʒe], laden
 le cheval [ʃeval], horse
 le clou [klu], nail
 l'été [ete], m., summer

en été [ə̃ ëtē], in summer

le feuillage [fœjaʒ], leaves, foliage
 la fraise [fre:z], strawberry
 habiter [abit̪], inhabit, live in
 intéressant [eteresã], interesting
 mûr [my:r], ripe, mature
 noir [nwair], black
 l'œil [œ:j], m., pl. yeux [jø], eye
 l'oiseau [wazo], m., bird
 la paille [pa:j], straw
 le pommier [pomje], apple tree
 la soie [swa], silk
 tendre [tā:dr], tender

- A. Continue: 1. Je regarde les beaux chevaux noirs, tu, etc.
 2. J'ai deux chapeaux de paille, etc. 3. Je n'en ai pas de soie, etc.
 4. Je suis sous les beaux arbres, etc. 5. J'ai deux gros livres intéressants, etc. 6. J'ai un sac de pommes mûres, etc. 7. J'ai des yeux bleus, etc. 8. J'ai deux gros clous, etc.

- B. 1. En été nous sommes souvent aux bois. 2. Ils sont beaux et très intéressants. 3. Nous regardons souvent les beaux arbres. 4. Nous écoutons aussi le bruit des feuilles et le chant des oiseaux. 5. Beaucoup de petits oiseaux habitent les bois. 6. Nous aimons leur chant. 7. Il y a aussi de petits animaux dans le feuillage.

8. Ils nous amusent quand ils jouent ensemble. 9. Aux champs l'herbe est tendre et abondante. 10. Les vaches et les chevaux l'aiment beaucoup. 11. Dans le verger les pommiers sont chargés de petites pommes. 12. Elles ne sont pas encore mûres. 13. Mais les cerises et les fraises sont presque mûres. 14. Il y a deux beaux enfants sous les pommiers. 15. Ils ont de très beaux yeux bleus. 16. Ils ont de beaux chapeaux de paille. 17. Mon père a un chapeau de soie.

C. (Oral.) 1. Qu'est-ce que vous regardez dans les bois? 2. Qu'est-ce que nous écoutons aux bois? 3. Que trouvez-vous aux bois? 4. Est-ce que les petits animaux vous amusent? 5. Y a-t-il beaucoup de fraises mûres au jardin? 6. Où trouvons-nous de l'herbe tendre? 7. Combien d'enfants y a-t-il sous les arbres? 8. Avez-vous un joli chapeau de paille? etc.

D. 1. Beautiful woods. 2. Interesting books. 3. A pretty blue bird. 4. Beautiful blue eyes. 5. Fine black horses. 6. The little animals of the woods. 7. The tender and abundant grass. 8. Ripe apples; green apples. 9. A straw hat; a silk hat. 10. Black ink; blue paper. 11. A strong man; strong men. 12. Ripe cherries; ripe strawberries. (For 13 and 14, see § 32.) 13. Games, jewels, works, pebbles, voices. 14. New books, toys and games, pretty corals.

E. 1. How many hats have you? 2. I have two. 3. I have a straw hat and a silk hat. 4. Do you like straw hats? 5. I do (= I like them), in summer. 6. There are three beautiful children under the apple trees. 7. The children's eyes are blue. 8. They are playing together. 9. We like the singing of the birds. 10. When the little animals play they amuse us very much. 11. Do the horses like the tender grass? 12. They do.

F. 1. Are there many apples in the orchard? 2. The apple trees are laden with (*de*) apples. 3. But they are still small. 4. There are no ripe apples yet. 5. Most men like fine horses. 6. My uncle has two beautiful apple trees in his garden. 7. We listen to the singing of the little birds in the woods. 8. When the wind blows there is a sound in the leaves. 9. The sounds of the woods are very interesting. 10. Many interesting little animals live in the woods.

LESSON XVI

34. Irregular Feminine Adjectives. — The stem of certain adjectives is modified on adding the ending **-e** (cf. § 14), thus: —

1. By change of final consonant (**f = v**, **g = gu**, **x = s**, **c = ch**, sometimes **qu**):

actif	active, <i>active</i>	blanc	blanche, <i>white</i>
long	longue, <i>long</i>	public	publique, <i>public</i>
heureux	heureuse, <i>happy</i>		

(a) But observe: **doux, douce, sweet; faux, fausse, false**

2. By doubling the final consonant of **-el, -eil, -en, -on**, and commonly also final **-s** and **-t**:

cruel	cruelle, <i>cruel</i>	bon	bonne, <i>good</i>
pareil	pareille, <i>like</i>	gros	grosse, <i>big</i>
ancien	ancienne, <i>ancient, former</i>	muet	muette, <i>dumb</i>

(a) Similarly **gentil, gentille, nice**.

(b) Regular are: **gris(e), grey, prêt(e), ready**, and some others; six in **-et** have **-es**, e.g. **complet, complète, complete**; observe also **frais, fraîche, fresh, cool**.

3. Adjectives in **-er**, and a few others, change **e** to **è**:

léger	légère, <i>light</i>	sec	sèche, <i>dry</i> (cf. 1, above)
char	chère, <i>dear</i>	complet	complète, <i>complete</i> (cf.
bref	brève, <i>brief</i> (cf. 1, above)	2, b, above)	

4. Five adjectives have two masculine forms in the singular, the form in **-l** standing always before a vowel or **h** mute, and serving to form the feminine, like 2 above:

beau or bel	belle, <i>fine</i>	nouveau or nouvel	nouvelle, <i>new</i>
fou or fol	folle, <i>foolish</i>	vieux or vieil	vieille, <i>old</i>
mou or mol	molle, <i>soft</i>		

EXERCISE XVI

la branche [brã:ʃ], branch

jaune [ʒõ:n], yellow

la cave [ka:v], cellar

nu [ny], bare

couper [kupe], cut, cut down

rouge [ru:ʒ], red

court [kuir], short

le traineau [treno], sleigh

le flocon [flokɔ], flake (of snow)

transporter [trãspɔʁte], bring

l'hiver [ive:r], m., winter

en hiver [ə̃n i've:r], in winter

Note. — The adjectives of § 34, above, are not given in the vocabulary.

S. Tracy

A. Turn the English words into French with proper order and agreement: 1. Nous avons (*good*) poires. 2. Aimez-vous (*fine, sweet*) pommes? 3. Avez-vous (*good, red*) pommes? 4. Je leur donne (*big, sweet*) pommes. 5. Nous avons (*fine, white*) chevaux. 6. Il y a (*little, blue*) oiseaux aux bois. 7. Il y a (*good*) vaches aux champs. 8. Le monsieur a (*a fine, silk*) chapeau.

B. 1. Voici maintenant l'hiver. 2. Le bel arbre qui (*which*) est devant notre maison n'a pas de feuilles vertes. 3. Il en a de jaunes. 4. Mais ses longues branches sont presque nues. 5. Il n'y a pas de pommes au verger. 6. Mais nous avons de grosses belles pommes rouges à la cave. 7. Il y a aussi de jolies poires douces à la cave. 8. Peu de petits animaux sont aux bois. 9. Il y a de la neige partout. 10. Les champs sont blancs. 11. Les maisons sont blanches. 12. De gros flocons de neige tombent encore. 13. Deux hommes forts coupent de gros arbres là-bas. 14. Ils ont un traîneau et deux chevaux. 15. Avec le traîneau ils transportent le bois à la maison.

C. 1. The big flakes of white snow are falling. 2. The branches of the fine tree are almost bare. 3. We find no little animals in the woods. 4. There are no squirrels in the woods. 5. They do not like the winter. 6. Are the fields white in winter? 7. The fields are white, and the houses are white too. 8. There is white snow everywhere. 9. What are the men cutting yonder? 10. They are cutting big trees. 11. They bring home the wood with the sleigh.

D. 1. A long letter; long letters. 2. Are you happy, (*my*) children? 3. Mary is not happy; the other little girls are happy. 4. Our house is very old. 5. Are the ladies not yet ready? 6. Clara is a dear little girl; is she not very nice? 7. Mr. Dupont is a handsome man. 8. His wife is a fine-looking lady. 9. There is an old tree before the old house. 10. Old trees; old houses. 11. We have a new lesson to-day. 12. Public affairs are interesting. 13. My letter is short.

LESSON XVIII

38. An Indefinite Pronoun. — 1. The form **on** = *one, some one, we, you, they, people*; its verb is always third singular:

On [ɔ̃] parle de Jean.

We (*you, they, etc.*) speak of John.

2. When following a verb with final vowel, **on** is joined to it by **-t-**, like **il**, etc. (cf. § 8):

Que désire-t-on?

What do they (etc.) wish?

3. A construction with **on** often corresponds to an English passive, especially when the agent is not mentioned:

Ici on parle français.

French (*is*) spoken here.

(a) **on** = **l'on** optionally after certain words, e.g. **et, où, si, que, etc.**, to avoid hiatus.

39. Use of y. — 1. The pronominal adverb **y** [i] = **à** (**dans, sur, etc.**) + a noun or pronoun and means *to* (*at, in, on, etc.*) *it or them*:

Je laisse la lettre sur la table.

I leave the letter on the table.

J'y laisse la lettre.

I leave the letter on it.

2. **[Y] = there**, of a place previously referred to; it is less emphatic than **là**, which regularly denotes a place not previously referred to:

Il est au jardin.

He is in the garden.

Il y est encore.

He is still there (in it).

But: Qu'avez-vous là?

What have you there?

3. **[Y]** precedes the verb like a conjunctive pronoun (cf. § 23).

40. Tout. — *Every, all, whole* = **tout**, which serves either as an adjective or a pronoun; its forms are:

m. s. **tout** [tu], f. s. **toute** [tut], m. pl. **tous** [tu(s)], f. pl. **toutes** [tut]

Tout homme, toute femme.

Every man, every woman.

Tous les livres, toutes les plumes.

All the books, all the pens.

Toute la journée.

The whole (all the) day.

Je les ai tous [tus].

I have them all.

(a) The article, when present, always follows **tout**:

(b) The **s** of **tous**, used pronominally, is sounded.

LESSON XVII

EXERCISE XVIII

admirer [admire], *admire*
 animé [anime], *animated, lively*
 danser [dāse], *dance*
 le groupe [grup], *group*
 joyeux [ʒwajø], *joyous, merry*
 le mérite [merit], *merit*
 le monde [mɔ:d], *world, people*
 patiner [patine], *skate*
 le paysage [peizɑ:g], *landscape*
 le pin [pē], *pine tree, pine*
 plusieurs [plyzjœ:r], pl. adj. or
 pron., *invar., several*

remarquer [rəmarkə], *remark, observe, notice*
 représenter [rəprezəte], *represent*
 le salon [salɔ], *drawing-room, parlour*
 sembler [sâble], *seem, appear*
 surtout [syrtu], *above all, especially*
 le tableau [tablo], *picture, painting*
 tout [tu], *absol., everything*
 tranquille [trukil], *tranquil, quiet*

on voit [vwa], *irreg., one sees; tout le monde* [tu l mɔ:d], *everybody*

A. Continue: 1. On admire tous mes tableaux, . . . tous tes, etc. (*also interrogatively*). 2. Toutes mes fleurs sont jolies, toutes tes, etc. 3. Je suis au jardin, j'y suis, tu es au jardin, tu y es, etc. 4. Est-ce que j'y suis? etc. 5. Je les admire tous, tu, etc.

B. 1. Dans notre salon il y a plusieurs tableaux. 2. On en admire surtout deux qui représentent des paysages. 3. Dans l'un on trouve des vaches qui broutent l'herbe. 4. On y remarque aussi plusieurs moutons. 5. Tous les animaux semblent tranquilles et contents. 6. On y voit aussi des enfants qui dansent sous les arbres. 7. C'est un tableau de beaucoup de mérite. 8. L'autre tableau représente un paysage d'hiver. 9. Presque tout y est blanc. 10. Mais il y a un groupe de pins qui sont très verts. 11. À côté des pins on voit des enfants joyeux qui patinent sur la glace. 12. D'autres enfants y jouent avec leurs traîneaux. 13. C'est un tableau très animé. 14. Tout le monde l'aime

C. (Oral.) 1. Qu'y a-t-il dans le salon? 2. Admire-t-on vos tableaux? 3. Tous vos tableaux sont-ils beaux? 4. Y voit-on des vaches? 5. Y remarque-t-on d'autres animaux? 6. Les animaux qu'on y voit sont-ils tous tranquilles? 7. Où dansent les enfants qu'on y voit? 8. Est-ce un beau tableau? etc.

D. 1. Here are two pictures. 2. We have several pictures in our drawing-room. 3. Everybody admires two of them especially.

French Big Book

LESSON XIX

4. The pictures that they (*on*) admire are landscapes. 5. In (the) one we (you, etc.) observe many trees. 6. You notice in it also cows and sheep. 7. All the animals that one sees in it are quiet and they seem happy. 8. We observe also children dancing (who dance). 9. (Some) other children are playing under the trees. 10. Those (*ce*) are my little sisters who are playing there.

E. 1. In the other picture we (you, etc.) see snow. 2. Every-
thing is white (*m.*). 3. There is snow everywhere. 4. There is
some snow even on the green pines. 5. Almost the whole landscape
is white. 6. All the houses are white. 7. We observe yonder some
children (who are) skating. 8. Several other children are there
also. 9. They are playing there with their sleighs. 10. People
play a great deal on the ice in winter. 11. The pictures are much
admired (use *on*). 12. Everybody admires good pictures.

LESSON XIX

41. **The Regular Conjugations.** — 1. French verbs are conveniently divided into three conjugations, according to the infinitive endings -er, -ir, -re:

I

Donner, *to give*

II

Finir, *to finish*

III

Vendre, *to sell*

2. Like these are conjugated all regular verbs with corresponding infinitive endings.

42. Present Indicative of *donner*, *finir*, *vendre*

I give, I am giving,

I do give, etc.

je donne [dən]

tu donnes [dən]

il donne [dən]

nous donnons [dənɔ̃]

vous donnez [dəne]

ils donnent [dən]

I finish, I am finish-

ing, I do finish, etc.

finis [fini]

finis [fini]

finit [fini]

finissons [finisɔ̃]

finissez [finise]

finissent [finis]

I sell, I am selling,

I do sell, etc.

vends [vã]

vends [vã]

vend¹ [vã]

vendons [vãdɔ̃]

vendez [vãde]

vendent [vãd]

Learn also negative and interrogative forms (cf. § 19).

¹ Vendre is irregular in this single form; the only wholly regular verb of this conjugation is rompre, which has rompt, but vendre is here given as being more useful for practice.

43.

The Demonstrative Adjective

SINGULAR	PLURAL
m. <i>ce</i> [sə], <i>cet</i> [sɛt] } <i>this or that</i>	m. <i>or f. ces</i> [sə], <i>these or those.</i>
f. <i>cette</i> [sɛt]	
Ce livre, <i>cet ami</i> , <i>cet homme</i> .	<i>This book, this friend, this man.</i>
<i>Cet autre livre.</i>	<i>This (that) other book.</i>
<i>Cette plume et cette encre.</i>	<i>This pen and (this) ink.</i>
<i>Ces plumes, ces hommes.</i>	<i>These pens, these men.</i>
<i>Cet arbre-ci et cet arbre-là.</i>	<i>This tree and that tree.</i>

1. *Ce* becomes *cet* before a vowel or h mute.
2. The demonstrative adjective is repeated before each noun.
3. For emphasis, or to distinguish *this (these)* from *that (those)*, -ci, -là, respectively, are added to the noun.

EXERCISE XIX

les bénéfices [benefis], m., *profit(s)*
 le bout [bu], *end*
fleurir [fl̥erijr], *blossom, be in bloom*
grossir [grɔsijr], *grow larger*
longtemps [lɔ̃tā], *a long time, long*
le marchand [marʃā], *merchant, dealer*
mûrir [myri:r], *ripen*
pendant [pādā], *prep., during*

en même temps, *at the same time; au bout de quelque temps, after some time*

A. Continue: 1. Je vends ces pommes au marchand, tu, etc.
 2. Je n'en vends pas beaucoup, tu, etc. 3. Je finis cette longue leçon, tu, etc. 4. Je ne finis pas la leçon d'histoire, tu, etc. (*also interrogatively*). 5. Est-ce que je perds du temps? est-ce que tu? etc.

B. Supply the proper form of *ce*: 1. *Ce*... marchand; *cet*... marchands. 2. *Cet*... élève (m.); *cette*... élève (f.); *cet*... élèves. 3. *Cet*... autre livre; *ces*... autres hommes. 4. *Cette*... autre plume; *ces*... autres amies. 5. *Cet*... arbre-ci; *cet*... arbres-là.

perdre [perdr], *lose*
pourrir [puri:r], *decay*
le public [pyblɪk], *the public*
quelque [kelk(ə)], adj., *some*
rendre [rā:dr], *render, do, make*
le service [servis], *service*
le temps [tā], *time*
tirer [tire], *draw, derive, get*
trop [tro or tro], *too much, too*

C. 1. Mon père a beaucoup de pommiers dans son verger. 2. Les pommiers fleurissent au printemps. 3. Au bout de quelque temps on voit de petites pommes sur les branches. 4. Pendant l'été les pommes grossissent. 5. En automne elles mûrissent. 6. Quand on les laisse trop longtemps sur les pommiers elles tombent. 7. Alors elles pourrissent. 8. Quand nos pommes sont mûres nous les vendons aux marchands. 9. Les marchands les transportent à la ville. 10. Et là on les vend au public. 11. Mon père et les marchands en tirent des bénéfices, et en même temps ils rendent un grand service au public.

D. (Oral.) 1. Quand ces pommiers fleurissent-ils? 2. Que voit-on sur les branches des pommiers? 3. Quand est-ce que les petites pommes grossissent? 4. Quand mûrissent-elles? 5. Les pommes tombent-elles en automne? 6. À qui vendons-nous les pommes? 7. Ces marchands vendent-ils beaucoup de pommes? 8. À qui en vendent-ils? 9. Qui en tire des bénéfices? etc.

E. 1. When do apples ripen? 2. Are these apples already ripe? 3. No, those apples are still green, but these apples are ripe. 4. Those apples are growing larger. 5. They are ripening already. 6. The ripe apples are falling. 7. The apples which fall decay. 8. I sell my apples to the dealer. 9. He derives profit (*pl.*) from them. 10. I do (render) him a service. 11. He does the public a service. 12. We do the public a great service. 13. Are my father and the dealer not doing the public a service? 14. They are.

F. 1. These pupils often lose (lose often) their books. 2. Do you often lose your books? 3. This little girl often loses her gloves. 4. We lose our time when we do not listen to the teacher. 5. I am finishing this French lesson. 6. Mary is finishing a long letter. 7. Why do you not finish your lessons? 8. We are finishing them now. 9. Those dealers sell us apples. 10. Are you selling those apples? 11. I am not; they are not yet ripe. 12. We sell our apples when they are ripe. 13. Our cherries and strawberries ripen in summer.

LESSON XX

44.

Past Participles

<i>Given</i>	<i>Finished</i>	<i>Sold</i>	<i>Had</i>	<i>Been</i>
donné [dənə]	fini [finit]	vendu [və̃dy]	eu [y]	été [ete]

45. Compound Tenses. — The compound tenses of a verb are formed by adding its past participle to the various simple tenses of an auxiliary verb (usually *avoir*, sometimes *être*, cf. § 51).

46.

The Past Indefinite

I have given (finished, etc.) or I gave (I finished, etc.)

j'ai	donné (fini, vendu, eu, été)
tu as	donné (fini, vendu, eu, été)
il a	donné (fini, vendu, eu, été)
nous avons	donné (fini, vendu, eu, été)
vous avez	donné (fini, vendu, eu, été)
ils ont	donné (fini, vendu, eu, été)

47. Use of Past Indefinite. — It denotes not only what has happened or has been happening, as in English, but also what happened (= English past tense):

J'ai fini mon ouvrage.	<i>I have finished my work.</i>
Il a travaillé au jardin.	<i>He has been working in the garden.</i>
Elle a été ici hier.	<i>She was here yesterday.</i>
Nous avons quitté Paris en hiver.	<i>We left Paris in (the) winter.</i>

NOTE. — The past indefinite is the ordinary past tense of French. For the past tense of narrative in the literary style, see § 152.

48. Word-Order. — 1. In compound tenses, rules of word-order (cf. §§ 8, 11, 23) regularly apply to the auxiliary:

Nous ne l'avons pas fini.	<i>We have not finished it.</i>
N'a-t-elle pas été diligente?	<i>Has she not been industrious?</i>

2. No adverb (except *ne*) may come between the subject and the verb:

Je perds souvent mon temps.	<i>I often lose my time.</i>
-----------------------------	------------------------------

LESSON XXII

✓ 51. Compound Tenses with *être*. — 1. From *être* + the past participle are formed the compound tenses of some intransitive verbs denoting motion or change of condition; such are:

<i>aller, go</i>	<i>monter, go up</i>	<i>retourner, go back</i>
<i>arriver, arrive</i>	<i>mourir, die</i>	<i>revenir, come back</i>
<i>descendre, descend</i>	<i>naitre, be born</i>	<i>sortir, go (come) out</i>
<i>devenir, become</i>	<i>partir, set out</i>	<i>tomber, fall</i>
<i>entrer, enter</i>	<i>rentrer, go in again</i>	<i>venir, come</i>

(a) Irregular past participles: *mort* (*mourir*), *né* (*naitre*), *venu* (*venir*); e.g. *Il est mort*, *He died* (or *is dead*); *Il est né*, *He was born*.

2. The past participle of such verbs must agree with the subject, like an adjective (cf. § 14).

I have arrived (I arrived), etc.

<i>je suis arrivé or été</i>	<i>nous sommes arrivés or êtes</i>
<i>tu es arrivé or été</i>	<i>vous êtes arrivés or êtes</i>
<i>il est arrivé</i>	<i>ils sont arrivés</i>
<i>elle est arrivée</i>	<i>elles sont arrivées</i>

(a) The auxiliary is to be translated by *have*.

EXERCISE XXII

<i>arriver [arive], arrive, come</i>	<i>le magasin [magazē], shop, store</i>
<i>la beauté [bote], beauty, fine sight (thing)</i>	<i>magnifique [majifik], magnificent</i>
<i>chez [sel], at the house (etc.) of</i>	<i>le matin [matē], morning</i>
<i>la chose [so:z], thing</i>	<i>par [par], by, through</i>
<i>entrer [ĕtret] dans, enter, go into</i>	<i>le parc [park], park</i>
<i>faire [fei], do, make</i>	<i>partir [partiir], set out, start, leave</i>
<i>fait [fe], p. part. of faire</i>	<i>rentrer [rĕtret], go (come) in again, go (come) home</i>
<i>hier [jeir], yesterday</i>	<i>la rue [ry], street</i>
<i>lointain [lwĕtē], distant</i>	<i>le soir [swair], evening</i>
<i>Louise [lwiiz], Louisa</i>	<i>sortir [sortiir], go (come) out</i>
<i>chez mon père, at the house (place of business, etc.) of my father, at my father's; faire une promenade, take a walk (drive, etc.).</i>	

A. *Continue:* 1. Je suis arrivé(e) ce matin, etc. 2. Je suis parti(e) hier, etc. 3. Je ne suis pas entré(e) dans la salle, etc. 4. Je n'y suis pas entré(e), etc. 5. Est-ce que je suis sorti(e) de l'église? es-tu . . . etc. 6. Je n'en suis pas sorti(e), etc.

B. *Put into the past indefinite, supplying proper auxiliary and past participle:* 1. Ces dames . . . sortir. 2. Quand . . . -vous arriver, mademoiselle? 3. Je . . . arriver hier. 4. Est-ce que vos sœurs . . . partir? 5. *Form additional examples employing the verbs in § 51.*

C. 1. Nous sommes arrivés hier soir chez nos cousins qui demeurent dans une ville lointaine. 2. Ce matin nous sommes partis de bonne heure pour faire une promenade. 3. Nos cousins nous ont accompagnés pour nous montrer les beautés de la ville. 4. Il y a un très beau parc dans cette ville. 5. Nous y avons passé quelque temps, et ensuite nous sommes entrés dans une belle église qui nous a beaucoup intéressés. 6. Quand nous sommes sortis de l'église nous sommes entrés dans un grand magasin. 7. Nous n'y avons pas acheté beaucoup de choses. 8. Mais nous avons admiré les belles choses que nous y avons vues. 9. Puis nous sommes sortis du magasin et nous sommes rentrés chez nos cousins par une rue magnifique.

D. (*Oral.*) 1. Où demeurent vos cousins? 2. Quand êtes-vous partis? 3. Quand êtes-vous arrivés? 4. Est-ce une belle ville que vous avez vue? 5. Êtes-vous sortis? 6. Pourquoi? 7. Qui vous a accompagnés? 8. Êtes-vous partis de bonne heure? 9. Les rues de cette ville sont-elles belles? 10. Les avez-vous admirées? 11. Où êtes-vous entrés? 12. Qu'est-ce que vous avez fait ensuite? 13. Et alors qu'avez-vous fait? etc.

E. 1. Our cousins arrived this morning. 2. This morning they went out to (*pour*) take a walk. 3. My brother accompanied them. 4. They set out together. 5. He showed them the fine sights of the city. 6. First they went into a magnificent park. 7. They didn't spend much time there. 8. Then they went into the old church which you (*on*) see beside the park. 9. It is a very beautiful church. 10. My cousins admired it very much. 11. When they came out of the church they went into one of the fine stores. 12. Afterwards they went home.

F. 1. Have your cousins arrived? 2. Louisa arrived yesterday, but Charles and his brother haven't come yet. 3. My mother has gone out with my cousin (*f.*) to show her the city. 4. They went out together this morning. 5. They set out early. 6. They went into one of the large stores. 7. Have they come home yet (*déjà*)? 8. Yes, they returned home through one of our magnificent streets. 9. My mother has been showing us the fine things that they bought. 10. We admired them very much. 11. Charles and his brother are here now. 12. They arrived this evening very late. 13. We are all glad to (*de*) see them. 14. My aunt was born and she died in this city.

LESSON XXIII

52.

Disjunctive Personal Pronouns

SINGULAR

moi [mwa], <i>I, me</i>	toi [twa], <i>thou, thee, you</i>	lui [lqi], <i>he, him</i>	elle [el], <i>she, her</i>
soi [swa], <i>oneself, himself, etc.</i>			

PLURAL

nous [nu], <i>we, us</i>	vous [vu], <i>you</i>	eux [ø], <i>they (m.), them (m.)</i>
elles [el], <i>they (f.), them (f.)</i>		

(a) These forms regularly denote persons, and are called "disjunctive" because they may be used apart from the verb.

(b) The ordinary rule of agreement applies (cf. § 7).

53. Disjunctives with Prepositions. — A personal pronoun governed by a preposition takes the disjunctive form:

Il parle de moi (toi, eux, etc.). *He speaks of me (you, them, etc.).*

EXERCISE XXIII

Alice [alis], *Alice*

avant [avã], prep., *before (of time)*

après [apre], prep., *after*

le voisin [vwazã], *neighbour*

à qui est cette maison? *to whom does that house belong? or whose house is that?* elle est à mon père, *it belongs to my father (is my father's);* elle est à lui, *it belongs to him (it is his);* mon cousin est chez nous, *my cousin is at our house;* notre voisin n'est pas chez lui (or à la maison) aujourd'hui, *our neighbour is not at home to-day;* je suis arrivé tard chez moi (or à la maison), *I arrived home late;* tout le monde est chez soi, *everybody is at home*

A. Continue: 1. Mes amis sont chez moi, . . . chez toi, etc. 2. Je ne suis pas chez moi, tu . . . toi, etc. 3. Ce livre est-il à moi, . . . à toi? etc. 4. Il n'est pas à moi, . . . à toi, etc. 5. Ce matin on a parlé de moi, . . . de toi, etc. 6. Charles est arrivé avant moi, . . . toi, etc.

B. 1. Our neighbours are not at home to-day. 2. My mother is not at home. 3. Our cousins are at our house. 4. My little sisters are playing with them. 5. Alice is playing with Louisa. 6. She is playing with her. 7. Why do you not play with me? 8. This picture is for you (thee). 9. This pencil is mine. 10. Those pencils are theirs (f.). 11. Have you been at your uncle's? 12. We haven't been at his house this summer. 13. Whose keys are these?

C. 1. There is our teacher. 2. We have been speaking of him. 3. He spoke of you (thee) and me in school to-day. 4. He is not pleased with (*de*) me. 5. Charles arrived before me. 6. I arrived after him. 7. We arrived after them (f.). 8. Are these letters for them? 9. Do these pens belong to Louisa? 10. Yes, they are hers. 11. They are not mine. 12. Does Mr. Liard live here? 13. He does, but he is not at home.

LESSON XXIV

54. Disjunctives continued. — In addition to their use after prepositions (§ 53), they are employed as follows: —

1. As the real (or logical) subject with *ce* (cf. § 35):

C'est moi (toi, lui, elle, nous, *It is I (thou, he, she, we, you), it is
vous), ce sont eux (elles). they.*

Est-ce moi (toi, lui, elle, nous, *Is it I (thou, he, she, we, you), is it
vous), sont-ce eux (elles)? they?*

(a) In the third plural c'est eux (elles), est-ce eux (elles)? are often found.

2. When a verb is implied, but not expressed:

Qui est là? — Moi (eux, elle). *Who is there? — I (they, she).*

Qui as-tu vu? — Lui (elles). *Whom did you see? — Him (them).*

3. In comparisons, and after *ne . . . que*:

Il est plus grand que moi. *He is taller than I.*

Il ne chante pas comme eux. *He does not sing as they do.*

Je n'ai vu que lui. *I saw him only.*

4. In appositions, often with the emphatic addition of *même*:

Moi je l'ai entendu aussi. *I heard it too.*
 Vous l'avez vu vous-même(s). *You saw it yourself(-selves).*

5. When the subject or object is compound:

Vous et lui (vous) l'avez fait. *You and he have done it.*
 Son ami et lui sont ici. *His friend and he are here.*
 Je vous vois, toi et ton frère. *I see you and your brother.*

6. Soi regularly has indefinite or general force:

Chacun pour soi. *Everybody for himself.*
 But: Il est content de lui(-même). *He is satisfied with himself.*

55. Present Indicative of *voir* (irreg.), 'see'

I see, I am seeing, I do see, etc.

je vois [vwa]	nous voyons [vwajɔ̃]
tu vois [vwa]	vous voyez [vwaje]
il voit [vwa]	ils voient [vwa]

EXERCISE XXIV

l'auteur [otœ:r], m., <i>author</i>	oh [o], <i>oh</i>
bien [bjɛ], <i>indeed, truly</i>	penser [pẽs], <i>think</i>
le colonel [kɔlɔnɛl], <i>colonel</i>	la pièce [pjɛs], <i>play (theatre)</i>
comme [kɔm], <i>as, like</i>	près de [pre də], <i>near</i>
la comtesse [kɔtɛs], <i>countess</i>	le rôle [ʁɔ:l], <i>rôle, part</i>
la connaissance [kɔnesans], <i>acquaintance</i>	le théâtre [teatʁ], <i>theatre</i>
la loge [lɔ:g], <i>box (theatre)</i>	vrai [vre], <i>true</i>

en effet [e:f], *in fact, indeed, it is true; de l'autre côté, on the other side, over there; c'est vrai, it (that) is true; c'est votre ami, n'est-ce pas? it is your friend, is it not? mais non, no, no!*

A. Continue: 1. C'est moi qui l'ai trouvé, c'est toi qui l'as . . . etc. 2. Est-ce moi qui l'ai perdu? etc. 3. Ce n'est pas moi, ce n'est pas toi, etc. 4. N'est-ce pas moi? etc.

B. (*Un frère et une sœur au théâtre*) 1. C'est une pièce de (by) Labiche, n'est-ce pas? — 2. Oui, c'est lui qui en est l'auteur. — 3. C'est Coquelin qui joue le rôle de M. Perrichon? — 4. Oui, c'est lui. — 5. Y a-t-il de nos connaissances au théâtre ce soir? — 6. Oh oui; voilà là-bas deux de mes amies. — 7. En effet ce sont elles. —

8. Et voilà de l'autre côté trois de tes amis. — 9. C'est vrai; ce sont eux. Ils nous regardent. Ils nous saluent. Derrière eux dans une loge on voit [le] colonel D. — 10. Oui, c'est bien lui. Près de lui dans cette autre loge je vois la comtesse de B. — 11. Mais non, ce n'est pas elle, je pense. — 12. Qui est-ce alors? — 13. C'est la dame que nous avons rencontrée chez la comtesse. — 14. Son frère est avec elle, n'est-ce pas? — 15. Oui, elle et lui sont toujours ensemble comme toi et moi.

C. (Oral on B, above.)

D. 1. Is Augier the author of this play? 2. He is not (= it is not he). 3. It is Labiche. 4. It is not he who plays the rôle of Perrichon. 5. That is Coquelin. 6. Is it (the) countess (of) B. whom we (*on*) see in that box? 7. It is. 8. Who is that lady beside her? 9. It is Mrs. D. whom we saw at her house. 10. Did I not see her at your house? 11. It was (is) her sister whom you saw at my house. 12. (The) Colonel B. is in the other box. 13. His wife is with him. 14. It is they who live near us.

E. 1. It is I. 2. It is they (*m.*). 3. It is they (*f.*) isn't it? 4. Is it they (*m.*)? 5. Is that you? 6. It is. 7. I was there myself. 8. You saw him yourselves. 9. This book is mine. 10. It belongs to me. 11. I bought it myself in the city. 12. Mary and her brother are here. 13. She and her brother are playing with us. 14. She and he are always together. 15. It is they who are going with us. 16. Who has seen that play by Labiche? 17. I [have].

LESSON XXV

56. Comparatives. — 1. To form comparatives, *plus* = *more*, *moins* = *less*, or *aussi* = *as*, is placed before the adjective, and *que* = *than* or *as* after it:

Il est plus grand que Jean.	<i>He is taller than John.</i>
Il est moins grand que moi.	<i>He is not so tall as I.</i>
Il est aussi grand qu'elle.	<i>He is as tall as she.</i>

2. With a negative, *aussi* generally becomes *si*:

Il n'est pas si grand (or il est moins grand) que moi.	<i>He is not so tall as I.</i>
--	--------------------------------

57. Superlatives. — 1. To form superlatives, the definite article or a possessive adjective precedes *plus*, *moins*:

Elle est la plus (*moins*) aimable. *She is the most (least) amiable.*

C'est mon meilleur ami. *He is my best friend.*

OBSERVE. — La plus jeune des deux. *The younger of the two.*

2. The definite article must not be omitted when the adjective follows the noun:

La leçon la plus difficile. *The most difficult lesson.*

3. After a superlative, *in* = *de* in such sentences as:

La plus jeune de la classe. *The youngest (girl) in the class.*

58. Irregular Comparison. — Observe the following:

bon, good	meilleur, better	le meilleur, the best
-----------	------------------	-----------------------

mauvais, bad	pire, worse	le pire, the worst
--------------	-------------	--------------------

petit, small	moindre, less	le moindre, the least
--------------	---------------	-----------------------

(a) *Pire* is less common than *plus mauvais*, and serves also as a comparative to *méchant*, *bad*, *evil*, *wicked*.

(b) In general, *moindre* = *less* (in importance), *plus petit* = *smaller*, *less* (in size).

59. Comparison of Adverbs. — 1. They are regularly compared like adjectives, but *le* of the superlative is invariable:

Plus (*moins*, *aussi*) facilement. *More (less, as) easily.*

Le plus (*moins*) souvent. *(The) most (least) frequently.*

2. But observe the irregular forms:

bien, well	mieux, better	beaucoup, much	plus, more
------------	---------------	----------------	------------

mal, badly	{ pis or plus mal, worse	peu, little	moins, less
------------	-----------------------------	-------------	-------------

3. *Plus* (*moins*), as adverb of quantity, requires *de* (= *than*) before a numeral:

Il en a plus de dix livres. *He has more than ten pounds of it.*

EXERCISE XXV

- A. *Continue:* 1. Je suis plus grand que Jean, tu . . . etc. 2. Il est moins fort que moi, . . . toi, etc. 3. Est-ce que je suis plus petite qu'elle? es-tu . . . ? etc. 4. Je suis la meilleure élève de la classe, tu, etc. 5. N'ai-je pas la leçon la plus difficile? etc. 6. J'ai vendu

mes meilleures pommes, tu . . . tes, etc. 7. Est-ce que j'aime mieux les fleurs rouges? aimes-tu . . . ? etc. 8. J'en ai moins de deux livres, tu, etc.

B. 1. I am as tall as you. 2. But I am not so strong as you. 3. You are taller than your brother, are you not? 4. John is as tall and as strong as he. 5. The pears are not so ripe as the apples. 6. John's lesson is very difficult. 7. He has the most difficult lesson. 8. His lesson is the most difficult of all the lessons. 9. Alice is the most industrious pupil in our class. 10. George skates better than I. 11. He doesn't skate as well as you. 12. He skates very badly, in fact. 13. But we skate oftener than he. 14. He skates very little.

C. 1. The grass is less abundant in this field. 2. Your house is the oldest house in the town. 3. Our house is much better; we like it better. 4. Our neighbours' house is larger. 5. This picture is still worse than the other. 6. It is a picture without the least merit. 7. Charles always arrives at school later than I. 8. Here is the most interesting of my books. 9. These pens are very bad. 10. Those pens are still worse. 11. I have bought more than four pounds of meat. 12. I wish two pounds of your best tea. 13. You always arrive later than the others. 14. And you work still less than they. 15. I have more friends than you. 16. I have fewer (= less) friends, but I have more money.

LESSON XXVI



60. The Infinitive. — The commoner uses of the infinitive are: —

1. Following directly after certain verbs, such as:

aller, go	faire, make, cause	savoir, know how to
désirer, desire	falloir, be necessary	voir, see
devoir, owe	laisser, let	vouloir, will, wish
espérer, hope	pouvoir, be able, can	

Pouvez-vous me prêter de l'encre? *Can you lend me some ink?*

Nous allons acheter du thé. *We are going to buy some tea.*

Désire-t-il nous parler? *Does he wish to speak to us?*

Il faut acheter de la viande. *We (you, etc.) must buy some meat.*

Preceded by **de** after many verbs, such as:—

cesser, cease	ordonner, order	refuser, refuse
dire, tell	prier, beg, request	tâcher, attempt, try
éviter, avoid		

Elle a cessé de chanter. *She has ceased singing.*

Je vous prie de m'écouter. *I beg you to listen to me.*

3. Preceded by **de** after nouns and some adjectives:

Le crime de voler. *The crime of stealing.*

Je suis content de vous voir. *I am glad to see you.*

4. Preceded by **à** after many verbs, such as:—

aimer, like	enseigner, teach	réussir, succeed
apprendre, learn	inviter, invite	

Je les ai invités à rester. *I invited them to stay.*

J'aime (à) patiner. *I like to skate.*

(a) **à** after **aimer** is sometimes omitted.

5. Preceded by **à** after some adjectives:

Je suis prêt à partir. *I am ready to set out (go).*

Cet ouvrage est facile à faire. *That work is easy to do.*

6. Preceded by prepositions other than **de** or **à**:

J'ai parlé sans penser. *I spoke without thinking.*

Il écoute pour apprendre. *He listens in order to learn.*

7. Observe its use to render English forms in **-ing**:

Il parle de partir. *He speaks of going.*

Il est parti sans nous parler. *He went without speaking to us.*

61. Present Indicative of *aller* (irreg.)

I go, I am going, I do go, etc.

je vais [ve]	nous allons [alɔ̃]
tu vas [va]	vous allez [ale]
il va [va]	ils vont [vɔ̃]

62. Present Indicative of *pouvoir* (irreg.)

I am able to, I can, I may, etc.

je peux or puis [pø, pu]	nous pouvons [puvɔ̃]
tu peux [pø]	vous pouvez [puve]
il peut [pø]	ils peuvent [poev̑]

(a) In questions: *puis-je?* or *est-ce que je peux* (*puis*)?

EXERCISE XXVI

diner [dine], vb., *dine*

le dîner [dine], *dinner*

il faut [fo], pres. indic. of falloir,
it is necessary

le fruit [frui], *fruit*

l'intention [ɛtāsjɔ̃], f., *intention*

inviter [ɛvite], *invite*

le légume [legym], *vegetable*

le marché [marʃe], *market*

le morceau [mɔrso], *piece, bit*

l'œuf [œf], m., pl. œufs [ø], *egg*

offrir [ɔfrir], *offer*

l'omelette [omlet], f., *omelet*

orner [ɔrnel], *ornament, decorate*

réussir [reysiir], *succeed*

six [sis], *six*

tâcher [taʃe], *attempt, try*

venir [veniir], *come*

avoir l'intention de, *intend to; il faut acheter, one (we, you, they, etc.) must buy; il lui (nous, etc.) faut acheter, he (we, etc.) must buy*

A. Continue: 1. Je vais acheter de bons légumes, tu . . ., etc.
2. Je ne peux pas en trouver. 3. Je suis rentré(e) sans en acheter. 4. Puis-je trouver des fruits au marché? 5. J'ai réussi à en trouver de très bons. 6. Je tâche de faire une bonne omelette. 7. J'ai l'intention d'inviter des amis à dîner. 8. Je suis content(e) de les voir. 9. Je ne suis pas prêt(e) à partir. 10. Je les vois venir.

B. (*Madame X. et sa bonne*) 1. Nous avons invité des amis à dîner ce soir. 2. Nous allons en avoir six. 3. Je vais au marché et vous allez m'accompagner, Louise. — 4. Bien, madame, j'ai mon panier. 5. Je suis prête à partir. — 6. Pouvons-nous trouver maintenant de bons légumes au marché? — 7. Oh, oui, on peut en avoir (get) de très bons, je pense. — 8. J'ai aussi l'intention d'acheter des œufs pour faire une omelette. — 9. Les bons œufs sont souvent difficiles à trouver, mais on réussit quelquefois à en avoir. — 10. Il faut chercher aussi un bon morceau de viande. 11. Les bons morceaux ne sont pas toujours faciles à trouver. 12. Mais nous allons tâcher d'en avoir. — 13. Il faut acheter des fruits et aussi des fleurs pour orner la table. 14. Nous sommes contents de voir nos amis quand nous avons un bon dîner à leur offrir.

C. (*Oral.*) 1. Votre mère invite-t-elle des amis à dîner? 2. Combien d'amis va-t-elle avoir à table ce soir? 3. Qui va l'accompagner au marché? 4. Sont-elles prêtes à partir? 5. Sont-elles déjà parties? 6. Que cherchent-elles d'abord au marché? 7. Peut-on trouver de

EXERCISE XXVII

l'abeille [abeij], f., *bee*
 arracher [araʃe], *tear out (up)*
 attraper [atrapε], *catch, capture*
 chanter [ʃate], *sing*
 clair [kle:r], *clear, bright*
 commencer [kɔmɛsε], *begin*
 couler [kule], *run (of liquids)*
 l'eau [o], f., *water*
 hors de [ɔr də], prep., *out of*
 jamais [zame], *ever*
 le jour [zu:r], *day*
 ne . . . jamais [nø . . . zame],
never

le miel [mjεl], *honey*
 la mouche [muʃ], *fly*
 le nid [nil], *nest*
 la nuance [nɥɑ̃s], *shade (of colour)*
 l'ouvrage [uvra:ʒ], m., *work*
 pendant que [pādã kε], *while,*
whilst
 le poisson [pwasɔ], *fish*
 le ruisseau [ruisol], *brook, stream*
 sauter [sote], *leap, jump*
 sauvage [sova:ʒ], *wild*
 terminer [termine], *finish, complete*
 voler [vɔle], *fly*

être en fleur(s), *be in flower, blossom, bloom;* de branche en branche,
from branch to branch; de temps en temps, from time to time, now and
then, occasionally; il y avait, there was, there were.

A. Continue: 1. Je jouais et chantais tout le temps, tu, etc. 2. Je faisais souvent une promenade. 3. Est-ce que je ne finissais pas mes leçons? 4. J'étais chez moi alors. 5. J'étais arrivé avant lui. 6. Je vendais mes pommes aux marchands. 7. J'avais terminé mon ouvrage quand ils sont arrivés. 8. N'y avait-il pas de plumes dans ma boîte? 9. Qu'est-ce que je fais (faisais)?

B. 1. J'ai fait l'autre jour une promenade aux bois. 2. C'était un beau jour de printemps. 3. Les feuilles avaient commencé à pousser. 4. Elles étaient de toutes les nuances. 5. Il y avait même des arbres qui étaient en fleur(s). 6. Les écureuils sautaient de branche en branche. 7. Les oiseaux volaient d'arbre en arbre. 8. Ils chantaient pendant qu'ils faisaient leurs nids. 9. J'ai trouvé de jolies petites fleurs sauvages. 10. Je n'en ai pas cueilli. 11. Je n'arrache jamais les fleurs sauvages. 12. Il y avait aussi des abeilles qui cherchaient du miel de fleur en fleur. 13. L'eau du ruisseau coulait claire et abondante. 14. Les poissons y jouaient et sautaient hors de l'eau de temps en temps pour attraper les mouches.

C. (Oral exercise on B, above.)

(Be careful to distinguish between the imperfect and past indefinite in *D* and *E*.)

D. 1. What were you doing the other day? 2. I was taking a walk in the woods. 3. I spent some (*quelque*) time in the fields also. 4. It was a beautiful spring day. 5. I saw many little animals. 6. The squirrels were playing in the trees. 7. They were jumping from tree to tree. 8. The woods were full of wild flowers. 9. There were flowers of all (the) shades. 10. The birds were very merry. 11. They had begun to make their nests. 12. And they sang while they were building (*faire*) them. 13. The bees were flying from flower to flower. 14. The clear water was flowing in the streams. 15. Now and then a fish would jump out of the water. 16. It was trying to catch the flies.

E. 1. When I was at school I used to play a great deal. 2. I was very fond of skating. 3. We were speaking of you this morning. 4. I had finished my work when the postman came. 5. I had completed it already. 6. We used to sell all our apples to Mr. Liard. 7. He made large profits from them. 8. But we didn't sell him any apples this autumn. 9. We were at the door of the house when you were passing in the street. 10. You were playing while we were working. 11. The apples were ripening, but the pears were still green. 12. Robert never used to lose his books. 13. He would never come (*arriver*) late to school. 14. The teacher was not pleased with him. 15. Did you arrive before the others? 16. No, sir, they arrived before me.

LESSON XXVIII

68. Position of Pronoun Objects. — 1. Conjunctive personal pronoun objects (§ 23) and pronominal adverbs (namely *en* and *y*) come next before the verb, unless it be imperative affirmative (§ 72).

2. When two of these forms come together before the verb, their relative position is as follows:

<i>me</i> <i>te</i> <i>se</i> <i>nous</i> <i>vous</i>	<i>before</i>	<i>le</i> <i>la</i> <i>les</i>	<i>before</i>	<i>lui</i> <i>leur</i>	<i>before</i>	<i>y</i>
						<i>before en</i>

Il me (te, nous, vous) les donne.	<i>He gives them to me (you, us, etc.).</i>
Elle se les achète.	<i>She buys them for herself.</i>
Je ne les lui (leur) donne pas.	<i>I don't give them to him (them).</i>
Je l'y ai envoyé pour le lui dire.	<i>I sent him there to tell him it.</i>
Il y en avait au marché.	<i>There was (were) some at the market.</i>

- (a) Pronouns of the first and second persons (*me, te, nous, vous*) and *se* of the third person precede all others.
- (b) The direct object of the third person precedes the indirect (except *se*, as above).
- (c) *Y* and *en* come last, *y* preceding *en*.
- (d) *Ne* precedes all pronoun objects.

NOTE. — When the conjunctive direct object is *me, te, nous, vous, se*, the indirect object with *à* follows the verb, e.g. *Il me présente à vous, He introduces me to you; Il vous présente à lui, He introduces you to him.*

EXERCISE XXVIII

<i>l'article, m., article, thing</i>	<i>ordinaire, ordinary</i>
<i>autrefois, formerly</i>	<i>ou, or</i>
<i>le besoin, need, necessity</i>	<i>l'outil, m. tool</i>
<i>certain, certain</i>	<i>le patin, skate</i>
<i>constamment, constantly</i>	<i>quelconque, adj., some, any (what-ever)</i>
<i>diférent, different</i>	<i>raconter, relate, tell</i>
<i>emprunter, borrow (from, à)</i>	<i>la réception, reception</i>
<i>le fils, son</i>	<i>la vaisselle, dishes (collectively)</i>
<i>l'intelligence, f., intelligence, understanding</i>	<i>la vie, life, living</i>
<i>le lait, milk</i>	<i>vivre, live</i>
<i>mener, lead, take, bring (a / le / les)</i>	
<i>avoir besoin de, to have need of, need;</i>	<i>en bonne intelligence, on good terms.</i>

A. Continue: 1. Il me les donne, il te, etc. 2. Il ne me l'avait pas donné, . . . te . . . etc. 3. Ne me les a-t-il pas prêtés? ne te les . . . ? etc. 4. Je lui en ai prêté quelquefois, tu, etc. 5. J'y en ai cherché, tu, etc. 6. Je les leur ai empruntés, tu, etc. 7. Je ne peux pas la leur prêter, tu, etc. 8. Je vais lui en acheter, tu, etc.

B. Substitute pronouns for the expressions in italics: 1. On me raconte *l'histoire*. 2. Je prête *mes plumes* à *Louise*. 3. Les avez-vous rencontrés *dans la rue*? 4. J'ai apporté *la lettre* à *mon père*.

5. Pourquoi n'a-t-il pas donné de l'argent aux pauvres? 6. Je vais prêter mes livres aux élèves. 7. Je ne trouve pas de plumes dans cette boîte.

C. 1. Il faut vivre en bonne intelligence avec ses (*one's*) voisins. 2. Nous habitions autrefois à la campagne et nous prêtons constamment à nos voisins les différents articles de la vie ordinaire. 3. Ma mère avait souvent besoin d'un article quelconque et M^{me} Lebrun le lui prêtait. 4. Moi je prêtais à son fils mes patins ou mon traîneau. 5. Quand les filles de M^{me} Lebrun n'avaient pas un certain livre mes sœurs le leur prêtaient. 6. Quelquefois nous n'avions pas de vache pour nous donner du lait; alors nos voisins nous en donnaient. 7. Quand nous avions besoin d'outils pour travailler au jardin nous leur en empruntions. 8. Quand M^{me} Lebrun n'avait pas assez de vaisselle pour son jour de réception, ma mère lui en prêtait. 9. Quand il y avait du monde chez eux et quand il n'y en avait pas chez nous ils nous invitaient à danser. 10. Quand M. et M^{me} Lebrun désiraient aller à la ville mon père les y menait souvent.

D. (Oral.) 1. Qui étaient vos voisins à la campagne? 2. Étaient-
ce de bons voisins? 3. Votre mère leur prêtait-elle beaucoup
d'articles? 4. Leur en empruntait-elle souvent? 5. Est-ce que
Charles Lebrun vous prêtait jamais ses patins? 6. Lui prêtiez-vous
souvent votre traîneau? 7. Votre père empruntait-il des outils à
M. Lebrun? 8. Vos sœurs désirent-elles aller à la ville? 9. Qui
va les mener à la ville? 10. Pouvez-vous les accompagner à la
ville? etc.

E. 1. We had good neighbours in the country. 2. They used to lend us many articles. 3. And we often lent them some. 4. They used to borrow many things from us. 5. Can you lend me your skates? 6. I cannot lend them to you to-day. 7. Robert Lebrun has borrowed them from me. 8. I lent them to him this morning; he needed them. 9. My mother has lent some dishes to Mrs. Lebrun. 10. She often lends her some. 11. Does your father often borrow tools or nails from (à) Mr. Lebrun? 12. He borrows some from him sometimes. 13. When we wished to go to the city our neighbour took us there in his carriage.

F. 1. Charles often lends me books. 2. Does he lend you (thee) any? 3. He doesn't lend me any. 4. He cannot lend me any to-day. 5. He has lent them to George; he has lent them to him. 6. He has lent him some. 7. He cannot lend you any. 8. We met our friends at the church door. 9. We met them there. 10. Here are some pretty flowers; we are going to give her them. 11. Who brought us the letters? 12. The postman brought them to us. 13. He used to bring us some every day.

LESSON XXIX

69. Imperative Mood of *donner*, *finir*, *vendre*

Give, let us give, etc. *Finish, let us finish, etc.* *Sell, let us sell, etc.*

2d Sing. donne	finis	vends
1st Plur. donnons	finissons	vendons
2d Plur. donnez	finissez	vendez

(a) The second person singular of the first conjugation adds *s* before *y* or *en*, e.g. *donnes-en*.

70. Imperative of *avoir* and *être*

2d Sing. aie, have	sois, be
1st Plur. ayons, let us have	soyons, let us be
2d Plur. ayez, have	soyez, be

71. Imperative Negative

ne donne pas ne donnons pas ne donnez pas

72. Pronominal Objects. — 1. Conjunctive personal pronoun objects and pronominal adverbs follow the imperative affirmative, and are joined to it and to one another by hyphens:

Donnez-lui la plume.	<i>Give him the pen.</i>
Donnez-la-lui.	<i>Give it to him.</i>
Donnons-leur-en.	<i>Let us give them some (of it).</i>

2. But if the imperative be negative, the general rules of position (§ 68) hold good:

Ne me la donnez pas. *Do not give it to me.*

LESSON XXX

74. Future Indicative of *donner*, *finir*, *vendre*

<i>I shall give, etc.</i>	<i>I shall finish, etc.</i>	<i>I shall sell, etc.</i>
je donnerai	finirai	vendrai
tu donneras	finiras	vendras
il donnera	finira	vendra
nous donnerons	finirons	vendrons
vous donnerez	finirez	vendrez
ils donneront	finiront	vendront

75. Future Indicative of *avoir* and *être*

<i>I shall have, etc.</i>	<i>I shall be, etc.</i>
j'aurai	nous aurons
tu auras	vous aurez
il aura	ils auront
	je serai
	tu seras
	il sera
	nous serons
	vous serez
	ils seront

76. Use of the Future. — It is used in general as in English, but must also be employed when futurity is implied, e.g. after *quand* or *lorsque*, *when*, *aussitôt que*, *as soon as*:

Quand il arrivera je partirai. *When he comes I shall go.*

77. Future Indicative of *aller* (irreg.) and *faire* (irreg.)

<i>I shall go, etc.</i>	<i>I shall do, etc.</i>
j'irai	nous irons
tu iras	vous irez
il ira	ils iront
	je ferai
	tu feras
	il fera
	nous ferons
	vous ferez
	ils feront

78. Future Anterior. — It is formed by adding the past participle to the future of *avoir* or *être*:

j'aurai donné, *I shall have given, etc.*
 je serai arrivé(e), *I shall have arrived, etc.*

EXERCISE XXX

l'architecte, m., architect	la menuiserie, woodwork
le bain, bath	le menuisier, joiner, carpenter
bâtir, build	mince, thin
la bibliothèque, library	le mur, wall
la boiserie, wainscoting	neuf, new
la chambre, room	l'ouvrier, m., workman
choisir, choose, select	le parquet, floor
coucher, lie down, sleep	peindre, paint
la cuisine, kitchen	le peintre, painter
épais, thick	le plan, plan
espérer, hope	prochain, next
l'étage, m., story, flat, floor	que, conj., that
étroit, narrow	la semaine, week
large, wide, broad	surveiller, superintend
le maçon, mason	le terrain, (building) lot

la chambre à coucher, bedroom; la salle à manger, dining room; la salle de bains, bathroom; être bien, be comfortable; il y aura, there will be

A. Continue: 1. J'aurai une belle maison dans cette rue, tu, etc. 2. J'y serai bien. 3. J'habiterai cette maison au printemps. 4. Je ne perdrai pas de temps. 5. Je ne sortirai pas ce matin. 6. Il y aura dix pièces dans ma maison, . . . ta. 7. Je ferai de bons plans. 8. Je n'irai pas les voir.

B. 1. Nous aurons une maison neuve l'année prochaine. 2. Elle sera dans une belle rue. 3. Nous avons déjà choisi le terrain. 4. Nous aurons un bon architecte qui fera les plans. 5. Il surveillera les ouvriers. 6. Il y en aura beaucoup. 7. Les maçons bâtiront les murs. 8. Les murs seront très épais; mon père n'aime pas les murs minces. 9. Les menuisiers feront les portes, les fenêtres, les parquets et la boiserie. 10. Les peintres peindront la menuiserie. 11. La maison aura trois étages. 12. Elle aura dix pièces. 13. Il y aura le salon, la salle à manger, la cuisine, la bibliothèque, la salle de bains et plusieurs chambres à coucher. 14. Espérons que nous y serons bien.

C. (Oral.) 1. Aurez-vous bientôt une maison neuve? 2. Qui choisira le terrain? 3. Où sera votre maison? 4. Ferez-vous les plans vous-même? 5. Que fera l'architecte? 6. Combien d'étages

y aura-t-il? 7. Combien de pièces aurez-vous? 8. La salle à manger sera-t-elle à côté de la cuisine? 9. Que feront les menuisiers? 10. Qui bâtira les murs? 11. Quelles sont les différentes pièces d'une maison? etc.

D. 1. You will soon have a new house. 2. It will be in a fine street. 3. We shall soon choose the lot. 4. My father will select the plan next week. 5. There will be many workmen. 6. There will be masons, joiners and painters. 7. The masons will build the walls. 8. When the doors and windows are ready, the joiners will bring them. 9. The painters will paint them. 10. How many rooms will there be? 11. We shall have ten or eleven of them. 12. We shall have a kitchen, a dining room and a library. 13. There will also be several large bedrooms. 14. The cellar too will be very large. 15. Shall you be comfortable in your new house? 16. Let us hope so (*le*). 17. You will be very comfortable in it, I think.

E. 1. I shall go out when my sister is ready. 2. Let us go to town when we have (the) time (for it). 3. We shall go to the grocer's at once. 4. The architect will make the plans. 5. When he has made (*fut. ant.*) them, he will bring them to us. 6. We shall show them to you when he brings them. 7. When you go to the grocer's bring me some good tea. 8. I shall do so (*le*). 9. When you take a walk I shall go with you. 10. Shall we go to see you when you are in the country? 11. They will go to skate when they have finished. 12. When the house is ready we shall live in it. 13. The dining room will be wider than the parlour. 14. The bedrooms are narrower.

LESSON XXXI

79.

Demonstrative Pronouns

- ce, invar., *this, that, it, etc.*
- { ceci, invar., *this*
- { cela; invar., *that*
- { celui, m., celle, f., *this or that (one), the one, he (she)*
- { ceux, m. plur., celles, f. plur., *these, those, the ones*
- (a) Cela is sometimes contracted to ça [sa], colloquially.

acc.

80. Use of *ce*. — 1. For its use as anticipatory subject with *être*, see §§ 35, 54.

2. *Ce* = *this (that), it*, is also used as the real subject of *être*:
C'est facile (vrai, bien). *It (that) is easy (true, well).*

81. Use of *ceci*, *cela*. — *Ceci* = *this (the nearer)* and *cela* = *that (the more remote)* are used to denote something indicated but not named:

Cela est joli mais j'aime ceci. *That is pretty, but I like this.*

J'ai parlé de cela. *I spoke of that.*

~~If the object referred to has been named, or if the name is fully implied, celui-ci (-là) must be used.~~

32. Use of *celui*. — 1. The form *celui* (*celle*, etc.) = *this* or *that (one)*, *the one*, *he*, refers to persons or things: *Use ~~celui~~*.

Cet ami et celui qu'il cherche. *This friend and the one he seeks.*

Mes plumes et celles de Marie. *My pens and Mary's (those of M.).*

Celles que vous aimez. *The ones (e.g. flowers) you like.*

Celui qui cherche trouve. *He who seeks finds.*

2. The particles *-ci* and *-là* are added to *celui* (*celle*, etc.) to contrast the nearer with the more remote, of persons or things already mentioned:

Voici les deux chaînes; gardez celle-ci et donnez-moi celle-là. *Here are the two chains; keep this (one) and give me that (one).*

3. *Celui-ci* = *the latter* and *celui-là* = *the former*:

Cicéron et Virgile étaient célèbres; celui-ci était poète et celui-là orateur. *Cicero and Virgil were celebrated; the former was an orator and the latter a poet.*

(a) The order is reversed as compared with English.

EXERCISE XXXI

aller, fit, suit, become (of clothing) *le fond, bottom, back part, end* (of a room, etc.).
le carton, cardboard box

la cravate, necktie *merci, thank you, thanks*

demander, ask *prendre, take, get, catch*

essayer, try, try on *le rayon, shelf, department* (of a store), *counter*
la main, hand

monsieur désire? what do you wish (sir)? ce chapeau me va bien, this hat fits (suits, becomes) me; avoir à la main, to have (hold) in one's hand

A. Supply a suitable demonstrative pronoun: 1. Ces pommes-ci sont mûres; c... sont vertes. 2. Donnez-moi ceci; ne me donnez pas c.... 3. Ces gants-ci sont trop grands; c... sont trop petits. 4. Nos plumes et c... des autres élèves. 5. Cette poire-là est douce, mais c... est aigre. 6. C... qui nous salue est ma cousine. 7. C... est Robert qui arrive.

B. J'ai perdu ma canne et celle de mon frère. Je vais à un grand magasin pour en acheter deux. (*Un employé demande*) Monsieur désire? — Des cannes, s'il vous plaît. — Vous les trouverez là-bas au fond. (*J'y vais*) — Montrez-moi des cannes. — En voilà. Aimez-vous celles-ci ou celles-là? — Je prendrai deux de celles-ci. (*Je vais au rayon des gants*) — Je désire des gants. — De ceux qu'on vous a montrés hier? — Oui. — Des gants blancs, n'est-ce pas? Essayez ceux-ci. — Ils ne me vont pas. Montrez-moi ceux qui sont dans ce carton-là. — Ceux-ci vous vont bien. (*Je cherche une cravate*) — Avez-vous de jolies cravates bleues? — En voici. Prendrez-vous celle-ci ou celle-là? — Je prendrai celle que vous avez à la main. — Et avec ça? — Merci, c'est tout pour aujourd'hui.

C. (Oral.) 1. Quelles cannes avez-vous perdues? 2. Qui vous montre des cannes? 3. Où sont celles que vous cherchez? 4. Aimez-vous mieux celle-ci ou celle-là? 5. Prendrez-vous celle-ci? 6. Vous désirez des gants, n'est-ce pas? 7. Ceux-ci vous vont-ils bien? 8. Ceux-là sont-ils trop grands? 9. Désirez-vous une cravate blanche? 10. Celle qui est dans le carton vous plaît-elle? 11. Celle-ci est très jolie, n'est-ce pas? etc.

D. 1. I have lost my gloves and my brother's also. 2. The ones I lost were very fine. 3. The glove department is at the back of the store. 4. The clerk shows us some gloves. 5. He asks: "Do you wish these gloves or those?" 6. These don't fit me. 7. These are too large. 8. Those are not too small. 9. Give me the ones you have in your hand. 10. Have you tried on these? 11. You are going to try them on, are you not? 12. Do you like black gloves or white gloves? 13. We like the latter. 14. What pretty neckties! 15. Robert's is pretty too. 16. You are speaking of the one he bought last week, are you not? 17. The one he bought is blue; this one is white. 18. Those I bought yesterday have come.

E. 1. Which necktie do you wish? 2. Don't you like the one I have in my hand? 3. No, I like the one which I see in that box. 4. I shall take that one. 5. I shall not take this one. 6. Is that (*ce*) ~~aff~~? 7. Thanks, that is all. 8. Those who seek find. 9. I like this; I don't like that. 10. Did you speak of that to the teacher? 11. Gather up all this; leave all that on the table. 12. Our house is beside Mr. Leduc's. 13. Our house is very old; Mr. Leduc's is new. 14. Do you like to play with John or with Robert? 15. With the latter. 16. Give me two pounds of this tea and one pound of that. 17. Did you buy this picture yesterday? 18. No, it isn't this one; it is the one which you see near the window.

LESSON XXXII

83

The Possessive Pronouns

SINGULAR

le mien, m.
la mienne, f.
le tien, m.
la tienne, f.
le sien, m.
la sienne, f.
le nôtre, m.
la nôtre, f.
le vôtre, m.
la vôtre, f.
le leur, m.
la leur, f.

PLURAL

les miens, m.	} <i>mine</i>
les miennes, f.	
les tiens, m.	} <i>thine, yours</i>
les tiennes, f.	
les siens, m.	} <i>his, hers, its, one's</i>
les siennes, f.	
les nôtres, m., f., ours	
les vôtres, m., f., yours	
les leurs, m., f., theirs	

Contractions: de + le = du, de + les = des; à + le = au, à + les = aux, e.g. du mien, des siennes, au vôtre, aux leurs, etc.

84. **Agreement.** — They agree in gender and number with the noun denoting the object possessed:

Ses amis et les miens (i.e. amis). *His friends and mine.*

85. **Use of Possessive Pronouns.** — 1. With *être*, the preposition à + a disjunctive pronoun denotes mere ownership

(cf. Lesson XXIII), whereas the use of a possessive pronoun denotes distinction of ownership:

Cette plume est à moi. *This pen belongs to me (is mine).*

Cette plume est la mienne. *This pen is mine (not yours, etc.).*

2. Since **le sien** (**la sienne**, etc.) = *his, hers, its, one's*, the meaning is determined by the context:

J'ai mes livres; elle a les siens. *I have my books; she has hers.*

3. Observe the idioms:

Un de mes amis. *A friend of mine (one of my friends).*

Un Français de mes amis. *A Frenchman, a friend of mine.*

86. Present Indicative of *vouloir* (irreg.), 'will,'

'wish,' 'like,' etc.

I will, wish, desire, want (to), etc.

je veux	nous voulons
---------	--------------

tu veux	vous voulez
---------	-------------

il veut	ils veulent
---------	-------------

EXERCISE XXXII

la brosse, *brush*

propre, *clean*

les cheveux, *m.*, *hair*

la toilette, *toilet*

la dent, *tooth*

le savon, *soap*

eh bien! *well then*

la serviette, *towel, napkin*

enfin, *at last*

toucher à, *touch, meddle with*

la maman, *mamma*

vouloir, *irreg., will, wish, want*

oublier, *forget*

to, etc.

le peigne, *comb*

faire sa toilette, *make one's toilet, dress (intr. vb.); brosse à dents, tooth-brush*

A. Substitute possessive pronouns for the expressions in italics:

1. Voulez-vous voir *mes lettres*?
2. Veux-tu me prêter *tes livres*?
3. Je veux chercher *ma brosse*.
4. Je parle *de votre tableau*.
5. Je parlais *à vos sœurs*.
6. A-t-il fait *sa toilette*?
7. J'admire *leur maison*.
8. Marie a perdu *ses patins*.
9. Nous avons cueilli *nos pommes*.
10. Ils ont vendu *leurs pommes*.
11. Voici *mon chapeau*;
- voilà *ton chapeau*.
12. Elle veut étudier *son livre*.

B. (Deux frères font leur toilette) As-tu vu ma serviette? — Oui, la voilà. — Mais non, ce n'est pas la mienne, c'est la tienne. —

Oui, c'est vrai. Celle-ci est à moi et celle-là est à toi. — Et où est le savon? — Voici mon savon, voilà le tien. — Donne-moi un morceau du tien, s'il te plaît; le mien n'est pas bon. — Eh bien, je t'en donne. — Je ne trouve pas ma brosse à dents. — La voilà. — Mais non, c'est celle de papa. Et celle-là est à maman. Les leurs sont meilleures que les nôtres. Mais il ne faut pas y toucher. Enfin voici la mienne. — Maintenant ma toilette est faite. — Et tes cheveux? — C'est vrai. J'ai oublié cela, mais où est mon peigne? Veux-tu me prêter le tien? Je ne peux pas trouver le mien. — On ne prête pas ses articles de toilette. Ce n'est pas propre.

C. (Oral.) 1. Que voulez-vous faire? 2. Que vont faire les deux frères? 3. Cette serviette est-elle la mienne? 4. Est-elle à vous? 5. N'est-elle pas à moi? 6. Où est la mienne? 7. Quel peigne est celui-là? 8. De quel peigne parlez-vous? 9. Les brosses de papa sont-elles meilleures que les miennes? 10. Les nôtres sont-elles moins bonnes que les siennes? 11. Ce peigne-ci est-il le mien? 12. À qui est celui-là? 13. Votre toilette est-elle déjà faite? etc.

D. 1. We are dressing. 2. Have you found your towel? 3. I have not. 4. What towel have you in your hand? 5. Is it mine? 6. This one is not yours, it is mine. 7. Yours is larger, isn't it? 8. Have you my soap or your own (= yours)? 9. I haven't seen yours; I have my own. 10. Will you give me a piece of yours? 11. Papa's brushes are better than ours. 12. Yes, but don't touch his. 13. Lend me your comb, please; I can't find mine. 14. Look for yours; look for it everywhere. 15. Here it is, at last I have found it. 16. We are dressed (*see B, l. 9.*)

E. 1. This house is ours. 2. That one is our neighbour's. 3. His is larger than ours. 4. My uncle has his gloves and my aunt has hers. 5. Have you forgotten yours? 6. Here is your tooth-brush, but where is mine? 7. We speak of our lessons, he speaks of his. 8. Have you Mary's pens? 9. Here are hers. 10. The other pupils have lost theirs. 11. This necktie is mine. 12. Those are John's; he bought them yesterday. 13. Our lessons are longer than theirs. 14. Theirs are easier than ours. 15. Mrs. Dupont is a friend of ours. 16. I lend my friends money; do you lend yours any?

LESSON XXXIII

87.

Interrogative Pronouns

SINGULAR

PLURAL

qui? invar., *who, whom?*que? invar., *what?*quoi? invar., *what?*

lequel? m.

laquelle? f.

lesquels? m. } *which? which or*
lesquelles? f. } *what one(s)?*Contractions: *duquel, desquel(le)s, auxquel, auxquel(le)s*88. *Qui?* — 1. This form regularly denotes persons only:*Qui parle? Qui a-t-il vu?* *Who speaks? Whom did he see?**De qui (à qui) parle-t-il?* *Of (to) whom is he speaking?**Dites-moi de qui il parle.* *Tell me of whom he is speaking.*2. With *être, quel?* is often used for *qui?**Quelle est cette dame?* *Who is that lady (what lady is that)?*3. *Whose?* denoting ownership = à *qui?* otherwise de *qui?*:*À qui est cette maison?* *Whose house is this?**De qui êtes-vous (le) fils?* *Whose son are you?*89. *Que?* and *quoi?* — 1. *What?* as direct object or predicate of a verb = *que?* but only in direct questions:*Qu'avez-vous trouvé?* *What have you found?**Que sont-ils devenus?* *What has become of them?*2. *What?* as a subject is regularly *qu'est-ce qui?*:*Qu'est-ce qui fait ce bruit?* *What is making that noise?*3. *What?* after a preposition, or absolutely = *quoi?*:*De quoi parlez-vous?* *Of what are you speaking?**Il a répondu. — Quoi?* *He has answered. — What?*90. *Quel?* and *lequel?* — 1. Distinguish the adjective *quel?* = *which, what?* immediately preceding its noun (cf. § 50) from

the pronoun *lequel*? = *which (one)*? *what (one)*? used apart from a noun:

Quelle dame est arrivée?	<i>Which (what) lady has come?</i>
Laquelle des dames est arrivée?	<i>Which of the ladies has come?</i>
Auxquelles parle-t-il?	<i>To which (ones) is he speaking?</i>
Quels livres a-t-il?	<i>What (which) books has he?</i>
Je demande lesquels il cherche.	<i>I ask which (ones) he seeks.</i>

91. **Interrogative Locutions.** — Certain expressions formed with *est-ce + qui* or *que* are frequently used instead of the simpler interrogative forms, thus:

Qui est-ce qui parle?	for	Qui parle?
Qui est-ce que vous saluez?	"	Qui saluez-vous?
À qui est-ce que vous parlez?	"	À qui parlez-vous?
Qu'est-ce que cela montre?	"	Que montre cela?
Qu'est-ce que c'est?	"	Qu'est-ce?
Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela?	"	Qu'est-ce que cela?
De quoi est-ce qu'il parle?	"	De quoi parle-t-il?

(a) Observe the use of *que* to introduce the real subject: Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela? *What is that?* Qu'est-ce que c'est que la gloire? *What is glory?*

EXERCISE XXXIII

l'air, m., <i>air, atmosphere</i>	Marie de Médicis [medisis], <i>Marie</i>
ancien, old, <i>ancient, former</i>	le marronnier, <i>chestnut</i> [de' Medici]
anglais, <i>English</i>	la musique, <i>music</i>
le cours, <i>course of lectures, lecture</i>	le palais, <i>palace, large edifice</i>
coûter, <i>cost</i>	Paris, <i>Paris</i>
entendre, <i>hear</i>	la partie, <i>part, portion</i>
la France, <i>France</i>	la place, <i>place, seat</i>
Guignol, m., <i>Punch and Judy</i>	le sénat, <i>senate</i>
important, <i>important</i>	la Sorbonne, <i>Sorbonne</i>
le jardin, <i>garden(s), park</i>	le tambour, <i>drum</i>
loin, adv., <i>far, distant</i>	les Tuilleries, f., <i>Tuileries</i>
Luxembourg, m., <i>Luxembourg</i>	l'université, f., <i>university</i>

faire son cours, *deliver his lecture; chevaux de bois, merry-go-round; en plein air, in the open air; qu'est-ce que cela veut dire? what does that mean?*

A. (*Au jardin du Luxembourg*) Qu'est-ce que c'est que le Luxembourg? — C'est l'ancien ~~palais de~~ Marie de Médicis. C'est aujourd'hui le palais du Sénat de France. — Lequel est le plus beau, le jardin des Tuilleries ou le jardin du Luxembourg? — J'aime mieux celui-ci. — Qui avez-vous salué? — C'est un ~~professeur~~ de mes amis qui va faire son cours à la Sorbonne. — Qu'est-ce que c'est que la Sorbonne? — C'est une partie importante de l'Université de Paris. Elle n'est pas loin d'ici. — Quelle est la musique que nous entendons? — C'est la musique des chevaux de bois. — Et maintenant, qu'est-ce que c'est que ça? — Quoi? — Ce bruit qu'on entend là-bas. — Ça, c'est le tambour de Guignol. C'est le théâtre des enfants. C'est un théâtre en plein air. C'est le théâtre le moins cher de Paris. Les bonnes places coûtent deux sous.

B. (*Oral.*) 1. Auquel des jardins allez-vous? 2. Quel palais est celui-là? 3. Lequel de ces deux jardins aimez-vous le mieux? 4. Qui est-ce que vous avez salué? 5. Qui est-ce qui nous a salués? 6. Où va-t-il? 7. Qu'est-ce qu'il va faire? 8. De quelle université la Sorbonne fait-elle partie? 9. Quelle musique entendons-nous? 10. Qu'est-ce que veut dire en anglais "chevaux de bois"? 11. Qu'est-ce que c'est que Guignol? 12. Combien les places coûtent-elles? etc.

C. 1. What park is this? 2. What is the Luxembourg? 3. Whose palace was it formerly? 4. What beautiful trees! 5. What trees are these? 6. They are chestnuts. 7. Which is the more important of the two parks? 8. Who was (is) that gentleman who saluted us? 9. He is a professor of the Sorbonne. 10. He is going to deliver his lecture. 11. What sound is that? 12. It is music, isn't it? 13. What is that yonder? 14. It is (are) the merry-go-round. 15. What (how much) do the seats cost in the children's theatre? 16. You can have good seats in it for two sous. 17. Of which ancient palace are you speaking?

D. 1. What lady is that? 2. Whose children are those? 3. Whose daughter are you? 4. What are you speaking of? 5. What are you listening to? 6. What do I hear? 7. I hear Punch and Judy's drum. 8. What has fallen? 9. Whose garden is this? 10. For whom are you waiting? 11. For what are you waiting? 12. Which

seats cost the least? 13. Which of the children is your brother?
 14. Which of those ladies are your aunts? 15. Which part of the
 field do you wish to buy? 16. What books have you there? 17. To
 which of the dealers did your father sell his vegetables? 18. From
 which of your friends did you borrow the money? 19. What pic-
 tures do you want to buy? 20. Ask (a) the dealer which ones he
 wants to sell.

LESSON XXXIV

92. ~~et cetera~~ The Relative Pronouns

qui, invar., *who*, *which*, *that*; (after prep.) *whom*

que, invar., *whom*, *which*, *that*

dont, invar., *whose*, *of whom*, *of which*

où, invar., *to (in, at, etc.) which; where*

lequel, m. sing., *lesquels*, m. plur. } *who, whom, which, that*

laquelle, f. sing., *lesquelles*, f. plur. } *who, whom, which, that*

quoi, invar., *what, which*

Contractions: *duquel*, *desquel(le)s*, *auquel*, *auxquel(le)s*

(a) For agreement and rule regarding omission, see § 36.

93. *Qui*, *que*. — 1. For the general use of these forms, see § 36.

2. *Qui* = *whom* may stand after a preposition: *qui je parle*.

L'ami de (à) qui je parle. *The friend of (to) whom I speak.*

94. *Dont*. — 1. This form is much used with the force of *de* + a relative = *of or from whom (which), whose:*

Les amis dont je parle. *The friends of whom I speak.*

L'église dont je vois la tour. *The church whose tower I see.*

2. But *whose*, depending on a noun governed by a preposi-
 tion, must be rendered by *duquel*, etc., or *de qui*, placed after
 the governed noun:

La dame au fils de laquelle (or de *The lady to whose son I give lessons.*
qui) je donne des leçons.

95. *Lequel.*—1. In general, this form is rather sparingly used, except for emphasis, or to avoid ambiguity:

Le livre lequel (que) je te montre.	<i>The book which I show you.</i>
L'ami auquel (à qui) je parle.	<i>The friend to whom I speak.</i>
La lettre de laquelle (dont), etc.	<i>The letter of which, etc.</i>
Une édition de ce livre, laquelle on vend fort bon marché.	<i>An edition of this book, which (sc. edition) is sold very cheap.</i>

2. After a preposition, however, a *lequel* form should be used if the antecedent is an animal or thing:

Le chien auquel je donne l'os.	<i>The dog to which I give the bone.</i>
La salle dans laquelle il est.	<i>The room in which he is.</i>

96. *Où.*—The adverb *où*, *where*, has the value of *dans* (à, etc.) + a relative, to denote place or time:

La maison où (dans laquelle) je loge.	<i>The house in which (where) I lodge.</i>
Le siècle où nous vivons.	<i>The age in which we live.</i>
L'endroit d'où il vient.	<i>The place from which he comes.</i>

97. *Quoi.*—This form = *what*, *which*, without definite antecedent, stands after a preposition, rarely otherwise:

Voilà de quoi j'avais besoin.	<i>That is what I needed.</i>
-------------------------------	-------------------------------

98. 1. *What* meaning *that which* = *ce* + a relative:

Ce qui m'amuse.	<i>What (subj.) amuses me.</i>
Ce que je dis; ce dont je parle.	<i>What (obj.) I say; what I speak of.</i>

2. Similarly *which* summing up a sentence:

Il est pauvre, ce qui est triste.	<i>He is poor, which is sad.</i>
-----------------------------------	----------------------------------

3. Observe the recapitulatory use of *ce*:

Ce que je crains c'est sa colère.	<i>What I fear is his anger.</i>
(a) For indefinite relative pronouns, see Lesson LXXXVIII.	

99. Conjunction *que*.—*That* (conjunction) = *que*, is never omitted in French, as *that* often is in English:

Je crois que cela est vrai.	<i>I think (that) that is true.</i>
-----------------------------	-------------------------------------

EXERCISE XXXIV

<i>chasser, hunt</i>	<i>remarquable, remarkable</i>
<i>le cours d'eau, stream</i>	<i>rendre, render, make</i>
<i>fraîs, fresh, cool</i>	<i>la rivière, river</i>
<i>l'ombre, f., shade</i>	<i>la source, spring</i>
<i>par, for</i>	<i>traverser, cross, go (run, etc.)</i>
<i>la pêche, fishing</i>	<i>through</i>
<i>la perdrix, partridge</i>	<i>la truite, trout</i>
<i>la propriété, property, estate</i>	<i>venu, p. part. of venir, came</i>

aller à la pêche, go fishing; chasser la perdrix, hunt partridges

A. Supply suitable relative pronoun forms: 1. L'église . . . nous sommes entrés. 2. La table . . . il laisse les lettres. 3. L'élève . . . j'ai prêté ce livre. 4. Ce . . . nous avons besoin. 5. Les marchands . . . je vendais mes pommes. 6. Cet . . . nous a amusés. 7. L'oncle chez . . . je demeurais. 8. La lettre de mon ami . . . est arrivée ce matin. 9. La ville de . . . nous sommes venus. 10. Voilà ce . . . il demande. 11. La maison . . . on voit les fenêtres. 12. Nous aimons ceux . . . nous aiment.

B. 1. Aimez-vous la pêche? — 2. Oui, où voulez-vous aller à la pêche? — 3. Il y a une petite rivière près d'ici où on prend de bons poissons. 4. C'est la jolie petite rivière dont je vous ai déjà parlé. 5. C'est un cours d'eau qui traverse la propriété de M. Durand laquelle est remarquable par sa beauté. 6. M. Durand est le monsieur dont nous avons vu le fils hier. 7. C'est le monsieur dans les bois duquel nous avons chassé la perdrix. 8. C'est une rivière de laquelle l'eau est claire et fraîche. 9. C'est une eau de source, et ce qui la rend encore plus fraîche c'est qu'elle coule toujours à l'ombre. 10. Voilà ce qui fait que les truites y sont abondantes.

C. (Oral.) 1. Quel amusement aimez-vous le mieux? 2. Que voulez-vous faire ce matin? 3. Où est la rivière dont vous parliez hier? 4. De qui traverse-t-elle la propriété? 5. Qui est ce M. Durand dont vous parlez? 6. Est-ce le monsieur dans les bois duquel nous avons chassé la perdrix? 7. La rivière de laquelle vous parlez est-elle belle? 8. Qu'est-ce qui en rend l'eau bien fraîche? 9. Est-ce un cours d'eau où on trouve beaucoup de truites? etc.

Grande unité

D. 1. There is a small stream yonder which crosses our property. 2. It is the stream of which I have often spoken to you. 3. Mr. Durand's house which you saw this morning is near the river. 4. He is the gentleman whose daughter dined at our house yesterday. 5. We hunt partridges sometimes in his woods, where there are a great many of them. 6. Here is a little river which runs in the shade. 7. That is (*voilà* or *c'est*) what makes the water so cool. 8. It is a river in which one can always catch trout. 9. It is also a river which is remarkable for its beauty. 10. What makes it so beautiful (it) is the clear (and) cool water and the abundant shade. 11. It is there that we shall go fishing. 12. Very well, that is what we shall do.

E. 1. What I spoke of is true. 2. What amuses you? 3. This is what amuses me. 4. That is what the postman has brought. 5. John has studied well, which pleases (*plaît à*) his teacher. 6. The house in which we were living last year. 7. The park in which I am going to take a walk. 8. The bird to which I give the piece of sugar. 9. The letter of which I was speaking. 10. The friends to whom I have lent my books. 11. The books which I have lent them. 12. The lady whose daughter is at my mother's. 13. The neighbours with whose child we often play. 14. The spring from which this river flows is cool. 15. Have you any of the thin paper of which I was speaking?

LESSON XXXV

100. **Indefinite Adjectives and Pronouns.** — In the following sections are explained the uses of the commoner words of this class. For the use of *on*, see § 38; for the use of *tout*, see § 40.

101. ***Autre* and *autrui*.** — 1. The various senses of *other*, (*an-*) *other*, (*the*) *other*, *others* are regularly rendered by *autre*:

Une autre fois; d'autres arbres.

D'autres sont arrivé(e)s.

Les autres ne sont pas ici.

Another time; other trees.

Others have come.

The others are not here.

2. **L'un, l'autre** (as also the feminine and plural) are combined into various phrases:

Elles se flattent l'une l'autre.

They flatter each other.

Ils parlent les uns des autres.

They speak of one another.

Ils sont morts l'un et l'autre (or tous deux or tous les deux).

They are both dead.

3. Distinguish un autre from encore un:

Une autre plume.

Another (a different) pen.

Encore une plume.

Another (an additional) pen.

4. **Autrui** = *others, other people*, stands regularly after a preposition, and is somewhat rarely used:

Les biens d'autrui (or des autres). — *Other people's goods.*

102. **Quelqu'un.** — The singular = *somebody, some (any) one;* the plural = *some, some people, any, a few:*

Il y a quelqu'un(e) à la porte.

There is somebody at the door.

Voilà quelques-unes de vos amies.

There are some of your friends.

J'en ai quelques-uns (e.g. livres).

I have some (a few).

103. **Quelque chose** = *something, anything:*

Quelque chose est tombé.

Something has fallen.

J'ai vu quelque chose de beau.

I have seen something fine.

(a) This form is masculine, though *chose* as a noun is feminine.

104. **Negative Forms.** — 1. Personne, rien, aucun, nul, pas un, have negative force when the verb is preceded by ne, or when no verb is expressed.

2. Thus used, personne = *nobody, no one, not anybody*, and rien = *nothing, not anything:*

Personne n'est venu; je n'ai vu personne; ne parlez à personne.

Nobody has come; I saw nobody; don't speak to anybody.

Rien ne me fait peur; je n'ai rien vu.

Nothing frightens me; I have seen nothing (not anything).

Que dit-il? — Rien (de nouveau).

What does he say? — Nothing (new).

Personne ici! — Personne.

Nobody here! — Nobody.

(a) Observe that personne as a pronoun is masculine, while personne as a noun is feminine.

3. Similarly *aucun*, *nul*, *pas un* = *no, not any* (as adjectives), and *none, no one, not one* (as pronouns): ~~takes ne before verb~~

Aucun auteur ne dit cela.

No author says that.

A-t-il de l'espoir? — *Aucun.*

Has he any hope? — *None.*

Nulle espérance ne me reste.

No hope remains to me.

4. If, however, the context contains or implies a negative, *personne, rien, aucun* (not *nul* or *pas un*) are rendered in English by an affirmative:

Il n'a rien dit à personne.

He said nothing to anybody.

Il refuse de rien dire.

He refuses to say anything.

Sans aucune cause.

Without any cause.

Sans rien faire.

Without doing anything.

5. Observe the following summary of negative forms and note that in these, as well as in the indefinites used negatively, the negation is expressed by *ne* + a completing word:

<i>ne . . . pas, not</i>	<i>ne . . . jamais, never</i>	<i>ne . . . plus, no longer</i>
<i>ne . . . point, not</i>	<i>ne . . . guère, hardly</i>	<i>ne . . . que, only</i>

105. *Tel.* — *Such a = un tel* (observe the word-order):

Une telle maison.

Such a house.

EXERCISE XXXV

attacher, attach, tie

la loutre, otter

auparavant, before

mauvais, bad

la bête, animal, beast

méchant, wicked, cross

bon, kind (to = pour), gentle

parce que, because

le castor, beaver

la plante, plant

le chameau, camel

porter, bear, carry; wear

le dos, back

refuser, refuse

l'éléphant, m., elephant

le rhinocéros, rhinoceros

exister, exist, live

taquiner, tease

la fois, time (repeated)

jardin des plantes, Botanical (in Paris also Zoological) Gardens

A. *Continue:* 1. Je n'ai guère vu de bêtes sauvages, tu. 2. Je n'ai jamais rien vu de si bon. 3. Je lui donnais quelque chose de bon. 4. Je n'y ai vu personne. 5. Je n'y ai rien vu. 6. Est-ce que j'y ai jamais été? 7. Je ne lui ai rien donné de mauvais.

Note: 12

B. 1. Nous avons été hier au jardin des plantes avec nos cousins. 2. Il y a là beaucoup d'animaux aussi bien que beaucoup de plantes. 3. Nous n'y avions jamais été auparavant. 4. Et nous n'avions guère vu de bêtes sauvages. 5. Nous n'avons jamais rien vu de plus intéressant. 6. Il y avait plusieurs éléphants. 7. On en avait attaché quelques-uns, parce qu'ils étaient méchants. 8. D'autres étaient très bons et portaient des enfants sur leur dos. 9. Quand on leur donnait quelque chose de bon à manger ils étaient très contents. 10. Ils refusaient de rien manger de mauvais. 11. Mais personne ne les taquinait. 12. Tout le monde était bon pour eux. 13. L'année passée mes cousins y avaient vu un rhinocéros, mais il n'existe plus. 14. Un vieux chameau était mort aussi. 15. Il n'y en avait que deux petits. 16. Il n'y avait plus ni castors ni loutres. 17. Mais il y avait beaucoup d'autres animaux intéressants.

C. (Oral.) 1. Où avez-vous été hier? 2. Que veut dire "jardin des plantes"? 3. Y aviez-vous été auparavant? 4. Qu'avez-vous vu d'intéressant? 5. Pourquoi avait-on attaché quelques-uns des éléphants? 6. Pourquoi les éléphants étaient-ils contents? 7. Leur a-t-on donné quelque chose de mauvais? 8. Quelqu'un les taquinait-il? 9. Pourquoi n'avez-vous pas vu le rhinocéros? 10. Avez-vous vu beaucoup d'autres bêtes sauvages? etc.

D. 1. Do you never go to the Botanical Gardens? 2. I go there sometimes. 3. I have been there several times this summer. 4. Some of my cousins went with me. 5. It is something very interesting. 6. There is nothing more interesting for children. 7. Yesterday we saw some elephants that we hadn't seen before. 8. Some of these elephants had been tied [up] (use *on*), because they were cross. 9. Others were very gentle (*bon*), and were carrying children on their backs. 10. Let us give the beavers something good to eat. 11. Let us not give them anything bad. 12. They will refuse to eat anything bad. 13. Did anybody tease them? 14. Nobody. 15. The otters were no longer in existence. 16. We saw only two camels. 17. There were no others. 18. We didn't see any other animals.

E. 1. A certain author relates this story. 2. We have a few good friends, but not (*pas*) many. 3. The others have not come yet. 4. Somebody is knocking at the door; who is it? 5. It is Mr. Durand's son; he has brought you something. 6. I haven't seen anybody. 7. We have not spoken to anybody. 8. Nobody has spoken to us. 9. Has the postman brought me no letters? 10. Not one. 11. I have seen none (*aucun*) of our neighbours to-day. 12. Who told you such a story? 13. Has anybody ever caught trout in that stream? 14. Yes, I have caught some in it.

F. 1. Give me my other spectacles, because these are not good. 2. Others can do the same thing. 3. This pen is bad; give me another. 4. I have never liked (*de*) such amusements. 5. Nobody met us in the street. 6. There was nobody at home when I arrived. 7. We haven't done anything wrong (*mauvais*). 8. Do you wish anything? 9. Nothing, thank you. 10. No letter for me to-day! 11. None. 12. Nobody can paint (*de*) such pictures. 13. Such is the story he has told us. 14. Is your soap not as good as mine? 15. My brother's toothbrush is much better than my sister's.

LESSON XXXVI

106. Orthographical Peculiarities. — Verbs of the first conjugation in *-cer*, *-ger* and *-yer*, as also those with *e* or *é* in the syllable next before the infinitive ending, are conjugated like *donner*, but have certain peculiarities of orthography which may best be observed by referring to Appendix, *D*, where all these irregularities are shown.

(a) The models *avancer*, *manger*, *payer*, *mener*, *espérer*, *appeler*, *jeter*, *acheter*, should be studied before doing the following exercise.

107. Present Indicative of *dire* (irreg.), 'say,' 'tell'

I say, etc.

je dis
tu dis
il dit

nous disons
vous dites
ils disent

EXERCISE XXXVI

amener, bring, take	habilement, cleverly
appeler, call	jeter, throw (away)
avancer, advance, go on	lancer, throw, fling, toss
avidement, greedily	libre, free
les bonbons, m., sweetmeats, candy	le lion, lion
la carotte, carrot	le moment, moment, time
le chat, cat	l'ours, m., bear
comment, how?	payer, pay (for)
l'entrée, f., entrance, admission (fee)	ressembler à, resemble
la fosse, ditch, pit	le roi, king
le gardien, keeper	le rugissement, roar(ing)
habile, clever	le singe, monkey
	vers, towards

donner à manger à, to feed; fosse aux ours, bear pit; palais des singes,
monkey house

A. Continue: 1. Je ne paie (paye) rien, tu. 2. J'achète (achèterai) des bonbons. 3. J'avance (avançais) vers l'entrée. 4. Je jette (jetterai) du pain aux ours. 5. J'espère qu'il arrivera bientôt. 6. Je mange (mangeais) de la viande. 7. J'appelle (appellerai) les autres.

B. (*Au jardin des plantes—suite*) 1. Ce sont toujours nos cousins qui nous y amènent. 2. L'entrée est libre. 3. On ne paie rien. 4. À l'entrée on achète plusieurs choses pour donner aux animaux. 5. Puis nous avançons vers la fosse aux ours. 6. On leur jette du pain et des carottes. 7. Ils les attrapent très habilement. 8. On avance encore et on arrive au palais des singes. 9. Nous mangeons des bonbons et nous leur en lançons. 10. Ils les mangent très avidement. 11. Ensuite nous entrons chez les lions. 12. C'est au moment où on leur donne à manger. 13. Les gardiens leur jettent de gros morceaux de viande. 14. Ils les attrapent avec des rugissements. 15. Le lion ressemble beaucoup à un gros chat sauvage. 16. On l'appelle souvent le roi des animaux.

C. (*Oral.*) 1. Qui est-ce que vous amenez avec vous? 2. Combien paie-t-on à l'entrée? 3. Qu'est-ce que vous achetez à l'entrée? 4. Pourquoi achète-t-on ces choses? 5. Vers quelle partie du jardin avançons-nous? 6. Que ferons-nous des (with the) carottes? 7. L'ours est-il très habile? 8. Pourquoi dites-vous cela? 9. Qu'est-ce

que c'est que le palais des singes? 10. Que jetez-vous aux singes?
 11. Que faisaient les gardiens des lions? 12. Comment appelle-t-on
 le lion? etc.

D. 1. Here we are again (*encore une fois*) in the home of (*chez*)
 the animals. 2. Our cousins take us there. 3. They pay [for] the
 price of admission. 4. The entrance is not free to-day. 5. Every-
 body buys something to feed the animals. 6. I am buying candy for
 the monkeys. 7. I shall buy some bread and carrots for the bears.
 8. Let us go on now towards the bears. 9. Here is what they call
 the bear pit. 10. We shall throw the bears some carrots. 11. Let
 us toss some candy to the monkeys. 12. They catch it (*les*) cleverly
 and eat it greedily. 13. What were the lions doing when you saw
 them? 14. They were eating big pieces of meat which the keepers
 were throwing them. 15. What (how) do people call the lion?
 16. Do lions resemble cats? 17. I hope to see these interesting
 animals another day.

E. 1. We are beginning to speak French. 2. I was beginning my
 lessons when you came. 3. He will bring his brother. 4. Who is
 calling me? 5. John, call your (thy) brother. 6. Throw [away]
 that apple; it isn't ripe. 7. Very well, I shall throw it away. 8. Give
 me another (of them). 9. Let us go on now, we are losing our time.
 10. I was advancing towards the entrance of the park. 11. The
 children were eating candy. 12. Let us not eat this candy; I don't
 like it. 13. Let us go in; I shall pay [for] the seats. 14. How much
 do we pay (use *on*)? 15. I shall buy this picture because I like it
 (it pleases me). 16. The lions were eating the meat greedily.

LESSON XXXVII

108. Article with Place-Names. — 1. Names of continents,
 countries, provinces, and of most large islands near Europe,
 regularly take the definite article, and always so, as subject or
 direct object of a verb:

L'Asie est un grand continent.
 Ils habitent le Mexique.
 Nous parlons de la France.

Asia is a large continent.
They live in Mexico.
We are speaking of France.

a + def -

2. With such names **en** denotes *where, to where*, and the article is omitted; but if the name be plural, or be the masculine name of a country outside of Europe, **a** + the definite article is used:

- | | |
|------------------------------------|---|
| Il est en (va en) Europe. | <i>He is in (is going to) Europe.</i> |
| Il voyage en France (Portugal, m.) | <i>He travels in France (Portugal).</i> |
| Il est aux États-Unis. | <i>He is in the United States.</i> |
| Il est au (va au) Japon. | <i>He is in (goes to) Japan.</i> |

3. The article is usually omitted in adjectival phrases formed with **de**, unless the name of the country be plural or be that of a masculine country outside of Europe; and similarly for **de** denoting mere point of departure:

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| Les vins d'Italie; le roi d'Espagne. | <i>Italian wines; the king of Spain.</i> |
| Il revient d'Italie (de Portugal). | <i>He returns from Italy (Portugal).</i> |
| But: La faïence des Indes (du Japon). | <i>Indian (Japanese) porcelain.</i> |

Il est revenu du Canada. *He has returned from Canada.*

4. *To, at, in = à*, without article, before names of cities, towns, villages:

- | | |
|--------------------------|--|
| À Rome (Berlin, Sèvres). | <i>To, at or in Rome (Berlin, Sèvres).</i> |
|--------------------------|--|

5. Any place-name having a qualifying adjunct requires the definite article:

- | | |
|--------------------------|------------------------------|
| Dans l'Amérique du Nord. | <i>In North America.</i> |
| La Rome de ce siècle. | <i>Rome of this century.</i> |

(a) The definite article forms a part of some names of cities, e.g. *le Caire, Cairo, le Havre, Havre, la Nouvelle-Orléans, New Orleans, la Havane, Havana.*

6. Names of mountains always, and names of rivers regularly, have the definite article:

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Les Alpes; le Nil; le mont Blanc. | <i>The Alps; the Nile; Mt. Blanc.</i> |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|

109. Present Indicative of *partir* (irreg.), 'set out,' 'start,' 'leave,' 'go'

I set out, go, etc.

je pars	nous partons
tu pars	vous partez
il part	ils partent

EXERCISE XXXVII

l'Américain, ¹ m., <i>American</i>	la mer, <i>sea</i>
l'Anglais, ¹ m., <i>Englishman</i>	le Mississippi, <i>the Mississippi</i>
l'Angleterre, f., <i>England</i>	la montagne, <i>mountain</i>
le Canadien, ¹ <i>Canadian</i>	le nord, <i>north</i>
la capitale, <i>capital</i>	l'ouest, m., <i>west</i>
le fleuve, <i>river</i> (falling into the sea)	le pays, <i>country</i>
haut, <i>high</i>	le port, <i>port, wharf</i>
importer, <i>import</i>	le Rhône, <i>Rhone</i>
le lac, <i>lake</i>	le Saint-Laurent, <i>St. Lawrence</i>
les lainages, m., <i>woollen goods,</i> <i>woollens</i>	la Seine, <i>Seine</i>
la Loire, <i>Loire</i>	séparer, <i>separate</i>
Londres, <i>London</i>	situer, <i>situate</i>
Lyon, <i>Lyons</i>	la Tamise, <i>Thames</i>
la Manche, <i>English Channel</i>	le vin, <i>wine</i>

A. Continue: 1. Je suis en France, tu. 2. Je demeure aux États-Unis. 3. J'irai en Europe l'été prochain. 4. Je passerai quelques jours à Paris. 5. Je ne vais pas au Canada. 6. J'aime le thé du Japon. 7. J'habite l'Amérique du Nord. 8. Je pars du Havre.

B. 1. La France est un pays situé dans l'ouest de l'Europe. 2. Paris est la capitale de la France. 3. Quelques grands fleuves de la France sont la Seine, le Rhône et la Loire. 4. Paris est sur la Seine. 5. Lyon est sur le Rhône. 6. La plus haute montagne de la France c'est le mont Blanc. 7. Il n'y a pas de grands lacs en France. 8. On en trouve dans l'Amérique du Nord. 9. Les fleuves des États-Unis et du Canada sont très importants. 10. Le Saint-Laurent et le Mississippi sont plus grands que le Rhône et la Loire. 11. L'Angleterre n'est pas loin de la France. 12. Londres, sur la Tamise, en est la capitale. 13. La Manche sépare les deux pays. 14. Les Anglais vont souvent en France et les Français en Angleterre. 15. On trouve des Anglais à Paris et des Français à Londres. 16. Les Anglais importent les vins de France (*or français*); les Français importent les lainages d'Angleterre (*or anglais*). 17. Le Havre est un port de mer sur la Manche. 18. C'est du Havre qu'on part

¹ Adjectives of nationality used as proper nouns require a capital.

pour les États-Unis et le Canada. 19. Il y a beaucoup de Français aux États-Unis et au Canada. 20. Les Américains et les Canadiens vont souvent en France.

C. (Oral Exercise on B.)

D. Supply the prepositional form: 1. Nos parents demeurent . . . France, . . . Paris, . . . Europe, . . . États-Unis, . . . Canada, . . . Angleterre, . . . l'Amérique du Nord. 2. Je suis allé . . . Europe, . . . Londres, . . . Angleterre, . . . États-Unis, . . . la Nouvelle-Orléans, . . . Paris.

E. 1. Where is France? 2. France is in the west of Europe. 3. The Seine is one of the great rivers of France. 4. The Rhone is another of its great rivers. 5. Paris is on the former. 6. Lyons is on the latter. 7. Mt. Blanc is in France. 8. It is the highest mountain in Europe. 9. There are no large lakes in France. 10. Some of the largest lakes are in North America. 11. England is near France. 12. Have you ever been in London? 13. It is a seaport and the capital of England. 14. The English Channel separates France from England. 15. Englishmen cross the English Channel to go to France. 16. Frenchmen cross it to go to England. 17. They sometimes start from Havre.

F. 1. There are many Englishmen in Paris. 2. We (*on*) find also many Frenchmen in London. 3. Englishmen like French wines. 4. Frenchmen like English woollens. 5. Have you ever been in Havre? 6. People (*on*) start from Havre to go to the United States and Canada. 7. Canada and the United States are very large countries. 8. The rivers of North America are much longer than those of Europe. 9. The St. Lawrence is larger than the Seine. 10. Americans like to pass the winter in Europe. 11. They set out in autumn to pass the winter in England or in France. 12. There are many Frenchmen in the United States. 13. There are many Americans and Canadians in Paris. 14. Are you not going to Paris this winter? 15. Have you any of the thick paper I gave you?

Write —

LESSON XXXVIII

110. The Conditional of *donner*, *finir*, *vendre*

<i>I should give, etc.</i>	<i>I should finish, etc.</i>	<i>I should sell, etc.</i>
je donnerais	finirais	vendrais
tu donnerais	finirais	vendrais
il donnerait	finirait	vendrait
nous donnerions	finirions	vendrions
vous donneriez	finiriez	vendriez
ils donneraient	finiraient	vendraient

(a) In all verbs the conditional has the same stem as the future (cf. § 74); the conditional endings are the same as those of the imperfect indicative (cf. § 63).

111. The Conditional of *avoir* and *être*

I should have, etc.

j'aurais	nous aurions
tu aurais	vous auriez
il aurait	ils auraient

I should be, etc.

je serais	nous serions
tu serais	vous seriez
il serait	ils seraient

112. Conditional Anterior. — It is formed by adding the past participle to the above as auxiliaries (cf. § 44):

j'aurais vendu, etc., *I should have sold, etc.*
je serais arrivé(e), etc., *I should have arrived, etc.*

113. Conditional Sentences. — 1. The conditional is used to express what would happen (result) in case something else were to happen (condition):

S'il avait le temps (*condition*) il jouerait (*result*). If he had time, he would play.

(g) *sl* elides the *i* only before *il* or *ils*.

2. A *result* clause in the conditional (English *should* or *would*) regularly has the *if* clause in the imperfect indicative, whatever be the corresponding English form:

Si j'étudiais bien (*condition*), mon père serait content (*result*). *If I studied (if I were to study, were I to study, if I should study, should I study) well, my father would be glad.*

3. A *result* clause in the present, the imperative, or the future, requires the *if* clause to be in the present indicative, whatever be the corresponding English form:

Il joue s'il a le temps.	<i>He plays if he has time.</i>
Jouez si vous avez le temps.	<i>Play if you have time.</i>
S'il est ici demain, je lui parlerai.	<i>If he is (be, should be, should he be) here to-morrow, I shall (or will) speak to him.</i>

(a) Contrast the tense after *si* in the last example with § 76: Quand il arrivera, je partirai, but s'il arrive, je partirai.

4. The auxiliary is considered as the verb in compound tenses, and the above rules apply to it:

Si j'avais fini plus tôt, j'aurais fait une promenade. *If I had finished sooner, I should have taken a walk.*

5. The tense following *si* = *whether* (*if*), is not restricted as above:

Je demande s'il partira.	<i>I ask whether (if) he will go.</i>
J'ai demandé s'il partirait.	<i>I asked whether he would go.</i>

EXERCISE XXXVIII

la cascade, <i>cascade, waterfall</i>	monter, <i>go up, ascend, get into (carriage, etc.)</i>
le col, (<i>mountain</i>) pass	la saison, <i>season</i>
demain, <i>to-morrow</i>	le sapin, <i>fir, spruce</i>
descendre, <i>descend, go down</i>	la scierie, <i>sawmill</i>
l'état, m., <i>state, condition</i>	le sentier, <i>path(way)</i>
l'excursion, f., <i>excursion</i>	si, <i>if, whether</i>
la forêt, <i>forest</i>	la station, <i>station</i>
le glacier, <i>glacier</i>	tant, <i>so much, so many</i>
la gorge, <i>gorge, ravine</i>	le torrent, <i>torrent</i> .
jusqu'à, <i>as far as, to</i>	
la station d'été, <i>summer resort; je voudrais (bien), I should like to</i>	

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE OF *aller*, *pouvoir*, *vouloir*

j'allais	je pouvais	je voulais
tu allais, etc.	tu pouvais, etc.	tu voulais, etc.

FUTURE INDICATIVE OF *pouvoir*, *vouloir*

je pourrai	je voudrai
tu pourras, etc.	tu voudras, etc.

CONDITIONAL OF *aller*, *faire*, *pouvoir*, *vouloir*

j'irais	je ferais	je pourrais	je voudrais
tu irais, etc.	tu ferais, etc.	tu pourrais, etc.	tu voudrais, etc.

A. *Continue*: 1. Si j'ai le temps, je ferai une promenade, si tu . . . tu . . . 2. J'aurais fait une promenade si j'avais eu le temps, tu . . . si tu . . . 3. S'il était arrivé, je serais parti, . . . tu . . . 4. Je lui prêterais le livre si je l'avais, tu . . . si tu . . . 5. Je ne vendrais pas mes pommes à ce marchand, tu . . . tes . . . 6. J'irai au lac si je peux, tu . . . si tu . . . 7. Je voudrais y aller si je pouvais, tu . . . si tu . . . 8. Je pourrai y aller si je veux, tu . . . si tu . . .

B. 1. Nous sommes arrivés de bonne heure au village de Beau lieu. 2. C'est une jolie petite station d'été. 3. S'il n'y a pas trop de neige aux cols et aux bois, nous ferons bientôt des excursions. 4. Si les sentiers étaient assez bons, nous prendrions celui qui passe par la forêt de sapins. 5. Il nous mènerait jusqu'à la cascade. 6. Si nous pouvions, nous irions jusqu'au petit lac. 7. Nous voudrions bien le voir en cette saison. 8. Si nous étions arrivés plus tard, les sentiers auraient été en meilleur état. 9. Nous serions allés jusqu'au glacier. 10. Nous aurions vu le torrent qui en coule. 11. Et nous serions descendus dans la gorge où il passe. 12. Si nous voulions, nous pourrions monter demain jusqu'à la scierie.

C. (*Oral*.) 1. Qu'est-ce que c'est que le village de Beaulieu? 2. Que veut dire en anglais "station d'été"? 3. Qu'allez-vous faire si les sentiers sont en bon état? 4. Où irait-on s'il n'y avait pas tant de neige? 5. Si on prend ce sentier-ci où arrivera-t-on? 6. Et celui-là où nous mènerait-il? 7. Pourrait-on y aller ce matin? 8. Où voudriez-vous aller? 9. Êtes-vous monté jusqu'au glacier? 10. Qu'est-ce que vous auriez vu si vous y étiez monté? 11. Descendrez-vous dans la gorge si vous pouvez? 12. Pourrait-on monter aujourd'hui jusqu'à la scierie? etc.

D. Change the infinitives into the proper forms: 1. Si vous (*avoir*) ma plume donnez-la-moi. 2. Si vous voulez ce livre je vous le (*donner*). 3. Si je (*pouvoir*), j'irai patiner. 4. S'ils (*être arriver*) je serais déjà parti. 5. J'irais au marché si je (*pouvoir*). 6. Voudriez-vous y aller si vous (*pouvoir*)? 7. Nous jetterons ces pommes si elles ne (*être*) pas bonnes. 8. J'(*avoir acheter*) ce tableau s'il n'avait pas été si cher.

E. 1. Are you going to the summer resort near the village of Beaulieu? 2. Are you going there if you have time enough and money enough? 3. If we were at Beaulieu, we should make an excursion in the mountains. 4. If there were not so much snow, we should go as far as the spruce forest. 5. If this path led to the forest, I should take it. 6. Our friends would accompany us there. 7. I should go as far as the pass if I could. 8. Should you like to see the little lake at this season? 9. Yes, I should like to go there if the paths were in good condition. 10. They would be in better condition if there were less snow. 11. If you had gone as far as the glacier, you would have seen something very beautiful. 12. If we should be able, we shall go down into the gorge or to the waterfall. 13. Had we gone down there, we should have seen the torrent. 14. You can go up to the sawmill now if you like. 15. Ask (*à*) your friend if he will be here early to-morrow.

F. 1. If you wish to see the letter, here it is. 2. If he is here to-morrow, show it to him. 3. We shall wait if we can. 4. I should have waited for him had I had time. 5. We should have lent him some money if we had had any. 6. Had I not left my books at school, I should study this evening. 7. If I were to leave my books at school, my father would not be pleased at it (*en*). 8. Had he been there, I should have spoken to him of it. 9. Should he be there to-morrow, I shall speak to him. 10. I should be very glad if you went with me. 11. We should be glad if he were to arrive before us. 12. If you should go to the market, buy me some flowers, if you please. 13. If there are any flowers at the market, I shall buy you some. 14. When you find any, bring me some.

LESSON XXXIX

114. Impersonal Verbs. — 1. Such verbs are conjugated in the third person singular only, with the subject *il* = *it*:

Il faut (fallait, faudra). *It is (was, will be) necessary.*

--(a) *Il* is omitted in certain phrases, e.g. *N'importe* (= *il n'importe*), *It doesn't matter.*

2. Many verbs may be used both personally and impersonally, some having a special meaning as impersonals:

Nous arriverons de bonne heure. *We shall arrive early.*

Il arrive souvent que, etc. *It often happens that, etc.*

3. Conditions of the weather, etc., are denoted by impersonal verbs, and by *faire* used impersonally:

Il neige; il pleuvra. *It is snowing; it will rain.*

Il fait beau (temps). *It is fine (weather).*

Il fait chaud; il fait du vent. *It is hot; it is windy.*

(a) Distinguish from constructions with a personal subject, e.g. *Le temps est beau* (*froid*), *The weather is fine (cold)*.

4. For impersonal *il y a* (avait, etc.), see § 31; for *il faut* (fallait, etc.), see § 60, 1.

5. Observe *il y a* = *ago*:

Il est arrivé il y a une heure. *He arrived an hour ago.*

6. Further, an indirect object with *il faut* denotes (1) the person who *lacks, needs* (= *avoir besoin de*), or (2) the person concerned in the action expressed by an infinitive:

Il faut un chapeau à Jean. *John needs a hat.*

Il leur faudra cent francs. *They will need a hundred francs.*

Il lui faudra étudier davantage. *He will have to (must) study more.*

EXERCISE XXXIX

assez, rather, quite

geler, freeze

la boue, mud

malade, ill, sick

le cas, case

neiger, snow

le climat, climate

pleuvoir, irreg., rain

davantage, more, still more

sec, dry

dégeler, thaw

le soleil, sun

doux, soft, mild

le sport, sport

fort, adv., heavily, hard

superbe, superb, splendid

froid, cold

le temps, weather

quel temps fait-il? *what kind of weather is it?* il fait beau (*temps*), it is fine (*weather*); le temps est très beau, *the weather is very fine*; il fait du soleil (*du vent, de la boue*), it is sunny (*windy, muddy*); il pleut (*a plu, pleuvait, pleuvra, pleuvrait, etc.*), it is raining (*rained, was raining, will rain, would rain, etc.*)

A. (*Station d'hiver*) 1. Il a neigé il y a quelques jours. 2. Puis il a plu un peu. 3. Ensuite il a gelé assez fort. 4. Ce matin il gèle encore, mais il fait beau (*temps*). 5. Il fait du soleil et presque pas de (*hardly any*) vent. 6. Il fait un temps superbe. 7. Il y aura bientôt beaucoup d'amusements sur la montagne. 8. S'il neigeait et s'il gelait encore plus fort, il y en aurait davantage. 9. On est ici pour les sports d'hiver, et on ne serait pas content s'il faisait trop doux. 10. S'il faisait moins froid, il dégelerait. 11. Il y aurait de l'eau et de la boue partout. 12. En ce cas on ne pourrait pas patiner. 13. Ce qu'il faut dans les stations d'hiver c'est un air sec et froid. 14. Un tel climat est bon pour les malades et aussi pour ceux qui aiment les sports.

B. (*Oral.*) 1. Neige-t-il? 2. Neigeait-il hier? 3. Quand a-t-il neigé? 4. Qu'est-ce qu'il a fait ensuite? 5. Quel temps fait-il ce matin? 6. Le temps n'est-il pas beau pour la saison? 7. Faisait-il du vent hier? 8. Fera-t-il du soleil aujourd'hui? 9. Pourrions-nous sortir s'il neigeait? 10. Y aurait-il beaucoup d'amusements s'il gelait bien fort? 11. Pourquoi n'êtes-vous pas venu à la station d'hiver? 12. Seriez-vous content s'il faisait doux? 13. Qu'est-ce qui arriverait s'il faisait un temps plus doux? 14. Y aurait-il de la boue? 15. Ne pouvons-nous pas patiner quand il dégèle? 16. Quel temps nous faut-il dans les stations d'hiver? etc.

C. 1. We are here for the winter sports. 2. We arrived two days ago. 3. The weather is splendid. 4. Last week it snowed heavily. 5. Then it rained. 6. This morning it is freezing quite hard, but it is fine. 7. It is windy, but at the same time it is sunny. 8. There will be a great many people (*monde*) on the mountain today. 9. We should not be pleased if the weather were mild. 10. If it snowed still more, we should be better (*more*) pleased. 11. If it should rain, we shall have no ice. 12. Then it will be muddy. 13. There will be mud on all the paths. 14. Should we be able to

skate if it thawed? 15. To (*pour*) skate we must have good ice.
16. What we need (it) is a cold climate.

D. 1. What kind of weather will it be this evening? 2. Is it not going to rain? 3. It will not rain; it is too windy. 4. It would rain if it were not so (use *tant*) windy. 5. It was very cold yesterday. 6. It will be milder to-day. 7. In that case, we shall take a walk. 8. We can't go out when it is raining. 9. The weather is always bad at this season. 10. If it were fine to-day, we should be glad. 11. It has been raining, but it is dry at present. 12. If it freezes, we are going to skate. 13. It was mild yesterday, but now we have (a) cold weather. 14. It was muddy because it had rained. 15. We shall have to (use *faudra*) wait for him. 16. He hasn't come yet.

LESSON XL

115. Reflexive Verbs. — A reflexive verb is one whose subject is represented as acting on itself. Some verbs are always reflexive, but any transitive verb may be so used.

116. Present Indicative and Imperative of *se cacher*

I hide myself, etc.

je me cache	nous nous cachons
tu te caches	vous vous cachez
il (elle) se cache	ils (elles) se cachent

(a) These same pronoun forms (*me*, *te*, etc.) are used also as indirect objects, e.g. Je *me* rappelle cela, *I remember that* (lit. *recall that to myself*).

(b) Observe the imperative: *cache-toi*, *cachons-nous*, *cachez-vous*, and negatively: *ne te cache pas*, *ne nous cachons pas*, *ne vous cachez pas*.

117. Use of Reflexives. — 1. A French reflexive often renders an English non-reflexive (generally intransitive):

Il s'arrête; il s'écrie. *He stops; he exclaims.*

2. Or a reflexive + a preposition has the value of an English transitive verb:

Je m'approchais de la ville. *I was approaching the town.*
Vous souvenez-vous de cela? *Do you remember that?*

3. The reflexive often translates the English passive, especially when the agent is not specified:

Ce livre se publie à Paris.
Cela se dit partout.

This book is published in Paris.
That is said everywhere.

4. When the verb is plural, the meaning may be either reflexive or reciprocal, ambiguity being avoided, where necessary, by some modifying expression:

Nous nous flattions.
Ils se font mal l'un à l'autre.

We flatter ourselves (or each other).
They hurt one another.

5. Observe the use of the definite article along with an indirect reflexive object to denote possession, especially of parts of the body, clothing, etc.:

Je me lave les mains.

I am washing my hands.

EXERCISE XL

l'abri, m., shelter	l'endroit, m., place
s'amuser, enjoy oneself	excellent, excellent
s'approcher (de), approach, come near, go near	gêner, restrain, confine, etc.
la baie, bay	nager, swim
se baigner, bathe (intr.)	le pied, foot
balnéaire, bathing (as adj.)	la plage, beach
le bateau, boat	plonger, plunge, dive
le bord, border, shore	se promener, take a walk, etc.
le café-restaurant, restaurant	se rappeler, remember
le casino, casino	la route, way, road
le concert, concert	le trottoir, sidewalk, pavement
déranger, disturb	se trouver, find oneself, be
s'embarquer, go on board	la vapeur, steam

bains de mer, sea-bathing; station balnéaire, seaside resort; à l'abri de, sheltered from; se promener or faire une promenade à pied (à cheval, en voiture, en bateau, etc.), to take or go for a walk (ride, drive, sail, row, etc.); bateau à vapeur, steamer, steamboat; se donner la main, shake hands; comment vous appelez-vous? what is your name? comment vous portez-vous? how are you? je me porte bien, merci, I am well, thank you; ne vous dérangez pas, don't disturb yourself; ne vous gênez pas, make yourself at home

A. (*La station balnéaire*) 1. C'est une ville qui se trouve au bord de la mer. 2. On s'y amuse beaucoup. 3. On y trouve des bains de mer excellents. 4. La plage où on se baigne est très belle. 5. Tout (*quite*) près se trouve une jolie petite baie à l'abri des vents. 6. Là on peut se promener en bateau. 7. Il y a aussi un endroit où on peut nager et plonger. 8. Au port nous nous embarquons sur le bateau à vapeur pour faire des excursions. 9. Près de la plage il y a une route avec un trottoir où on se promène à pied, à cheval ou en voiture. 10. Le casino se trouve au bout du trottoir. 11. Des concerts s'y donnent tous les jours. 12. Les salons de lecture et le café-restaurant s'y trouvent aussi.

B. *Continue:* 1. Je me trouve très bien ici, tu. 2. Je m'amusais beaucoup. 3. Est-ce que je me baignerai aujourd'hui? te baigneras-tu? 4. Je ne m'embarquerai pas sur le bateau. 5. Je ne vais pas m'y embarquer. 6. Je me porte bien. 7. Je ne me rappelle pas cela. 8. *Give the imperative affirmative and negative of:* se promener, s'embarquer, se rappeler.

C. (*Oral.*) 1. Qu'est-ce que c'est qu'une station balnéaire? 2. Où se trouve la station dont vous parlez? 3. Espérez-vous vous y amuser beaucoup? 4. Où allez-vous vous baigner? 5. Aimez-vous à vous promener en bateau? 6. Où peut-on s'embarquer? 7. Voulez-vous vous embarquer à présent? 8. Où se promène-t-on à pied? 9. N'allez-vous pas vous promener à cheval ce matin? 10. Ne vous portez-vous pas bien? 11. Où se donnent les concerts? etc.

D. 1. We are going to an excellent seaside resort, 2. It is¹ on the seashore near a village. 3. It is¹ on a pretty little bay. 4. I shall enjoy myself very much there. 5. Don't you admire the beautiful beach? 6. We are going to bathe there this morning. 7. Do you like to go boating sometimes? 8. Let us go boating. 9. We can swim and dive here if we wish. 10. Let us go on board the steamer now. ~~11.~~ I shall take a walk first. 12. I am not very well. 13. If you wish to go for a ride, I will accompany you. 14. A concert will be given in the casino this evening. 15. The reading room was¹ formerly in the casino at the end of the road. 16. Shall you

¹ Use *se trouver*.

be in the reading room when we arrive there? 17. Will you take my chair? 18. Don't disturb yourself, I'll take this one.

~~118.~~ 1. Let us not hide (ourselves). 2. We shall not hide. 3. ~~We~~ salute each other when we meet (each other). 4. We always shook hands when we met (each other). 5. What is his name? 6. What is your name? 7. How are you to-day? 8. What is the name of that village to which the sidewalk leads? 9. It is called Belleroche. 10. Do you remember that story? 11. People are telling it at all the seaside resorts. 12. Don't go near the water. 13. Don't cut yourself (2d sing.). 14. I shall buy myself a fine house. 15. These two sisters love one another very much. 16. This is my chair; take it; make yourself at home.

LESSON XLI

118. The Passive Voice. — 1. The passive voice of a transitive verb is formed by adding its past participle to the auxiliary verb *être*, thus:

PRESENT INDICATIVE

<i>I am loved, etc.</i>	<i>I have been loved, etc.</i>
je suis aimé(e)	j'ai été aimé(e)
tu es aimé(e)	tu as été aimé(e)
il (elle) est aimé(e)	il (elle) a été aimé(e)
nous sommes aimé(e)s	nous avons été aimé(e)s
vous êtes aimé(e)s	vous avez été aimé(e)s
ils (elles) sont aimé(e)s	ils (elles) ont été aimé(e)s

(a) The past participle *été* is always invariable, but the participle of the passive verb agrees with the subject in gender and number, like an adjective (cf. § 14); for other tenses of the passive, see Appendix, C, 4.

2. After a passive, *by* = *par*, usually when a definite intention on the part of the agent is implied; otherwise by *de*:

Elle a été tuée par les voleurs.	<i>She was killed by the robbers.</i>
La dame était suivie de son fils.	<i>The lady was followed by her son.</i>
Ils seront aimés de tous.	<i>They will be loved by everybody.</i>

3. The English passive is frequently translated into French by using *on* (cf. § 38, 3) with an active verb, or by a reflexive con-

struction (cf. § 117, 3), unless the agent is specified (cf. 2, above), or unless the passive denotes merely a resultant condition:

On m'a trompé.

I have been deceived.

On a répondu à ma question.

My question has been answered.

Ce livre se publie à Paris.

This book is published in Paris.

But: Les salles sont fermées.

The halls are closed.

EXERCISE XLI

célèbre, *celebrated, famous*
 le château, *castle*
 la décoration, *decoration*
 s'éllever, *rise, stand*
 équestre, *equestrian*
 exécuter, *execute*
 fermer, *close, shut*
 généralement, *generally*
 l'intérieur, *m., interior*
 italien, *Italian*

Marc-Aurèle, *Marcus Aurelius*
 les meubles, *m., furniture*
 Napoléon, *Napoleon*
 ouvert, *p. part. of ouvrir, open*
 la reine, *queen*
 restaurer, *restore*
 la scène, *scene*
 la statue, *statue*
 la tapisserie, *tapestry*
 visiter, *visit*

de nos jours, *in our day(s), nowadays*

A. 1. Nous avons visité aujourd'hui un château célèbre. 2. Il a été bâti par un des rois de France et restauré par Napoléon. 3. La décoration a été exécutée par des peintres italiens et français. 4. La plus grande partie du château est ouverte au public. 5. Mais il y a des salles qui sont toujours fermées. 6. Une des cours s'appelle la cour du Cheval-Blanc. 7. Une statue équestre de Marc-Aurèle s'y élevait autrefois. 8. À l'intérieur se voient beaucoup de tableaux et de tapisseries. 9. Les scènes de ces tableaux sont quelquefois empruntées aux vies des rois et des reines. 10. On y voit aussi de beaux meubles. 11. Ils sont généralement plus beaux que ceux qui se font de nos jours.

B. (Oral.) 1. Qu'avez-vous fait ce matin? 2. Le public peut-il voir ce château? 3. Par qui ce château a-t-il été bâti? 4. Par qui a-t-il été restauré? 5. La grande salle est-elle fermée aujourd'hui? 6. Comment s'appelle cette cour-là? 7. Pourquoi s'appelle-t-elle comme cela? 8. Qu'est-ce qu'on voit à l'intérieur de cette salle? 9. Fait-on de beaux meubles de nos jours? 10. Sont-ils aussi beaux que ceux qui se faisaient autrefois? etc.

C. 1. The castles that we have visited are very famous. 2. We visited one yesterday. 3. By whom was it built? 4. By whom was it restored? 5. It was built by an ancient French king and restored by Napoleon. 6. Some of the halls are closed to the public. 7. They will be open next week. 8. The decoration of this castle is much admired. 9. By whom was it executed? 10. What is the name of this courtyard? 11. It is called the court of the White Horse. 12. Many tapestries are [to be] seen in the halls of the castle. 13. The scenes of the most part of the tapestries have been borrowed from the lives of the kings. 14. The furniture which is made in our days is not always beautiful.

D. 1. This castle was formerly inhabited by the kings of France. 2. It was built when there were kings and queens in France. 3. There are none now (*plus*). 4. The decoration was done by Italian painters. 5. Italian painters have always been famous. 6. Their pictures are to be seen (use *on*) in all the cities of Europe. 7. Such pictures are not [to be] found nowadays. 8. The most important halls of the castle are closed. 9. These halls are generally open to the public. 10. They are closed now because the walls are being restored. 11. They can be seen next week. 12. The beautiful statue no longer stands in the court. 13. Did you find the nails you lost? 14. Do you remember where you left the keys?

LESSON XLII

119. Reflexive Compound Tenses. — They are always formed with the auxiliary *être* + the past participle, thus:

PAST INDEFINITE

I have hidden myself, etc.

je me suis caché(e)	nous nous sommes caché(e)s
tu t'es caché(e)	vous vous êtes caché(e)s
il (elle) s'est caché(e)	ils (elles) se sont caché(e)s

(a) For other tenses and for *s'en aller*, see Appendix, C, 5.

LESSON: XLII

120. Agreement of Past Participle. — 1. In compound tenses the past participle agrees only with a preceding *direct object*, whether such object be the reflexive object or not:

Elle s'est excusée.

She excused herself.

Elle s'est acheté des gants.

She bought herself some gloves.

Les gants qu'il s'est achetés.

The gloves that he bought himself.

Elles se le sont rappelé.

They remembered it.

Elles s'en sont souvenues.

(a) The principle of agreement is the same as that of the past participle in tenses formed with *avoir* (cf. § 49).

2. If *me, te, nous, vous* refer to a feminine noun, the agreement will be feminine:

Vous vous êtes trompée, madame. *You were mistaken, madam.*

EXERCISE XLII

s'en aller, <i>go away</i>	s'habiller, <i>dress (oneself)</i>
s'arrêter, <i>stop</i>	se laver, <i>wash oneself</i>
le billet, <i>ticket, note</i>	se lever, <i>rise, get up</i>
le branle, <i>movement</i>	mettre, irreg., <i>put, place</i>
le café, <i>coffee, (first) breakfast</i>	mis, p. part. of <i>mettre</i>
se coucher, <i>lie down, go to bed, retire (to rest)</i>	le paquebot, <i>packet, steamer</i>
débarquer, <i>disembark, go on shore, land</i>	se précipiter, <i>rush</i>
se dépêcher, <i>make haste, hasten</i>	prendre, irreg. <i>take, get, buy</i>
s'écrier, <i>exclaim</i>	pris, p. part. of <i>prendre</i>
la figure, <i>figure, face</i>	réveiller, <i>waken (tr.)</i>
la gare, <i>station (railway), depot</i>	se réveiller, <i>waken (intr.)</i>
se mettre en branle, <i>begin to move, get started; de grand matin, very early (in the morning)</i>	se souvenir de, irreg., <i>remember</i>
	le train, <i>train</i>

PRESENT INDICATIVE OF *prendre, take; venir, come*

je prends	nous prenons	je viens	nous venons
tu prends	vous prenez	tu viens	vous venez
il prend	ils prennent	il vient	ils viennent

A. Continue: 1. Je me suis couché(e) de bonne heure, tu. 2. Je ne me suis levé(e) que très tard. 3. Si je m'étais habillé(e), si tu, etc. 4. Je ne me serais pas arrêté(e) pour cela. 5. Est-ce que je ne me suis pas vite habillé(e)? 6. Je voulais m'en aller de grand

matin. 7. Je m'en suis allé(e) avant lui. 8. Je m'en suis souvenu(e).

B. *Turn into the past indefinite:* 1. Elles s'y amusent beaucoup. 2. Ils se couchent toujours de bonne heure. 3. Ne vous couchez-vous pas de bonne heure? 4. Les gants qu'elle s'achète. 5. Elle ne s'achète pas de gants. 6. Vous en allez-vous? 7. Mon frère et ma sœur s'arrêtent. 8. Nous nous lavons les mains. 9. N'y vont-elles pas? 10. Ils se donnent la main.

C. 1. Mon frère et moi nous nous sommes couchés de bonne heure hier (au) soir. 2. Nous voulions nous en aller de bonne heure ce matin. 3. Si nous ne nous étions pas couchés de bonne heure, nous nous serions réveillés trop tard pour partir aujourd'hui. 4. Je me suis réveillé de grand matin. 5. J'ai réveillé mon frère. 6. Nous nous sommes levés tout de suite. 7. Nous nous sommes lavé la figure et les mains. 8. Nous nous sommes vite habillés. 9. Mon frère s'est écrié: "Dépêchons-nous." 10. Nous nous sommes précipités dans la salle à manger. 11. Nous prenons notre café et nous partons. 12. À la gare nous prenons nos billets et nous voilà dans le train. 13. Le train s'est mis en branle. 14. Il ne s'arrête qu'au port de mer. 15. Nous nous sommes embarqués sur le paquebot. 16. Dans quelques jours nous débarquerons en Amérique.

D. (*Oral.*) 1. Votre frère s'est-il déjà couché? 2. Vous êtes-vous couchés tard? 3. Pourquoi pas (*not*)? 4. Vos frères se sont-ils réveillés tard? 5. Qui vous a réveillés? 6. Vous êtes-vous levés tout de suite? 7. Êtes-vous déjà habillé? 8. Votre frère s'est-il déjà lavé les mains? 9. Pourquoi vous êtes-vous dépêchés? 10. Pourquoi êtes-vous allés dans la salle à manger? 11. Où avez-vous pris vos billets? 12. Où le train s'est-il arrêté? 13. Où vous êtes-vous embarqués? 14. Où avez-vous débarqué? etc.

E. 1. Have your brothers gone to bed yet (*déjà*)? 2. Yes, they wanted to rise early to-morrow. 3. Waken your brothers. 4. They woke [up] an hour ago. 5. They have risen. 6. They have dressed (*themselves*). 7. They are coming now. 8. Let us make haste. 9. We hastened. 10. They rushed into the dining room. 11. Their coffee was ready. 12. They took it at once. 13. They get their tickets at the station. 14. We are getting our tickets. 15. They

went on board (*monter*) at once. 16. The train has begun to move.
17. After some days they landed in America.

F. 1. The gloves that I have bought myself are too small. 2. All our friends are going away. 3. They have gone away. 4. We remember our friends. 5. We don't forget them. 6. My brothers are washing their hands. 7. They have washed their hands. 8. My sisters have dressed (themselves). 9. They (f.) rushed into the carriage. 10. They (f.) went on board the steamer. 11. The train is coming. 12. Has the train stopped? 13. It has not stopped yet. 14. We went on board the steamer. 15. Let us go on shore now.

LESSON XLIII

✓ 121.

Cardinal Numerals

1 un, une	[œ̃, yn]	21 vingt et un	[vɛ̃t e œ̃]
2 deux	[dø]	22 vingt-deux	[vɛ̃nd dø]
3 trois	[trwø]	30 trente	[trɔ̃t]
4 quatre	[katr̥]	31 trente et un	[trɔ̃t e œ̃]
5 cinq	[sɛ̃k]	40 quarante	[karɔ̃t]
6 six	[sis]	50 cinquante	[sɛ̃kɔ̃t]
7 sept	[set]	60 soixante	[swasɔ̃t]
8 huit	[ɥit]	70 soixante-dix	[swasɔ̃t dis]
9 neuf	[nœf]	71 soixante et onze	[swasɔ̃t e ɔ̃z]
10 dix	[dis]	80 quatre-vingts	[katr̥ vɛ̃]
11 onze	[ɔ̃z]	81 quatre-vingt-un	[katr̥ vɛ̃ œ̃]
12 douze	[du:z]	90 quatre-vingt-dix	[katr̥ vɛ̃ dis]
13 treize	[tre:z]	91 quatre-vingt-onze	[katr̥ vɛ̃ ɔ̃z]
14 quatorze	[katorz]	100 cent	[sɔ̃]
15 quinze	[kē:z]	101 cent un	[sɔ̃ œ̃]
16 seize	[se:z]	200 deux cents	[dø sɔ̃]
17 dix-sept	[dis set̥]	201 deux cent un	[dø sɔ̃ œ̃]
18 dix-huit	[diz ɥit̥]	1000 mille	[mil]
19 dix-neuf	[diz nœf]	1001 mille un	[mil œ̃]
20 vingt	[vɛ̃]	2000 deux mille	[dø mil]

NOUNS OF NUMBER: 1,000,000 = un million; 2,000,000 = deux millions;
1,000,000,000 = un milliard.

Et serves as a connective in 21, 31, 41, 51, 61, 71; otherwise, compounds under 100 take hyphens, whether standing alone or forming part of a larger number.

From 61 to 99 counting is by twenties.

Quatre-vingt and multiples of **cent** (200, etc.) require a plural -s, except (1) when followed by a *numeral* (not a noun of number), e.g. *deux cent quatre-vingt-six francs*; (2) in dates, e.g. *l'an quatre cent*; (3) as ordinals, e.g. *page trois cent*.

Cent = *a* (or *one*) *hundred*; **mille** = *a* (or *one*) *thousand*.

Million and **milliard** take -s, if plural, and require **de** before a noun: *deux millions de francs*.

NOTES ON PRONUNCIATION: 1. The final consonant of 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 17, 18, 19, is silent before initial consonant or h aspirate of a word multiplied by them, not elsewhere: '*Cinq livres*' [sɛ̃ liivr] but '*le cinq mai*' [lɛ sɛ̃k ma].

2. No elision or liaison occurs before *huit*, *onze*: *Le huit* [lɛ qit]; *les huit livres* [lɛ qi liivr]; *le onze* [lɛ ɔ̃z]; *les onze francs* [lɛ ɔ̃z frã].

3. The t is sounded in *vingt* in 21, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, becomes d in 22, is silent from 81 to 99, is silent in *cent un*, *deux cent un*, etc.

122. Multiplicatives. — *Once* = *une fois* (lit. *time*), *twice* = *deux fois*, *three times* = *trois fois*, etc.:

Deux fois deux font quatre.

Twice two are four.

Dix fois dix font cent.

Ten times ten make a hundred.

123. Money, Weights, Measures. — In France these are all according to the decimal system; observe the following:

{ *le franc* = about 20 cents, or 10 pence (English money).

le centime = $\frac{1}{100}$ franc (100 centimes = 1 fr.).

le gramme = about $\frac{1}{16}$ ounce avoirdupois (454 gr. = 1 lb.).

le kilogramme (1000 gr.) = about 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. ($\frac{1}{2}$ kg. = slightly over 1 lb.).

le mètre = 3 ft. 3 $\frac{3}{4}$ in. (about 40 inches).

le centimètre = $\frac{1}{100}$ metre (5 cm. = about 2 inches).

le kilomètre (1000 m.) = about $\frac{1}{2}$ mile.

le litre = about 1 $\frac{1}{4}$ pints (4 $\frac{1}{2}$ litres = about 1 imperial gallon).

(a) Popularly *un sou* is used for 5 centimes; *un kilo* for *un kilogramme*; *une livre* for $\frac{1}{2}$ *kilogramme* (*un demi-kilo*).

124. Article Distributively. — 1. The English *a*, *an*, used with a weight, measure or number, in referring to *price*, is rendered by the French definite article; elsewhere generally by *par*:

Deux francs la livre (*le mètre*). *Two francs a pound* (*a metre*).

Dix sous la douzaine (*la pièce*). *Ten cents a dozen* (*apiece*).

Trois francs par jour (*leçon*). *Three francs a day* (*a lesson*).

Cent kilomètres par or à l'heure. *A hundred kilometres an hour.*

2. The definite article is also used distributively with expressions of time:

Il vient le dimanche.

He comes on Sunday(s)

Le vapeur part tous les lundis.

The steamer starts every Monday.

Tous les mois.

Every month or once a month.

EXERCISE XLIII

les asperges, f., *asparagus*

l'étoffe, f., *stuff, material, cloth*

l'automobile, f., *automobile*

la femme de chambre, ~~chambre~~

la botte, *bunch*

se figurer, *imagine, fancy*

le chou, *cabbage*

les gages, m., *wages*

la comparaison, *comparison*

gagner, *gain, earn*

compter, *count*

le mois, *month*

la cuisinière, *cook*

la pomme de terre, *potato*

dépenser, *spend*

la robe, *dress*

la douzaine, *dozen*

le veau, *calf, veal*

économiser, *save*

je les ai payés cher, *I paid dear for them; figurez-vous! just imagine (fancy)!* (à) bon marché, *cheap or cheaply;* (à) meilleur marché, *cheaper*

A. 1. La vie est très chère à présent. 2. On vivait à meilleur marché il y a trente ans. 3. Maintenant on gagne plus et on dépense plus. 4. Regardez ce morceau de veau. 5. Je l'ai payé quatre francs vingt (centimes) (4 fr. 20) le kilo(-gramme). 6. Ces œufs m'ont coûté un franc soixante-quinze (centimes) la douzaine. 7. En comparaison les légumes se vendent bon marché. 8. J'ai payé les pommes de terre dix centimes (*or* deux sous) le demi-kilo (*or* la livre). 9. Les asperges coûtent maintenant trente centimes (*or* six sous) la botte. 10. Je paie les choux vingt-cinq centimes (*or* cinq sous) la pièce. 11. Et les gages des bonnes! 12. Je donne à ma cuisinière quatre-vingts francs et à ma femme de chambre soixante-dix francs par mois. 13. Elles pourraient (*could*) bien économiser de quatre à cinq cents francs par an. 14. Mais elles ne veulent plus porter de robes bon marché. 15. Elles paient cher tout ce qu'elles achètent. 16. Figurez-vous! Ma cuisinière porte une robe dont l'étoffe a coûté dix francs le mètre. 17. Tout va vite de nos jours. 18. C'est comme les automobiles qui vont (à) cinquante kilomètres à l'heure.

B. (Oral.) 1. Count in French from 1 to 10; from 10 to 20; from 20 to 35; from 60 to 70; from 70 to 80. 2. Read aloud in French: 40, 41, 42, 45, 50, 51, 53, 55, 60, 61, 64, 65, 70, 71, 75, 80, 81, 85, 86, 90, 91, 92, 95, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 112, 115, 119, 189, 200, 201, 225, 1000, 2002, 80,025, 2,000,990. 3. Recite the multiplication table (or parts of it), thus: Deux fois un font deux; deux fois deux font quatre, etc. 4. Combien font 2 fois 7; 8 fois 6? etc.

C. (Oral.) 1. Le veau est-il bon marché? 2. Combien avez-vous payé ce morceau-là? 3. Les œufs sont-ils chers? 4. Combien coûtent-ils à présent? 5. Combien paie-t-on le kilo de pommes de terre? 6. Peut-on en avoir à meilleur marché? 7. M. Liard a-t-il de belles asperges? 8. Combien coûtent-elles chez lui? 9. Combien est-ce qu'il vend ses choux? 10. Comptez jusqu'à vingt. Etc.

D. 1. Everything cost less (dear) thirty years ago. 2. People used to live cheaply formerly. 3. We used to buy veal [at] one franc seventy-five centimes a kilo. 4. Now it costs from four francs twenty centimes to four francs fifty. 5. Ten years ago eggs used to cost 85 centimes a dozen. 6. Now we pay (from) 1 franc 15 to 1 franc 75 for them. 7. Vegetables are (sold, reflex.) cheaper. 8. A half kilo of potatoes costs two or three sous. 9. One can buy cabbage(s) [at] 25 or 30 centimes apiece. 10. Our cook earns 85 francs a month. 11. That makes 1020 francs a year. 12. How much did the material for (de) your dress cost you? 13. I paid 5 francs 25 a metre for it. 14. You paid too dear for it. 15. Mr. Dupont's automobile goes 60 kilometres an hour.

E. Give in francs and centimes the equivalents of: 1. One cent; 5, 7, 10, 12, 15, 17, 20, 25, 35, 50, 75, 85, 90 cents. 2. One dollar, \$1.25, \$1.35, \$1.70, \$1.85, \$2.00, \$75.00, \$1500.00, \$400,000.00. 3. Give in dollars and cents in English the equivalents of: 1 fr., 0 fr. 85, 0 fr. 75, 1 fr. 25, 1 fr. 55, 65 fr., 55 fr. 15, 1000 fr., 2,000,000 fr.

F. 1. Living was not so dear formerly. 2. People spend twice as much (plus) now. 3. Here is a piece of veal which cost me 4 francs 80 a kilo. 4. There are 3 kilos of it, and I paid 14 francs 40 centimes. 5. Asparagus costs 35 centimes a bunch. 6. In France you buy potatoes by (à) the pound. 7. You pay 2 or 3 cents a pound for them when they are cheap. 8. They were dear

last winter, but they are cheaper now. 9. Wages too are much higher (*plus élevés*). 10. A good housemaid earns from 60 to 75 francs a month. 11. She can save 300 or 400 francs a year. 12. People earn a great deal and spend a great deal. 13. Our cook bought cloth for a dress the other day. 14. Just imagine! She paid 9 francs 80 a yard (*mètre*) for it. 15. The cloth was very heavy (= thick).

LESSON XLIV



125.

Ordinal Numerals

1st premier	[prɛ̃mje]	7th septième	[sɛ̃tjem]
2d { second	[søgʒ]	8th huitième	[ɥitjem]
deuxième [døzjem]		9th neuvième	[nœvjem]
3d troisième [trwɔzjem]		10th dixième	[dizjem]
4th quatrième [katriem]		11th onzième	[ɔzjem]
5th cinquième [sɛkjem]		21st vingt et unième [vɛ̃t e ynjem]	
6th sixième [sizjem]		22d vingt-deuxième [vɛ̃nd døzjem]	

(a) Except **premier** and **second**, they are formed by adding **-ième** to the last consonant of the corresponding cardinal, **cinq** adding **u**, and **f** of **neuf** becoming **v** before **-ième**.

(b) The use of **deuxième** for **second** generally implies a series of more than two, but it is always used in compounds.

126.

Fractions

$\frac{1}{2}$ { un demi	$\frac{1}{3}$	un cinquième
une moitié	$\frac{1}{4}$	un onzième
$\frac{1}{3}$ { un tiers	$\frac{1}{5}$	trois seizeèmes
un troisième	$\frac{1}{6}$	sept centièmes
$\frac{1}{4}$ { un quart	$\frac{1}{7}$	dix cent-unièmes
un quatrième	$\frac{1}{8}$	onze millièmes, etc.

Une demi-heure.

Half an hour.

Une heure et demie.

An hour and a half.

La moitié (les trois quarts) du temps.

Half (three quarters of) the time.

(a) For denominators above 4 ordinals only are used, but note the special forms in $\frac{1}{2}$, $\frac{1}{3}$, $\frac{1}{4}$; fractional expressions with **partie** (*part*) are also common: la troisième partie = $\frac{1}{3}$.

(b) **Demi** before a noun is invariable and joined to it by a hyphen, but elsewhere agrees.

(c) Note the use of the article in the various examples.

127. Numeral Adverbs. — They are formed from the ordinals by *-ment*, according to rule (cf. § 216):

premièrement, <i>first</i> , <i>firstly</i>	troisièmement, <i>thirdly</i>
secondement } <i>secondly</i>	etc. etc.
deuxièmement }	

128. Collectives. — Certain nouns are used with collective force:

Une trentaine d'élèves.

A pair of gloves.

Some thirty (about 30) pupils.

(a) Those ending in *-aine*, added to the last consonant of a cardinal, denote usually an approximate number: Une huitaine, dizaine (dix becomes *diz*), douzaine, quinzaine, vingtaine, centaine, etc. = *about* 8, 10, 12, 15, 20 (*a score*), 100; etc.; so also un millier = *about* 1000.

129. Year Dates. — The year in dates is expressed by a cardinal, as in English, but *mil* replaces *mille*:

L'an quatre cent.

The year four hundred.

En (or l'an) mil neuf cent onze.

} *In (the year) 1911.*

En dix-neuf cent onze.

(a) For the year 1000, A.D., and for dates other than those of the Christian era, *mille* is commonly used.

130. Numerical Titles. — 1. Titles of rulers are denoted by cardinal numerals, except *premier* = *first*:

Napoléon premier (trois).

Napoleon the First (Third).

(a) *The* in such titles is untranslated.

2. Other numerical titles are expressed as in English:

La sixième scène du second acte. *The sixth scene of the second act.*

Acte deux(-ième), scène six(-ième). *Act two (2d), scene six (6th).*

Tome troisième (trois). *Volume third (three).*

Au vingtième (XX^e) siècle. *In the 20th century.*

131. Dimensions. — The following are some typical expressions:

Cette salle est longue de 8 m.

This room is 8 metres long.

Elle a 8 m. de longueur (or de long)

It is 8 metres long by 5 metres wide.

sur 5 m. de largeur (or de large).

Elle est plus longue de 2 m.

It is longer by 2 metres.

(a) *By* = *sur* or *de* according to meaning; see examples.

EXERCISE XLIV

appris, p. part., learned
la Bible, Bible
 calculer, calculate
 carré, square
 le chapitre, chapter
 le cœur, heart
 la composition, composition
 la conquête, conquest
 contenu, p. part., contained
 la date, date
 le devoir, duty, exercise, lesson
 le dollar, dollar
 écrire, write
 égale, equal
 entourer, surround
 l'Évangile, m., gospel

Guillaume, William
 Luc, Luke
 le nombre, number
 le passage, passage
 la planche, board, plank
 le pouce, inch
 la prise, taking, capture
 le problème, problem
 la retraite, retreat
 le saint, saint
 selon, according to
 le siècle, century
 suivant, following
 le sujet, subject
 la surface, surface
 le verset, verse (e.g. Bible)

apprendre par cœur, learn by heart; à peu près, nearly, about

A. 1. Mon frère et moi nous faisons nos devoirs pour la semaine prochaine. 2. Nous sommes dans la bibliothèque de mon père, entourés de milliers de livres. 3. Premièrement nous apprendrons par cœur un passage de la Bible. 4. Ce passage se trouve dans le neuvième chapitre de l'Évangile selon saint Luc du onzième au dix-septième verset (*or* saint Luc, IX, 11-17; *read:* chapitre neuf, versets onze à dix-sept). 5. Deuxièmement, nous avons une composition à écrire sur un des sujets suivants: "La retraite des Dix-Mille," "La conquête de l'Angleterre en 1066 (*read:* mil soixante-six) par Guillaume I," "La prise de la Bastille en 1789" (*read:* dix-sept cent quatre-vingt-neuf). 6. Troisièmement, nous avons deux petits problèmes: (1) Calculer (cf. § 191) le nombre de mètres carrés contenus dans une surface longue de 6 m. 40 (*read:* six mètres quarante centimètres) et large de 4 m. 75; (2) Un centième de mètre s'appelle un centimètre et = (*read:* égale), à peu près, $\frac{1}{2}$ (*read:* deux cinquièmes) de pouce anglais. Combien de centimètres en 20 pouces?

B. (Oral.) 1. Qu'avez-vous fait ce matin? 2. Combien de livres y a-t-il dans la bibliothèque de votre père? 3. Qu'avez-vous appris par cœur? 4. Où se trouve ce passage? 5. Et ensuite qu'avez-

vous fait? 6. Quel est le premier sujet qu'on vous a donné? 7. Et le deuxième? 8. Et le troisième? 9. Combien de problèmes avez-vous faits? 10. Quel était le premier? 11. Et le second? etc.

C. 1. Have you done your lessons (*devoirs*)? 2. I have done some of them. 3. I learned a passage in (*de*) the Bible by heart. 4. It was (a) part of the 15th chapter of the gospel according to St. John, verses 1 to 9. 5. We had already learned the 14th chapter. 6. What subject have you chosen for your composition? 7. The life of Napoleon III. 8. Why didn't you choose the life of William I, or the retreat of the Ten Thousand? 9. Those subjects were too difficult. 10. The date of the taking of the Bastille is 1789. 11. Napoleon I was born in 1769 and died in 1821.

D. Read in French and write in full: 1. Les $\frac{1}{10}$ d'un franc; la $\frac{1}{2}$ d'un dollar; $\frac{1}{2}$ de $\frac{1}{10}$; les $\frac{3}{4}$ du temps. 2. L'an 485; en 1616; l'an 1000; l'Amérique a été découverte (*discovered*) en 1492; Guillaume III est mort en 1702 et Louis XIV en 1715. 3. Le 15^e (quinzième) verset du 20^e chapitre. 4. Aux XV^e, XVI^e, et XVII^e siècles. 5. Nous vivons au XX^e siècle.

E. 1. There are about 100 pupils in our school. 2. There are thousands of books in my father's library. 3. He bought 200 books last week. 4. John loses three quarters of his time. 5. This gentleman gives a third of his money to the poor. 6. Our cook saves half of her wages and spends the other half. 7. About thirty of our friends were at the station when the train arrived. 8. This room (*salle*) is 5 metres long by 4 metres wide. 9. That makes 20 square metres. 10. Edward (*Édouard*) VII, king of England, was born in 1841 and died in 1910. 11. Louis XIV was king of France in the XVII century. 12. This board is three centimetres thick. 13. We have a ladder four metres long.

LESSON XLV

132. Days of the Week.—They are as follows (all masculine);		
dimanche, <i>Sunday</i>	mercredi, <i>Wednesday</i>	vendredi, <i>Friday</i>
lundi, <i>Monday</i>	jeudi, <i>Thursday</i>	samedi, <i>Saturday</i>
mardi, <i>Tuesday</i>		

133. Months. — The names of the months (all masculine) may be conveniently learned from the following rhyme:

Trente jours ont septembre,
Avril, juin, novembre;
Trente et un ont mars et mai,
Août, octobre, puis juillet,
Et décembre et janvier;
De vingt-huit est février.

134. Date of Month. — 1. Cardinal numerals are employed to denote days of the month, except the first = **premier**:

Le premier (deux, dix) mai.	(On) the first (second, tenth) of May
Ils sont arrivés le six.	<i>They arrived on the 6th.</i>
Ils arrivent toujours le lundi.	<i>They always come on Monday(s).</i>

(a) *On* in such expressions remains untranslated.

✓ 2. Observe the following date idioms:

Quel jour du mois est-ce (sommes- *What day of the month is it to-day?*
nous) aujourd'hui?

C'est aujourd'hui le dix.	<i>To-day is the tenth.</i>
Ce sera demain le onze.	<i>To-morrow will be the eleventh.</i>
D'aujourd'hui en huit.	<i>A week from to-day (future).</i>
D'aujourd'hui en trois semaines.	<i>Three weeks from to-day.</i>
Il y a quinze jours.	<i>A fortnight (two weeks) ago.</i>
Lundi prochain; lundi dernier.	<i>Next Monday; last Monday.</i>

135. Age. — Observe the following expressions denoting age:

Quel âge avez-vous (a-t-elle)?	<i>How old are you (is she)?</i>
J'ai vingt ans.	<i>I am twenty (years old).</i>
Je suis âgée de vingt ans.	
Elle a dix ans et son frère en a huit.	<i>She is ten (years old) and her brother is eight.</i>
Elle est plus âgée de deux ans.	<i>She is older by two years.</i>
À l'âge de dix ans.	<i>At ten years of age.</i>

- (a) *An(s)* may not be omitted in specifying age.
(b) *By* = *de*, after a comparison.

136. Holidays. — The principal holidays (*jours de fête*) in France are: les dimanches, le jour de l'An (*New Year's Day*), le lundi de Pâques (*Easter Monday*), le lundi de la Pentecôte (*Whit Monday*), la Fête Nationale (14 juillet), la Toussaint (*All Saints' Day*), le jour de Noël (*Christmas Day*).

EXERCISE XLV

l'âge, m., *age*âgé, *old*l'Atlantique, m., *Atlantic*le bureau, *office*le collège, *college*, *school*le congé, *leave*, *holiday*considérable, *considerable*dernier, *last*devenir, *irreg.*, *become*durer, *last*fonder, *found*, *establish*se marier, *marry*, *get married*Marseille, *Marseilles*le navire, *vessel*, *ship*la place, *position*le règne, *reign*sortir, *irreg.*, *go out*, *leave*le succès, *success*la traversée, *crossing*, *passage*voyager, *travel*riche d'un million, *worth a million*

A. 1. Mon père est né à Lyon le lundi 8 mars 1825. 2. C'était sous (*in*) le règne de Charles X. 3. Quand il avait près de huit ans, en 1833, son père l'a envoyé au collège. 4. Il y a passé neuf ans. 5. Chaque semaine il avait deux jours de congé,— le jeudi et le dimanche. 6. Les autres jours il travaillait pendant dix heures. 7. Au sortir (*infin. as noun*) du collège il entre dans un bureau où il passe trois ans. 8. Un jour son père lui dit: "D'aujourd'hui en quinze tu partiras pour l'Amérique." 9. Il s'embarque à Marseille le mercredi 20 juin 1845. 10. Le navire a fait la traversée en six semaines. 11. Il arrive à la Nouvelle-Orléans au mois d'août. 12. En septembre il trouve une place dans un bureau. 13. Au bout de dix-huit mois il fonde un magasin à lui (*of his own*). 14. Il s'est marié en 1848. 15. Il a eu un succès considérable. 16. Il est devenu riche de deux millions et demi de francs. 17. Il a beaucoup voyagé. 18. Il a fait la traversée de l'Atlantique une trentaine de fois, la première fois en six semaines, la dernière fois en six jours. 19. Il est mort le vendredi 25 novembre 1910, à l'âge de 85 ans.

B. (Oral.) 1. En quelle année est né votre père? 2. En quel mois? 3. Quel jour du mois? 4. Sous le règne de quel roi? 5. Racontez-moi sa vie de collège. 6. Quand est-il parti pour l'Amérique? 7. Quel âge avait-il? 8. Combien de temps a duré la traversée? 9. Où a-t-il débarqué? 10. Qu'a-t-il fait ensuite? 11. Quand s'est-il marié? 12. Combien de fois a-t-il traversé l'Atlantique? 13. Quand est-il mort? 14. De combien était-il riche? etc.

C. (*Oral.*) *Read the following aloud in French:* 1. Paris, le 2 février, le 15 janvier, le 6 avril, le 14 juillet, le 21 juin, le 25 mai, le 4 mars, le 17 octobre, le 25 décembre, le 8 novembre, le 5 août. 2. C'est aujourd'hui dimanche, ce sera demain lundi; c'est aujourd'hui lundi, ce sera demain . . . (*throughout the week*). 3. *Repeat the rhyme in § 133.*

~~D.~~ 1. I was born on the 15th of May, 1873. 2. I began to go to school at the age of eight. 3. My brother, who was older than I by two years, went with me. 4. We had a holiday every Saturday. 5. [On] the other days we worked 6 or 7 hours. 6. When I was 17 my father found me a position in an office. 7. When I was 21 my brother and I set out for America. 8. The vessel left Havre on the 1st of August, 1894. 9. We arrived in New York in a week. 10. We found English very difficult. 11. But after a few months we spoke (*impf.*) it very well. 12. In the month of December we established a small store. 13. We have had considerable success, and we have become rich. 14. My brother has married, and has a house of his own. 15. He travels a good deal. 16. He has crossed the Atlantic a score of times.

✓ E. 1. There are 12 months in a year (*année*). 2. The first is called January, the second February, etc. 3. The month of January has 31 days, the month of February has 28 days, etc. 4. The first day of the week is called Sunday, the second Monday, etc. 5. A year has 365 days, but a leap-year (*année bissextile*) has 366 days. 6. What day of the month is it to-day? 7. To-day is the 15th, to-morrow will be the 16th. 8. Last Saturday was the 17th. 9. Next Saturday will be the 24th, will it not? 10. Christmas day comes (falls) [on] the 25th of December, and New Year's day on the 1st of January. 11. It will come on a Sunday this year. 12. We shall go to see our relations a week from to-day. 13. We shall spend a week with them. 14. A fortnight ago my aunt fell ill. 15. She is more than 75 years old.

LESSON XLVI

137. Time of Day. — Observe the following expressions:

Quelle heure est-il?	<i>What time (o'clock) is it?</i>
Il est une heure.	<i>It is one o'clock.</i>
Il est deux heures et demie.	<i>It is half past two.</i>
Trois heures (et) un quart.	<i>A quarter past three.</i>
Trois heures et quart.	
Six heures moins un (or le) quart.	<i>A quarter to six.</i>
Trois heures trois quarts.	<i>A quarter to four.</i>
Trois heures dix (minutes).	<i>Ten minutes past three.</i>
Six heures moins cinq (minutes).	<i>Five minutes to six.</i>
Six heures quinze.	<i>Six fifteen.</i>
Il était midi et demi.	<i>It was half past twelve (noon).</i>
Il est minuit (et) un quart.	<i>It is a quarter past twelve (night).</i>
À huit heures du soir.	<i>At eight o'clock in the evening.</i>
À quelle heure?	<i>At what o'clock?</i>
À dix heures précises.	<i>At ten o'clock precisely (exactly).</i>
Vers (les) deux heures.	<i>About two o'clock.</i>

- (a) Do not omit **heure(s)**.
- (b) **Et** is essential only at the half hour.
- (c) **Minutes** is usually omitted.
- (d) Twelve o'clock is never **douze heures**.

EXERCISE XLVI

avancer, <i>be too fast</i>	la messe, <i>mass</i>
le déjeuner, <i>breakfast, lunch</i>	la minute, <i>minute</i>
l'emplatte, <i>f., purchase</i>	la montre, <i>watch</i>
la journée, <i>day</i>	préparer, <i>prepare</i>
le mari, <i>husband</i>	retarder, <i>be too slow</i>
la ménagère, <i>housewife</i>	la tasse, <i>cup</i>

je l'ai vu le premier (*la première*), *I saw it first or I was the first to see it*; se mettre à table, *sit down (to dinner, etc.)*; faire des emplettes, *make purchases, go shopping*

PRESENT INDICATIVE OF **mettre, sortir**

je mets	nous mettons	je sors	nous sortons
tu mets	vous mettez	tu sors	vous sortez
il met	ils mettent	il sort	ils sortent

A. (*La journée de la bonne ménagère*) 1. Je me suis levée à six heures moins le quart. 2. J'ai réveillé mes bonnes à six heures dix; je me lève toujours la première. 3. Je sors à six heures un quart pour aller à la messe de six heures et demie. 4. Je suis sortie de l'église à sept heures vingt. 5. J'arrive au marché à huit heures moins vingt. 6. Je rentre chez moi à huit heures précises. 7. La bonne, qui était sortie pour faire des emplettes, arrive dix minutes plus tard. 8. Je prends mon café un quart d'heure après. 9. À dix heures et demie nous commençons à préparer le déjeuner. 10. Mon mari arrive de la campagne par le train de onze heures trente-cinq. 11. Nous nous mettons à table à midi précis. 12. Mes filles rentrent de leur promenade vers quatre heures. 13. Nous prenons une tasse de thé à cinq heures. 14. Nous dînons à six heures trois quarts. 15. Nous allons au concert à huit heures et quart. 16. Nous rentrons à onze heures moins un quart. 17. Nous nous couchons une demi-heure plus tard.

B. (*Oral exercise on A.*)

C. (*Oral.*) Read A aloud, substituting in each case a time five minutes later, except in sentence 12.

D. Write out in words, in two ways where possible, e.g.: Trois heures et demie or trois heures trente; midi (minuit) un quart or midi (minuit) quinze.

- | | | | |
|-------------|-------------|---------------|--------------|
| 1. 1 h. 30. | 4. 2 h. 25. | 7. minuit 30. | 10. 5 h. 35. |
| 2. midi 20. | 5. 4 h. 50. | 8. 1 h. 5. | 11. 6 h. 48. |
| 3. 1 h. 55. | 6. 9 h. 3. | 9. 11 h. 45. | 12. 5 h. 15. |

E. Write out the time in words, at intervals of five minutes, from 11 o'clock A.M. to half past twelve (noon).

F. 1. The good housewife rose at 6 o'clock precisely; she is always the first to rise. 2. The servant's day began at a quarter to seven. 3. What time is it by (à) your watch? 4. It is exactly noon. 5. Your watch is too slow by (de) two minutes. 6. Yours is too fast by a minute and a half. 7. Mine is right (à l'heure). 8. The concert begins at 8.25. 9. We shall be home, I hope, before 10.30. 10. My mother has gone to the seven o'clock mass. 11. Then she'll go shopping. 12. The coffee will be ready in (dans) a quarter

of an hour. 13. Give me a cup of coffee, please. 14. My husband is in the country; he will arrive by the 10.12 train. 15. The cook is preparing the lunch. 16. The lunch is ready; we sit down. 17. At what time do you dine?

LESSON XLVII

138. Present and Perfect Participle

<i>Giving</i>	<i>Finishing</i>	<i>Selling</i>
PRES. donnant	finissant	vendant
<i>Having</i>	<i>Being</i>	
ayant	étant	

PERF. ayant donné (fini, vendu, eu, été, etc.), *having given*, etc.
étant arrivé(e), *having arrived*.

(a) For verbs in -cer, -ger, see Appendix, D.

139. Use of Present Participle. — 1. When used as an adjective it agrees like an adjective:

Une scène charmante.	<i>A charming scene.</i>
Une soirée dansante.	<i>A dancing party.</i>

2. With verbal force it is invariable:

Pleurant elle continue son récit.	<i>Weeping she continues her story.</i>
Une boîte contenant de l'argent.	<i>A box containing money.</i>
Généralement parlant.	<i>Generally speaking.</i>

3. After *en* it is used as in English, *en* = *in*, *on*, *by*, *while*, *when*, etc., and is invariable:

(En) disant ceci elle est sortie.	<i>(While) saying this she went out.</i>
En rentrant j'ai trouvé la lettre.	<i>On returning I found the letter.</i>
En lisant on apprend à lire.	<i>By reading one learns to read.</i>

(a) Thus used, the participle regularly refers to the subject, but: L'appétit vient en mangeant, lit. *One's appetite comes while eating*, i.e. *Desire comes with success*, etc.

140. Perfect Participle. — The forms *ayant*, *étant* are invariable, but the past participle agrees like an adjective:

Étant arrivés de bonne heure, nous *Having arrived early, we rested a little.*
nous sommes reposés un peu.

(a) Étant is often omitted, and the past participle becomes appositive or absolute: *Arrivés de bonne heure*, etc., *Having arrived (or arriving) early*, etc.; *L'honneur perdu*, que me reste-t-il? *Honour (being) lost, what remains to me?*

141. English *-ing*.—1. After a preposition (except *en*, cf. § 139), an *-ing* form is regularly translated by an infinitive:

Il parle de partir.	<i>He speaks of going.</i>
Sans dire un seul mot.	<i>Without saying a single word.</i>
Après avoir diné.	<i>After dining (or having dined).</i>
Jean a été puni pour avoir perdu ses livres.	<i>John has been punished for losing (having lost) his books.</i>

(a) The perfect infinitive is obligatory after *après* and after other prepositions when *having* is, or may be, expressed in English.

2. An *-ing* form as subject or object of a verb is rendered by an infinitive, a noun or a clause:

Voir c'est croire.	<i>Seeing is believing.</i>
J'aime à pêcher (or la pêche).	<i>I like fishing.</i>
Il est facile de parler.	<i>Talking is easy.</i>

3. After verbs of *seeing*, *hearing*, etc., the *-ing* form is commonly translated by a relative clause or an infinitive, sometimes by a participle:

Je les vois venir (or qui viennent, or venant).	<i>I see them coming.</i>
Je l'entendis parler (or qui parlait).	<i>I heard him speaking.</i>

EXERCISE XLVII

l'appétit, m., <i>appetite</i>	la fin, <i>end</i>
assis, p. part. of <i>asseoir</i> , <i>seated</i>	fumer, <i>smoke</i>
le bonheur, <i>happiness</i>	le goût, <i>taste</i> , <i>liking</i>
causer, <i>chat</i>	jeune, <i>young</i>
cependant, <i>however</i>	lire, irreg., <i>read</i>
croindre, irreg., <i>fear</i>	la mort, <i>death</i>
déréglé, <i>irregular</i>	la pipe, <i>pipe</i>
dire, irreg., <i>say</i> , <i>tell</i>	le plaisir, <i>pleasure</i>
l'ennui, m., <i>tedium</i> , <i>sorrow</i>	le proverbe, <i>proverb</i>
s'ennuyer, <i>be bored</i> , <i>be sad</i> , <i>be lonesome</i> , etc.	répondre, <i>reply</i> , <i>answer</i>
la façon, <i>fashion</i> , <i>way</i>	seul, <i>single</i> , <i>alone</i> , <i>only</i>
le feu, <i>fire</i>	tromper, <i>deceive</i> , <i>beguile</i>
	la vieillesse, <i>old age</i>

assis devant le feu, *sitting (seated) before the fire*; couché dans son lit, *lying (while lying) in bed*; debout à la porte, *standing at the door*

NOTE. — The imperfect indicative regularly has the same stem as the present participle, e.g. prendre, prenant, je prenais, etc., lire, lisant, je lisais, etc., dire, disant, je disais, etc.

A. 1. Les vieux amis, assis devant le feu, fument leur pipe.
 2. S'amusant comme cela ils passent leur temps. 3. Ils trompent leur ennui en causant de leur vie passée. 4. À les écouter (*or en les écoutant*) on dirait qu'ils ont été des hommes remarquables. 5. Étant jeunes les plaisirs les intéressaient. 6. Arrivés à l'âge mûr ils trouvaient leur plaisir à travailler. 7. Ils réussissaient et en réussissant ils prenaient goût au succès. 8. Ils trouvaient que le proverbe dit vrai: "L'appétit vient en mangeant." 9. Après avoir eu beaucoup de succès la vieillesse leur arrive. 10. N'ayant pas mené une vie déréglée ils en voient venir la fin sans rien craindre. 11. Mais laissés presque seuls par la mort de leurs amis ils s'ennuient un peu. 12. Généralement parlant cependant ils sont heureux.

B. (Oral.) 1. Comment les vieux amis passent-ils leur temps? 2. De quelle façon (= comment) trompent-ils leur ennui? 3. Est-ce qu'ils aimaient les plaisirs? 4. En quoi trouvaient-ils leur plaisir plus tard? 5. Expliquez le proverbe qu'on trouve dans la leçon. 6. Est-ce qu'on voit venir la vieillesse avec plaisir? 7. Quand est-ce qu'on s'ennuie? etc.

C. 1. Sitting (seated) near the fire my old friend smokes his pipe. 2. He is chatting of his past life with another friend. 3. (While) listening to him you would say that he is a young man. 4. But he is old and he has seen remarkable men. 5. He amuses himself by chatting about them. 6. When he was young he beguiled the tedium of life in (*dans*) pleasures. 7. When he came (§ 140, a) to mature age he found his pleasure in working. 8. He found more pleasure in working than in amusing himself. 9. He used to say that the proverb *l'appétit*, etc., is true. 10. After working with much success, old age comes to him. 11. But he sees it coming without losing his happiness. 12. He has nothing to fear, not having led an irregular life. 13. He has lost his friends; however, he is not lonesome. 14. Generally speaking he leads a happy life.

D. 1. These books are very amusing. 2. Think well before (*avant de*) answering. 3. Being ill, my mother cannot go out to-day.

4. On rising I found that it was already nine o'clock. 5. Our friends having arrived, we can now go on board [the ship]. 6. While waiting for the train, we shall take a cup of coffee. 7. One can't live without eating. 8. I thank you for (*de*) showing me your library. 9. Fishing is an amusement which I like very much. 10. We found our friends waiting for us (*rel. clause*). 11. I saw the children playing in the garden. 12. Lying in (my) bed I was reading an amusing book. 13. Standing at the window he looked (*impf.*) at the children playing.

LESSON XLVIII

142. Present Subjunctive of *donner, finir, vendre*

<i>I (may) give, etc.</i>	<i>I (may) finish, etc.</i>	<i>I (may) sell, etc.</i>
je donne	<u>finisse</u>	vende
tu donnes	<u>finisses</u>	vendes
il donne	<u>finisse</u>	vende
nous donnions	finissions	vendions
vous donniez	finissiez	vendiez
ils donnent	finissent	vendent

(a) Learn the subjunctive with *que*, e.g. *que je donne*, etc., since a subjunctive is usually preceded by *que* = *that*.

(b) The English meanings above are only approximate; observe that the subjunctive corresponds to various English constructions, see examples below.

143. Present Subjunctive of *avoir* and *être*

<i>I (may) have, etc.</i>	<i>I (may) be, etc.</i>
---------------------------	-------------------------

j' aie	nous ayons	je sois	nous soyons
tu aies	vous ayez	tu sois	vous soyez
il ait	ils aient	il soit	ils soient

(a) A past participle is added to form the perfect subjunctive (cf. § 45): (*que*) *j'aie donné*, etc.; (*que*) *je sois arrivé(e)*, etc.

144. Use in Noun Clauses. — The subjunctive is required in a noun clause (introduced by *que*) after expressions denoting: —

1. Will, desire, command, consent, prohibition, etc.:

Je désire (veux) que vous restiez. I desire (wish) you to remain.
 Je consens à ce que vous restiez. I consent that you should remain.

2. Necessity:

Il faut que vous restiez. *You must remain.*
 Il est nécessaire qu'il soit prêt. *It is necessary that he should be ready.*

3. Opinion (e.g. approval, etc., or the contrary):

J'apprécie que vous l'achetiez. *I approve of your buying it.*
 Il est bon qu'il soit ici. *It is well that he is here.*

4. Emotion (e.g. joy, sorrow, surprise, anger, fear, etc.):

Je regrette qu'il soit parti. *I regret that he has gone.*

5. Doubt, denial, ignorance, improbability, etc.:

Je doute (nie) que cela soit vrai. *I doubt (deny) that that is true.*

6. Que (= that) is never omitted in French:

Je suis content qu'il soit ici. *I am glad (that) he is here.*

145. Tense Sequence. — If the verb of the governing clause is in the present, imperative, future, or future perfect, the governed subjunctive regularly has the following tenses: —

1. To denote incomplete action, the present subjunctive:

Il faut que vous parliez. *You must speak.*
 Il ne faut pas que vous parliez. *You must not speak.*
 Ordonnez qu'il parte. *Order him to go.*
 Il faudra que vous partiez. *You will have to go.*

2. To denote completed action, the perfect subjunctive:

Je doute qu'il l'ait vendu. *I doubt that he (has) sold it.*

3. A governing condition of deferential statement (cf. § 190, 1) commonly also follows the same rules:

Je voudrais (bien) qu'il parte. *I should like him to go.*

EXERCISE XLVIII

approuver, <i>approve</i>	fâché, <i>angry, sorry</i>
le corsage, <i>waist, bodice</i>	garnir, <i>trim, adorn</i>
coudre, irreg., <i>sew</i>	la garniture, <i>trimming</i>
la coupe, <i>cut, cutting</i>	il importe, <i>it is important</i>
courir, irreg., <i>run</i>	la jupe, <i>skirt</i>
cousu, p. part. of coudre, <i>sewn</i>	nécessaire, <i>necessary</i>
la couture, <i>sewing</i>	richement, <i>richly</i>
la couturière, <i>dressmaker</i>	savoir, irreg., <i>know (how to), can</i>
doubler, <i>line</i>	simple, <i>simple, plain</i>
douter, <i>doubt</i>	tellement, <i>so much</i>
courir les magasins, <i>go shopping, shop; tout de même, all the same, also; je veux bien, I will (do so), very well, all right, etc.; que voulez-vous que je fasse? what shall I do? what am I to do?</i>	

PRESENT INDICATIVE OF *savoir*

je sais	nous savons
tu sais	vous savez
il sait	ils savent

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE OF *aller, partir, faire, savoir*

j'aille	je partie	je fasse	je sache
tu ailles	tu partes	tu fasses	tu saches
il aille	il parte	il fasse	il sache
nous allions	nous partions	nous fassions	nous sachions
vous alliez	vous partiez	vous fassiez	vous sachiez
ils allent	ils partent	ils fassent	ils sachent

A. *Continue:* 1. Il faut que j'arrive à midi, . . . que tu . . . 2. Il veut que je sois prêt. 3. Elle désire que j'aie une robe neuve. 4. Il est nécessaire que je choisisse l'étoffe. 5. Il sera bon que j'attende un peu. 6. Il ne faut pas que je fasse cela. 7. Il voudrait bien que j'y aille. 8. Il est content que je sache le français. 9. Il est fâché que je parte.

B. 1. Il faut que j'aille chez la couturière ce matin avec ma mère, et elle désire que tu m'accompagnes. — 2. Je veux bien. 3. J'aime tellement (à) courir les magasins. 4. À quelle heure veux-tu que nous partions? — 5. Il faut que nous soyons chez la couturière vers dix heures. 6. D'abord nous désirons que tu choisisses, avec nous, de l'étoffe pour ma robe. 7. Ma mère veut qu'elle soit très simple. 8. Elle n'approuve pas que les jeunes filles

soient richement habillées. 9. Elle est contente que les jupes et même les corsages soient très simples cette année, mais il faut tout de même que nous ayons un peu de garniture sur nos robes, n'est-ce pas? — 10. Il est très important qu'une robe soit bien garnie et doublée. 11. Mais il importe surtout qu'elle soit bien coupée et bien cousue. 12. Il est nécessaire qu'une couturière sache bien la coupe et la couture. — 13. La nôtre sait bien couper et coudre. 14. Je doute qu'il y en ait de plus habiles.

C. (*Oral.*) 1. Où allez-vous ce matin? 2. Veux-tu que je t'accompagne? 3. Qu'est-ce que ta mère voudrait que je fasse? 4. À quelle heure faut-il que je sois chez la couturière? 5. Quelle espèce de robe ta mère veut-elle que tu aies? 6. Approuve-t-elle que les robes soient riches? 7. Est-elle contente que les corsages soient richement garnis? 8. Qu'y a-t-il d'important en faisant (*making*) une robe? (*answer with* il faut). 9. Sais-tu coudre? etc.

D. 1. We must go to the dressmaker's to-day. 2. I wish you to go with me. 3. Very well; I will (*fut.*) go with you. 4. Do you like to go shopping? 5. Very much; when shall we start? 6. The dressmaker desires us to be at her shop at nine. 7. First we must choose cloth for my dress. 8. I wish it to be good and not (*pas*) too dear. 9. My mother likes young girls to wear simple dresses. 10. I am glad that skirts are plain this year. 11. But one must have trimming on the waists. 12. It is important that dresses should be well cut and well trimmed. 13. Can you cut and sew? 14. Not (*pas*) very well. 15. Do you like sewing? 16. I do; my mother approves of young girls knowing how to sew.

E. 1. My father wishes the architect to make the plans. 2. I am sorry that they have gone. 3. I am glad that our neighbour's sons have come. 4. The fields must be sown. 5. We wish the harvesters to cut the wheat. 6. The baker must make the bread. 7. Little girls must not be richly dressed. 8. It is not necessary that you should go away to-morrow. 9. I should like my dress to fit me well. 10. Little children must not tease animals. 11. It is important that dresses should be well lined. 12. I wish you (*tu*) to do your exercises. 13. Children must always do their exercises. 14. We shall have to begin our lessons at once. 15. We are always the first to begin.

LESSON XLIX

146. Subjunctive in Adjectival Clause. — The subjunctive is used in such clauses (introduced by a relative pronoun): —

1. To express, regarding the antecedent, something which is implied as being still unattained or in doubt:

Je cherche un chapeau qui m'aille *I am looking for a hat that will (may, such as will) fit me.*

(a) If the English can be turned by *may* + verb, or *such as*, etc., use the subjunctive; otherwise the indicative, e.g. *J'ai trouvé un chapeau qui me va bien, I have found a hat that fits me.*

2. After a negative:

Il n'y a personne qui sache cela. *There is no one who knows it.*

3. When the antecedent is qualified by a superlative, *or* by *seul, unique, premier, dernier:*

C'est le meilleur ami que j'aie. *He is the best friend I have.*

C'est le seul ami que j'aie. *He is the only friend I have.*

(a) But the indicative is used (1) if what is said is merely explanatory, e.g. *Mon meilleur ami qui était malade*, etc., or (2) states a fact unreservedly, e.g. *C'est la seule chose qu'il a dite*, or (3) if the superlative be used as a noun, e.g. *C'est la meilleure des maisons que j'ai vues.*

4. In clauses translating *whoever, whatever, however:*

Qui que tu sois, parle. *Whoever you are, speak.*

Quoi que vous fassiez. *Whatever you do.*

Quelles que soient vos raisons. *Whatever (may) be your reasons.*

Quelque bons qu'ils soient. *However good they are (may be).*

147. Subjunctive in Adverbial Clause. — It is thus used after many conjunctions, like the following, expressing:

TIME: *avant que* (... ne), *before*

PURPOSE: *afin que* or *pour que*,
in order that

FEAR: *de peur que* ... ne, *for
fear that*

Parlez avant qu'il (ne) parte. *Speak before he goes.*

De peur que vous ne tombiez. *For fear that you should fall.*

Bien que je ne sois pas riche. *Though I am not rich.*

(a) For the complete list, see § 224.

CONDITION: *au cas que, in case
that; à moins que* ... ne, *unless*

CONCESSION: *quoique or bien que,
although*

NEGATION: *sans que, without (that)*

Speak before he goes.

For fear that you should fall.

Though I am not rich.

148. Subjunctive in Principal Sentence. — 1. Thus used, *que* + the third singular and third plural present subjunctive serves to complete the imperative, thus:

SINGULAR

donne, *give*
qu'il donne, *let him give*

(a) Similarly for all verbs; for word-order of pronouns, see § 68.

2. It is also sometimes used without *que* to denote what is wished or desired:

Ainsi soit-il! Vive le roi! *So be it! Long live the king!*
Plût (*impf.*) à Dieu qu'il fût ici! *Would to God he were here!*

PLURAL

donnons, *let us give*
donnez, *give*
qu'ils donnent, *let them give*

EXERCISE XLIX

accepter, <i>accept</i>	se mettre, irreg., <i>dress</i> (intr.).
assister à, <i>be present at, attend</i>	le mouchoir, <i>handkerchief</i>
le bal, <i>ball, dance</i>	la nacre, <i>mother-of-pearl</i>
le bouton, <i>button, stud</i>	s'occuper de, <i>occupy oneself with,</i> <i>see about</i>
la famille, <i>family</i>	quant à, <i>as to (for)</i>
frais, <i>fresh, unsold</i>	la redingote, <i>frock coat</i>
les gens, pl., <i>people</i>	la soirée, <i>evening</i>
le gilet, <i>waistcoat, vest</i>	le tailleur, <i>tailor</i>
l'habit, m., <i>dress coat</i>	le veston, <i>sack coat</i>
l'invitation, f., <i>invitation</i>	
la jaquette, <i>morning coat</i>	

les jeunes gens, *young men*; les jeunes filles, *young ladies*; en toilette de bal (or de soirée), *in evening dress*; une soirée dansante, *a dancing party*

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE OF pouvoir

je puisse	nous puissions
tu puisses	vous puissiez
il puisse	ils puissent.

A. Continue: 1. Avant que je parte, . . . tu. 2. Quoique je sois malade, je partirai, . . . tu . . . tu. 3. Ce sont les seuls gants que

j'aie. 4. Quoi que je fasse je n'y réussirai pas. 5. De peur que je ne tombe. 6. *Give in full the imperative of finir, vendre, avoir, être.*

B. 1. Mes sœurs, mon frère et moi (nous) sommes invités à une soirée dansante chez ma tante. 2. Toutes les jeunes filles seront en toilette de bal (*or de soirée*). 3. Bien que nous soyons presque tous de la famille, ma tante ne voudrait pas que les jeunes gens qui y assistent soient en veston ou en jaquette. 4. Il faut qu'on se mette en habit pour danser chez elle. 5. Mon frère, quoiqu'il ne soit pas beaucoup plus âgé que moi, a déjà un habit et une redingote. 6. N'en ayant pas moi-même, il faut que j'aille chez le tailleur avant qu'il soit trop tard. 7. À moins que je n'aie un habit, il faut que je refuse l'invitation. 8. Quant aux gants blancs j'en ai, mais quelque bons qu'ils soient ils ne sont plus frais. 9. La seule chose que je puisse faire c'est d'en acheter de neufs. 10. Et le gilet blanc, la cravate blanche, les boutons de nacre et le mouchoir de soie blanche, il faut que je m'en occupe tout de suite.

C. (Oral on B.)

D. 1. My aunt will give a dancing party next week. 2. Although I am invited, I don't know whether I can be present (there). 3. She does not wish us to wear our (the) sack coat[s]. 4. We must be in dress coat[s] if we wish to dance at her house. 5. The young ladies must be in evening dress. 6. My brother has a dress coat, though he is younger than I. 7. Before (*avant d'*) accepting the invitation I must go to the tailor's. 8. It is the only thing I can do. 9. I cannot go to my aunt's unless I have a dress coat and a white tie. 10. However good a frock coat may be, one can't wear it at the ball. 11. Although these gloves are good, they are no longer unsoiled. 12. I must buy others. 13. Though I have mother-of-pearl buttons, I have no white tie. 14. You must see about these things at once. 15. Let young men dress well, especially when they are going to a (the) ball.

E. 1. My brother knows how to swim, though he is still young. 2. Unless you know how to swim, don't bathe here. 3. Whatever you do, don't do that. 4. However large the Seine is (is the Seine), it is not so large as the St. Lawrence. 5. Let us begin our work

before it is too late. 6. Let the maid bring me a pocket handkerchief. 7. Let the children play now if they wish. 8. I am looking for a house in which (*où*) I shall be comfortable (*bien*). 9. I have found some gloves that fit me. 10. The only ship which leaves Havre this week is "La Lorraine." 11. It is the only thing I can offer you. 12. Unless I have a morning coat before Tuesday, I cannot go to the reception. 13. Mr. L. is the best friend we have in Paris. 14. As to our family, we never dance. 15. Let the tailor bring me my white waistcoat when it is ready.

LESSON L

149. Past Definite of *donner, finir, vendre*

<i>I gave, etc.</i>	<i>I finished, etc.</i>	<i>I sold, etc.</i>
je donnai	finis	vendis
tu donnas	finis	vendis
il donna	finit	vendit
nous donnâmes	finimes	vendimes
vous donnâtes	finites	vendites
ils donnèrent	finirent	vendirent

- (a) The first and second plural have the circumflex accent in all verbs.
- (b) Certain verbs (all irregular) have the endings -us, -us, -ut, -îmes, -ûtes, -urent (see *courir* below).
- (c) For the past definite of verbs in -cer, -ger, see Appendix, D.

150. Past Definite of *avoir* and *être*

<i>I had, etc.</i>		<i>I was, etc.</i>	
j'eus	nous étîmes	je fus	nous fûmes
tu eus	vous étîtes	tu fus	vous fûtes
il eut	ils eurent	il fut	ils furent

151. **Past Anterior.** — It is formed by adding the past participle to the past definite of *avoir* or *être*, thus:

j'eus donné, etc., *I had given, etc.*
 je fus arrivé(e), *I had arrived, etc.*

152. Use of Past Definite. — 1. It is used to denote what happened (completed past action), or what happened next (successive events):

La guerre dura sept ans.

On força le palais, les scélérats
n'osèrent pas résister et ne
songèrent qu'à fuir.

The war lasted seven years.

*The palace was forced, the villains
did not dare to resist and only
thought of fleeing.*

(a) The past definite is almost wholly confined to literary or 'book' French narrative and formal public address (cf. Note to § 47).

(b) In such a narrative the past definite denotes the principal events, while the imperfect denotes accompanying events; or, as is sometimes said, the past definite *narrates* and the imperfect *describes*.

2. Observe the special force of the following:

Avoir; j'eus, *to have; I received (obtained, got, etc.).*

Savoir; je sus, *to know; I found out (learned, etc.).*

153. Pluperfect and Past Anterior. — Both these tenses are used to translate the English pluperfect, but the past anterior denotes only what had happened immediately before another event, and is rarely employed except after certain conjunctions of time:

Après qu'il eut diné, il partit. *After he had dined, he set out.*

(a) Such conjunctions are: lorsque, quand, *when*, après que, *after*, aussitôt que, *as soon as*, and others rarer.

EXERCISE L

arrêter, <i>arrest, stop</i>	la hâte, <i>haste</i>
au près de, <i>with, as regards</i>	joindre, <i>irreg., join</i>
bas, <i>low</i>	lorsque, <i>when</i>
le bâton, <i>stick, club</i>	le paysan, <i>peasant, countryman</i>
la boutique, <i>shop</i>	remplacer, <i>take the place of</i>
le bras, <i>arm</i>	rude, <i>severe</i>
casser, <i>break</i>	saisir, <i>seize</i>
le coup, <i>blow</i>	à travers, <i>through</i>
la devanture, <i>front (shop) window</i>	le trou, <i>hole</i>
la difficulté, <i>difficulty</i>	violent, <i>violent</i>
se disposer, <i>prepare, get ready</i>	voler, <i>steal</i>
dur, <i>hard</i>	le voleur, <i>thief</i>
emporter, <i>carry off (away)</i>	
en bas âge, <i>at an early age; joindre les deux bouts, make (both) ends meet</i>	

PAST DEFINITE OF courir, mourir, faire, voir

je courus	je mourus	je fis	je vis
tu courus	tu mourus	tu fis	tu vis
il courut	il mourut	il fit	il vit
nous courûmes	nous mourûmes	nous fîmes	nous vîmes
vous courûtes	vous mourûtes	vous fîtes	vous vîtes
ils coururent	ils moururent	ils firent	ils virent

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE OF joindre: je joignais, etc.

A. *Continue:* 1. J'emportai le pain. 2. Je saisiss le voleur. 3. Je sortis en hâte. 4. J'entendis un coup violent. 5. Je fus arrêté par lui. 6. Je courus après lui. 7. Lorsque j'eus arrêté le voleur. 8. Aussitôt que je fus arrivé(e).

B. Jean Valjean était d'une pauvre famille de paysans. Il avait perdu en bas âge son père et sa mère. Il ne lui restait qu'une sœur qui était mariée et qui avait sept enfants. Mais un jour le mari mourut. Jean le remplaça auprès des enfants. Sa sœur et lui en travaillant dur joignaient les deux bouts avec difficulté. Mais il arriva qu'un hiver fut rude. Jean n'eut pas d'ouvrage. Les enfants n'eurent pas de pain. Un dimanche soir un boulanger du village se disposait à se coucher lorsqu'il entendit un coup violent dans la devanture de sa boutique. Il arriva à temps pour voir un bras passé à travers le trou fait dans la devanture. Le bras saisit un pain (*loaf*) et l'emporta. Le boulanger sortit en hâte, courut après le voleur et l'arrêta. C'était Jean Valjean.

Adapted from *Les Misérables* by VICTOR HUGO.

C. (*Oral.*) Read Exercise XX, B, using past definite for past indefinite.

D. 1. Jean Valjean's father and mother were peasants. 2. He lost them at an early age. 3. Then he had only his sister with her family. 4. When her husband died Jean took his place and began to work for her and the children. 5. He used to work hard, and he made both ends meet without difficulty. 6. A severe winter came. 7. Jean got no work. 8. One evening, as the baker was getting ready to go to bed, he heard a violent blow. 9. He saw an arm passing through the shop window. 10. Seizing a loaf the arm carried it off. 11. The baker and his wife came out of the shop in haste. 12. He ran after the thief and caught him.

E. 1. Jean Valjean struck the shop window with a stick and broke it. 2. He got a loaf of bread by passing his arm through the hole. 3. Did the baker see Jean taking the loaf? 4. No, he did not see him, but he heard the blow. 5. When he heard the blow he dressed in haste. 6. He called his wife and rushed into the shop. 7. He saw the hole in the window. 8. Then he rushed into the street. 9. He ran in haste after Jean Valjean. 10. Jean threw away the loaf he had stolen. 11. The poor children did not get the loaf. 12. They ate no bread that evening.

LESSON LI

154. Imperfect Subjunctive of *donner, finir, vendre*

<i>I gave, might give, etc.</i>	<i>I finished, might finish, etc.</i>	<i>I sold, might sell, etc.</i>
je donnasse	finisse	vendisse
tu donnasses	finisses	vendisses
il donnât	finît	vendît
nous donnassions	finissions	vendissions
vous donnassiez	finissiez	vendissiez
ils donnassent	finissent	vendissent

(a) The third singular in all verbs has the circumflex accent.

155. Imperfect Subjunctive of *avoir* and *être*

<i>I had, might have, etc.</i>	<i>I was, were, might be, etc.</i>
j'eusse	nous eussions
tu eusses	vous eussiez
il eût	ils eussent

(a) A past participle is added to form the pluperfect subjunctive:

(que) j'eusse donné, etc.
(que) je fusse arrivé(e), etc.

156. Tense Sequence. — If the verb of the governing clause be in any other tense than those mentioned in § 145, the governed subjunctive regularly takes the following forms:—

1. To denote incomplete action, the imperfect subjunctive:

Je désirais qu'il le vendît.	I wished that he might sell it or I wished him to sell it.
J'ai désiré qu'il le vendit.	

J'avais désiré qu'il le vendit. I had wished him to sell it.

2. To denote completed action, the pluperfect:

Je doutais qu'il l'eût vendu. *I doubted that he had sold it.*

J'aurais douté qu'il fût parti. *I should have doubted that he had gone.*

(a) For the sequence after conditional or deferential statement, see § 145, 3.

NOTES.—1. An infinitive construction is often used instead of the subjunctive, even where the latter is possible, e.g. Il nous ordonne de partir (for Il ordonne que nous partions), *He orders us to go;* Je le ferai avant de partir (for avant que je parte), *I shall do it before I go.*

2. In ordinary language the present subjunctive is often used instead of the imperfect, particularly in the case of the first conjugation, e.g. Il désirait que nous arrivions à temps (*for que nous arrivassions*), *He desired us to arrive in time.* This tendency is less strongly marked, however, in the case of the third person singular imperfect.

3. Other exceptions to the general rules are beyond the scope of an elementary text-book.

EXERCISE LI

agréablement, <i>agreeably</i>	le mal de mer, <i>seasickness</i>
les bagages, m., <i>luggage, baggage</i>	la malle, <i>trunk</i>
la cabine, <i>cabin, stateroom</i>	ordonner, <i>order, prescribe</i>
la cale, <i>hold (of a ship)</i>	il prit, 3d sing. p. def. of prendre
le chemin, <i>way, road</i>	récemment, <i>recently</i>
Cherbourg, <i>Cherbourg</i>	remis, p. part. of remettre, <i>recovered</i>
complètement, <i>completely</i>	rouler, <i>roll</i>
descendre, tr., <i>take down, lower</i>	le roulis, <i>rolling</i>
empêcher, <i>hinder</i>	le vaisseau, <i>vessel, ship</i>
le fer, <i>iron</i>	la valise, <i>valise</i>
habitué, <i>accustomed (to, à)</i>	le voyage, <i>journey, trip</i>
lourd, <i>heavy</i>	le wagon-lit, <i>sleeping car</i>
chemin de fer, <i>railway; en pleine mer, in the open sea; il fallut (p. def. of falloir), it was necessary, had to, etc.; il faudrait (condl. of falloir), would have to, etc.</i>	

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE OF prendre, pouvoir, mettre, faire

je prisse	je pusse	je misse	je fissee
tu prisses	tu pusses	tu misses	tu fisses
il prit	il put	il mit	il fit
nous prissions	nous pussions	nous missions	nous fissions
vous prissiez	vous pussiez	vous missiez	vous fissiez
ils prissent	ils pussent	ils missent	ils fissent

Note.—For the u throughout in pusse, etc., see § 149, b.

A. *Continue:* 1. Il fallait que je vendisse ma maison. 2. Il faudrait que je finisse bientôt. 3. Bien que je fusse habitué(e) à voyager. 4. Avant que j'eusse débarqué. 5. Il désirait que je fisse un voyage. 6. Il doutait que je pusse le faire.

(The following passage is given in literary style to afford practice in the verb-forms.)

B. 1. Un de mes amis fit récemment un voyage en Europe. 2. Il fallut qu'il allât d'abord à la gare et qu'il prît son billet de chemin de fer. 3. Pour qu'il pût voyager agréablement il prit une place dans le wagon-lit. 4. Arrivé à New York il fallut qu'il s'occupât de ses bagages. 5. Il ordonna qu'on descendît sa grande malle, qui était très lourde, dans la cale et qu'on mit ses valises dans la cabine. 6. En pleine mer le vent soufflait et le vaisseau roulait. 7. Bien que mon ami fût assez habitué au roulis il fallut qu'il se couchât pour empêcher le mal de mer. 8. Avant qu'on eût fait la moitié de la traversée il était complètement remis. 9. Il débarqua à Cherbourg d'où il partit pour Paris.

C. 1. My father recently had to take (make) a journey to Europe. 2. He had to get (take) his railway ticket. 3. He went early to the station. 4. He went (there) early in order that he might have a good place in the sleeping car. 5. When he arrived at New York he had to see after his trunk. 6. He had his other luggage with him in the train. 7. But he ordered his trunk, which was heavy, to be lowered (use on) into the hold. 8. Although the wind was blowing the ship didn't roll much. 9. As he was not accustomed to travelling he had to lie down. 10. He lay down in order not to be (*avoir*) seasick. 11. Before he arrived at Cherbourg he had (was) completely recovered.

D. 1. Before my friend started he took his ticket. 2. He had to take his ticket at the station. 3. He had to be there early in order to do that. 4. Although he arrived there early, he hadn't much time. 5. I wished him to get a ticket for me also. 6. I should like you to see about my luggage. 7. We should like you to put our valises into the stateroom. 8. Although our friends hadn't arrived we couldn't (*impf.*) wait. 9. We regretted that they had been hindered. 10. Although my uncle was ill, he was able to travel. 11. We had arrived before the train left for Paris.

LESSON LII

157. Principal Parts. — 1. The whole conjugation of any regular verb, and of most irregular verbs, may be known from five forms of the verb, called "principal parts," as shown below for *écrire, write*. These parts are the infinitive, the present participle, the past participle, the present indicative 1st singular and the past definite 1st singular; from each is formed the mood or tense in the column below.

1. INFIN.	2. PRES. PART.	3. PAST PART.	4. PRES. IND. 1 Sg.	5. P. DEF. 1 Sg.
<i>écrire</i>	<i>écrivant</i>	<i>écrit</i>	<i>j'écris</i>	<i>j'écrivis</i>
<i>Future</i>	<i>Impf. Ind.</i>	<i>Comp. Tenses</i>	<i>Imperative</i>	<i>Impf. Subj.</i>
<i>j'écrirai, etc.</i>	<i>j'écrivais, etc.</i>	<i>j'ai écrit, etc.</i>	<i>écris, etc.</i>	<i>j'écrivisse, etc.</i>
<i>Conditional</i>	<i>Pres. Subj.</i>			
<i>j'écrirais, etc.</i>	<i>j'écrive, etc.</i>			
RULE: Add to the Infinitive (dropping final -e)	RULE: Drop -ant and add the endings	RULE: Add the Past Participle to the proper auxiliary (§ 45) to form the Compound Tenses, and also the Passive Voice of transitive verbs (§ 118).	RULE: Form the Imperative by dropping the subject pronoun of the 2d singular, 1st and 2d plural of the Present Indicative (-s of the 2d singular 1st conjugation being also dropped, except before en, y, e.g. parles-en, vas-y).	RULE: Form the Imperfect Subjunctive by substituting -sse -ssions -sses -ssiez -^t -ssent for the final letter of the 1st singular Past Definite, placing a circumflex accent over the last vowel of the 3d singular.
-ai -ons	-ais -ions			
-as -ez	-ais -iez			
-a -ont	-ait -aint			
to form the Future, and	to form the Imperf., and			
-ais -ions	-e -ions			
-ais -iez	-es -iez			
-ait -aint	-e -ent			
to form the Conditional.	to form the Pres. Subjunct.			
	(a) The 1st and 2d Plural Present Indicative and Imperative may also be formed by changing -ant into -ons, -ez.			

2. A condensed form of the above is used in the Alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs (see Appendix), thus:

écrire	écrivant	écrit	écris	écrivis
(write)	écrivais			écrivisse
écrirai(s)	écrive			

PRESENT INDICATIVE:

écris, écris, écrit, écrivons, écrivez, écrivent.

158. Remarks on Irregular Verbs. — 1. The infinitive stem of some verbs is phonetically modified in the future and conditional, e.g. *venir*, *viendrai(s)*.

2. The stem-vowel of the present participle is phonetically modified in the present subjunctive of some verbs, where stressed (1st, 2d, 3d singular and 3d plural), e.g. *venant*, *vienne*, *viennes*, *vienne*, *viennent*; usually also in the same persons of the present indicative, e.g. *viens*, *viens*, *vient*, *viennent*.

3. Many verbs have the present indicative singular in *-s*, *-s*, *-t*, others in *-x*, *-x*, *-t*, e.g. *sais*, *sais*, *sait* (*savoir*), *veux*, *veux*, *veut* (*vouloir*); the *-t* is omitted after *c*, *d*, *t*, e.g. *vainc* (*vaincre*), *vend* (*vendre*), *met* (*mettre*).

4. Some verbs have the past definite in *-us*, *-us*, *-ut*, *-ûmes*, *-ûtes*, *-urent*, and the imperfect subjunctive in *-usse*, *-usses*, *-ût*, *-ussions*, *-ussiez*, *-ussent*, e.g. *courus*, etc. (*courir*), *courusse*, etc.

5. All verbs with the past definite in *-is* continue the tense like *finis*, e.g. *pris*, *pris*, *prit*, *prîmes*, *prîtes*, *prîrent*.

6. Verbs in *-oir* (a separate conjugation in some grammars) are treated as irregular verbs.

7. Exceptions to the rules of § 157 will be indicated in the Alphabetical List; *avoir* and *être* are not included under the rules.

8. The present indicative of each verb should be learned in full.

159. Exercise Form. — For exercises and tests the following tabular form is suggested; the form may be ruled large enough to contain several verbs, the different verbs being indicated by numerals, as shown in the margin:

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. IND. 1 SG.	P. DEF. 1 SG.
(1) <i>savoir, know</i> (2) <i>connaître, know</i> (3) <i>naître, be born</i>	sachant connaissant naissant	su connu né	je sais je connais je naïs	je sus je connus je naquis
FUT. 1 SG.	IMPF. IND. 1 SG.	P. IND. 1 SG.	IMPVE. 2 SG.	IMP. SUB. 1 SG.
(1) <i>je saurai</i> (2) <i>je connaîtrai</i> (3) <i>je naîtrai</i>	je savais je connaissais je naissais	j'ai su j'ai connu je suis né(e)	sache connais naïs	je susse je connusse je naquisse
CONDL. 1 SG.	PRES. SUBJ. (<i>in full, using abbreviations if necessary</i>)			
(1) <i>je saurais</i> (2) <i>je connaîtrais</i> (3) <i>je naîtrais</i>	je sache, tu saches, il sache, nous sachions, vous sachiez, ils sachent. je connaisse, tu -s, il -e, nous connaissons, vous -iez, ils -ent. je naïsse, tu naisses, il naïsse, nous naissions, vous -iez, ils -ent.			

PRES. INDIC. (*in full, underlining forms common to the Imperative*)

- (1) *je sais, t. suis,¹ i. sait, n. savons, v. savez, i. savent.*
 (2) *je connais, t. connais, i. connaît, n. connaissons, v. connaissez, i. connaissent.*
 (3) *je naïs, t. naïs, i. naît, n. naissions, v. naïssez, i. naissent.*

¹ *Imperative: sache, sachons, saches.*

NOTE. — Printed forms, ruled as above, and with space for writing out five verbs, may be obtained from the Publishers for classroom use.

EXERCISE LII

NOTE. — Before doing this and similar exercises, study the verbs required in detail in the Alphabetical List.

Like *connaître* is *reconnaitre, recognize*.

Distinguish *savoir, know* (what has been learned, or is realized by the mind), *know how to, can*, from *connaître, know* (be acquainted with, recognize by the perceptions):

Je connais cette dame de vue. *I know that lady by sight.*
 Je ne sais pas où elle demeure. *I don't know where she lives.*

Usually *was born = est né*, of persons still living; otherwise *était né* or *naquit*, but with numerous exceptions.

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Je ne saurai (connaîtrai) pas. 2. Je connaîtrais (saurais). 3. Je n'en savais rien. 4. Je n'y connaissais personne. 5. Je suis né(e) au 19^e siècle. 6. Je sais faire cela. 7. Je ne connais pas cet endroit. 8. Il est content que je sache ma leçon, . . . tu . . . ta. 9. Je ne les ai pas reconnus.

B. 1. What do you know of that affair? 2. I know nothing of it. 3. Do you not know me? 4. I do, but I didn't recognize you at first. 5. They didn't know the date. 6. Would you know my brother? 7. I am glad that you know your verses. 8. They didn't know the city very well. 9. It is necessary that we should know him. 10. In what year were you born? 11. I was born in the last year of the 19th century.

C. 1. I was acquainted with that lady. 2. My mother knew her very well. 3. They will not know where we are. 4. He would not know where to find us. 5. I wish you to know your lessons for to-morrow. 6. I knew nobody at the concert. 7. William I was born in 1027. 8. Do you know at what o'clock the train arrived? 9. My uncle knows America well. 10. I didn't know whether you would recognize me. 11. I was the first to recognize you. 12. He didn't know how to do his work. 13. The teacher was glad that we knew our lessons to-day.

LESSON LIII

160. Agreement of Verb and Subject. — Review § 4 and observe: —

1. The agreement of the verb with a simple subject:

Le peuple français est vif. *The French people are lively.*

La plupart du monde le croit. *Most people believe it.*

La plupart (des hommes) le croient. *Most men believe it.*

(a) A collective noun singular requires a verb singular; so also for collectives in general, if limited by *de* + a singular.

(b) Otherwise the agreement is usually with the sense as in English, example 3.

2. The agreement of the verb with a compound subject:

Toi et moi (nous) le croyons.	<i>You and I believe it.</i>
Vous et lui (vous) l'avez vu.	<i>You and he have seen it.</i>
Sa sœur et lui sont venus.	<i>His sister and he have come.</i>
L'un ou l'autre l'aura.	<i>One or the other will have it.</i>
Ni l'un ni l'autre ne sont bons.	<i>Neither are good.</i>

(a) The verb is regularly plural, unless, as in Ex. 4, one subject excludes the other; for agreement when the subjects are of different persons observe Ex. 1 and 2, usually with redundant *nous*, *vous*.

161. Position of Subject. — Apart from interrogations (cf. § 8), the subject often follows the verb, as in the following:

Fais comme moi, dit-il.	<i>Do as I do, said he.</i>
Que veux-tu? demanda le fils.	<i>What do you wish? asked the son.</i>
À peine le jour fut-il arrivé.	<i>Hardly had the day arrived.</i>
Aussi mon ami est-il venu.	<i>Hence my friend came.</i>
Peut-être a-t-il raison.	<i>Perhaps he is right.</i>
Peut-être qu'il a raison. }	
Il fera ce que peut faire un homme qui se respecte.	<i>He will do what a man who respects himself can do.</i>
Je ne sais pas où est ma mère.	<i>I don't know where my mother is.</i>
C'est en lui qu'espère son ami.	<i>It is in him that his friend hopes.</i>
But: C'est en lui qu'elle espère.	<i>It is in him that she hopes.</i>

- (a) In remarks explanatory of quotation, as in English, Ex. 1 and 2.
 (b) Often when an adverb heads the clause, Ex. 3, 4 and 5; always so for *aussi*, *hence*, Ex. 4, but never for *peut-être que*, Ex. 6.
 (c) A subject (not a personal pronoun) often follows the verb in a relative clause or after *c'est que*, Ex. 7, 8 and 9.

EXERCISE LIII

- A. 1. The American people like winter sports. 2. A part of our family live in the country. 3. This kind of pears is always dear. 4. You and he are always together. 5. You and I have always been good friends. 6. Neither (the one nor the other) of the pictures has been sold. 7. Few people (*gens*) know Paris better than he. 8. If I do this, answered he, I shall lose my time. 9. Perhaps we shall catch the train; let us hasten. 10. He will do for (*pour*) me all that a good friend can do. 11. My mother is kind to everybody; hence she is loved by all. 12. This dealer makes large

profits; hence he is becoming rich. 13. Where is your hat? I asked. 14. I know where my hat is, he replied, but I don't know where my gloves are.

B. 1. The French people love the theatre. 2. How is your father? my mother asked him. 3. He is not very well, he replied. 4. The man was running very fast; perhaps he had stolen something. 5. Do you remember what they were doing? 6. Does not everybody love his country? 7. The architect will oversee what the workmen are doing. 8. You and he were present at the ball, were you not? 9. He and I were there and also many of our acquaintances. 10. Will you and your friend not come to see us when you are in town? 11. Do you know what I wish? 12. Do you know what that man wants who is knocking at the door? 13. Do you know where the reading room is? 14. Is it in this house that your uncle and aunt live?

LESSON LIV

162. Principal Parts of *pouvoir*, 'be able,' etc.; *vouloir*, 'wish,' 'will,' 'like,' etc.; *voir*, 'see'

<i>pouvoir</i>	<i>pouvant</i>	<i>pu</i>	<i>peux or puis</i>	<i>pus</i>
<i>vouloir</i>	<i>voulant</i>	<i>voulu</i>	<i>veux</i>	<i>voulus</i>
<i>voir</i>	<i>voyant</i>	<i>vu</i>	<i>vois</i>	<i>vis</i>

EXERCISE LIV

(The irregular verbs in this and following exercises should be written out in full or practised orally according to the model at § 159.)

A. (Oral.) Continue throughout the tense: 1. Je pourrai (voudrai). 2. Je voudrais (pourrais). 3. Je verrai (verrais). 4. Je voulais (pouvais, voyais). 5. Je peux (veux, vois). 6. Je pus (voulus, vis). 7. Que je pusse (voulusse, visse). 8. Que je puisse (voie).

B. 1. I am not able to do that. 2. If I (you, he, we) were able. 3. Have you been able? 4. He (you, they) would be able. 5. What do they wish? 6. I (he, we, you, they) did not wish to travel. 7. He (they) would like to remain here. 8. What books have

you seen? 9. Shall I see you to-morrow? 10. What do you see? 11. I see nothing. 12. If they had been here, I should have seen them.

C. 1. He (you, they) would like to study. 2. What have you seen? 3. He wishes me to see his pictures. 4. I wish them to see my garden. 5. He would see you if he were not ill. 6. They will see you if they can. 7. I wished to start yesterday, but I was not able. 8. They will not be able to sell their house. 9. Shall we be able to catch the train? 10. Do what you wish (*fut.*). 11. The carpenter wasn't able to carry the board; it was too heavy.

LESSON LV

163. Auxiliary Function. — Several verbs, when followed directly by an infinitive, have a sort of auxiliary function, and serve to form *verb-phrases* of an idiomatic character.

164. *Vouloir*, 'will,' 'wish (want, desire) to,' etc.

Il ne veut pas vous voir.	<i>He will not (doesn't wish) to see you.</i>
Il vous parlera demain.	<i>He will speak to you to-morrow.</i>
Il ne voulait pas partir.	<i>He was unwilling to (wouldn't) go.</i>
Il voudrait (bien) le savoir.	<i>He would like to know it.</i>
Il aurait voulu venir.	<i>He would have liked to come.</i>

- (a) Distinguish *will* of futurity, Ex. 2, from *will* of purpose, Ex. 1.
 (b) Distinguish *would* of the imperfect, Ex. 3, from *would* of the conditional, Ex. 4 and 5.

165. *Pouvoir*, 'can,' 'be able to,' 'be permitted to,' 'may,' etc.

Je peux faire cela moi-même.	<i>I can do that myself.</i>
Est-ce que je puis entrer?	<i>May I come (go) in?</i>
Je ne pouvais pas lire la lettre.	<i>I couldn't read the letter.</i>
Je n'ai pas pu le faire.	<i>I could not (was unable to) do it.</i>
Il pourrait venir s'il voulait.	<i>He could come if he would.</i>
Aurait-il pu venir ce soir?	<i>Could he have come this evening?</i>
Pourrais-je vous demander ceci?	<i>Might (could) I ask you this?</i>

- (a) *Pouvoir* = *can* or *may*, Ex. 1 and 2.
 (b) Distinguish *could* = *was able* in a past tense, Ex. 3 and 4, from *could* = *would be able* of the conditional, Ex. 5 and 6.
 (c) Note the English rendering of the conditional in Ex. 7.

166. *Savoir*, 'know,' 'know how to,' 'can,' etc.

Il sait écrire. *He can (knows how to) write.*

Il est malade et ne peut pas écrire ce soir. *He is ill, and cannot write this evening.*

Je ne saurais le croire. *I cannot believe it.*

(a) Distinguish *can* = *know how to, has learned how to*, Ex. 1, from *can* of physical ability, Ex. 2.

(b) Note the English rendering of the conditional in Ex. 3.

EXERCISE LV

aider, <i>help</i>	la fourchette, <i>fork</i>
l'armoire, f., <i>cupboard</i>	intelligent, <i>intelligent</i>
arranger, <i>arrange</i>	Jeanne, <i>Jane</i>
l'assiette, f., <i>plate</i>	le ménage, <i>household</i>
le couteau, <i>knife</i>	la nappe, <i>tablecloth (white)</i>
le couvert, <i>cover (dishes, etc., for one person)</i>	la peur, <i>fear</i>
la cuiller, <i>spoon</i>	le tiroir, <i>drawer</i>

de peur de, *for fear of*; mettre la nappe, *lay the table(cloth), set the table*; faire le ménage, *keep house*; café au lait, *coffee with milk*; arranger les couverts, *arrange the dishes (in setting the table)*

A. *Continue:* 1. Je sais compter jusqu'à cent, tu. 2. Je voudrais bien y aller. 3. J'aurais voulu y aller si j'avais pu, tu . . . tu. 4. Je pourrais y aller si je voulais, tu . . . tu. 5. Je ne pouvais pas sortir. 6. Je ferai ce que je voudrai, tu . . . tu. 7. Aurais-je pu faire cela? 8. Je ne peux pas écrire parce que je suis malade, tu . . . tu.

B. 1. Jeanne est une petite fille habile et intelligente. 2. Elle sait déjà lire et écrire, mais elle ne peut pas aller tous les jours à l'école. 3. Elle voudrait savoir faire le ménage. 4. Et sa mère voudrait aussi qu'elle sache cela. 5. Tous les matins elle se lève de bonne heure pour qu'elle puisse aider sa mère. 6. Elle sait mettre la nappe et arranger les couverts. 7. Elle sait dans quels tiroirs se trouvent les serviettes, les couteaux, les fourchettes et les cuillers. 8. Si elle était plus grande, elle pourrait prendre les assiettes et les tasses qui sont dans la grande armoire. 9. Sa mère ne veut pas qu'elle y touche de peur de les casser. 10. Son père lui dit quelquefois: "Jeanne, si tu savais me faire un bon café au lait, tu serais une bonne petite ménagère."

C. (*Oral.*) 1. Savez-vous parler français? 2. Savez-vous l'écrire aussi? 3. Pourriez-vous écrire une lettre en français? 4. Sauriez-vous me dire si votre frère est déjà levé? 5. Pourquoi Jeanne se lève-t-elle de bonne heure? 6. Que sait-elle faire? 7. Que pourrait-elle faire si elle était plus grande? 8. Pourquoi sa mère ne veut-elle pas qu'elle touche à la vaisselle? etc.

D. 1. I cannot go to school to-day. 2. I should like to go (there) every day. 3. I can read, but I cannot write yet. 4. If I could go to school every day, I should soon learn to write. 5. My mother would like me to know how to keep house. 6. I know how to lay the table. 7. I cannot get the cups and plates in the cupboard. 8. My mother doesn't want me to touch them. 9. But I can get the knives, forks and spoons. 10. I know in which drawer they are. 11. If I were older, I could make a cup of coffee for my father. 12. I can't make the coffee yet; I am too young. 13. My mother says that if I could make the coffee, I should be a good little house-wife. 14. I should like to learn to make it.

E. 1. My sister can sing very well. 2. But she is ill and can't sing this evening. 3. She would like to sing if she could. 4. She helps her mother to (d) arrange the dishes. 5. She can't get the dishes (*vaisselle*) in the cupboard for fear of breaking them. 6. We cannot always do what we should like. 7. But we shall do what we can (*fut.*). 8. I tried to learn my lesson, but I couldn't. 9. Could you tell me what time it is? 10. I cannot; my watch is broken. 11. If I had my dress coat, I could go to the ball. 12. But the tailor couldn't bring it; it wasn't ready. 13. He would have brought it if he had been able. 14. We should like to go to Europe this summer if we could. 15. Couldn't you go with us?

LESSON LVI

167. *Aller*, 'go'; *devoir*, 'owe,' 'be obliged';
venir, 'come'

aller	allant	allé	vais	allai
devoir	devant	dû (f. due)	dois	dus
venir	venant	venu	viens	vins

EXERCISE LVI

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. J'irai (irais) le voir. 2. J'allais et venais tout le temps. 3. Je ne lui dois (devais, devrai) rien. 4. Je viendrai les voir. 5. Je m'en suis allé(e). 6. Je suis venu(e) à pied. 7. J'y vais tout de suite. 8. J'irai¹ (irais) avec plaisir. 9. Vas-y. 10. Viens. 11. Il faut que j'y aille (vienne). 12. J'y allai. 13. Je vins ici tout seul. 14. Il fallait que j'y allasse (vinsse). 15. Il est fâché que je doive partir, . . . tu.

B. 1. Where are you going? 2. I am going home. 3. He owes me ten francs. 4. You owe me nothing. 5. Come (*2d sing.*) with me. 6. Do not go there. 7. We shall go to the concert. 8. They will come to see us. 9. I should go if I could. 10. Come next week. 11. Go there at once. 12. Go away (*s'en aller*). 13. I desired him to go to the market. 14. They came early. 15. They have come.

C. 1. We are going to have some friends to dinner. 2. Whom are you going to invite? 3. We shall owe them much money. 4. I owed you nothing. 5. When will they come? 6. When did they (*f.*) come? 7. Pay me what you owe me. 8. Come at once. 9. I must (use *il faut*) go away. 10. He must come to see us. 11. Owe nothing to anybody. 12. They (*f.*) have gone away. 13. They came in [a] carriage. 14. It was necessary for him to come. 15. He didn't owe me anything.

LESSON LVII

168. Devoir = owe, but observe also its force in various tenses when followed directly by an infinitive:

PRESENT:	Je dois parler.	<i>I am to (have to, must) speak.</i>
IMPF.:	Je devais parler.	<i>I was (had, was obliged) to speak.</i>
FUTURE:	Je devrai parler.	<i>I shall have (be obliged) to speak.</i>
CONDL.:	Je devrais parler.	<i>I ought to (should) speak.</i>
PAST INDEF.:	J'ai dû parler.	<i>I have had (been obliged) to speak, had to speak, must have spoken.</i>
PAST DEF.:	Je dus parler.	<i>I had (was obliged) to speak.</i>
CONDL. ANT.:	J'aurais dû parler.	<i>I ought to have (should have) spoken.</i>

¹ Aller regularly requires a complement, but y so used is omitted before irai, etc., irais, etc.

169. Aller. — The present and imperfect + a direct infinitive give a sort of immediate future, like *go*, etc., in English:

Il va l'acheter.	<i>He is going (is about) to buy it.</i>
Nous allions partir.	<i>We were (just) about to start.</i>
Il allait se noyer.	<i>He was on the point of drowning.</i>
Allez le voir demain.	<i>Go to (go and) see him to-morrow.</i>

170. Venir. — Observe its force when followed by an infinitive (1) without a preposition, (2) with *de*, (3) with *à*, the two latter in the present and imperfect:

Il est venu me voir.	<i>He came to see (came and saw) me.</i>
Je viens de les voir.	<i>I have just seen them.</i>
Je venais de les voir.	<i>I had just seen them.</i>
S'il venait à voir le livre.	<i>If he happened to see the book.</i>

EXERCISE LVII

après-demain, <i>the day after to-morrow</i>	le menu, <i>menu, bill of fare</i>
avant-hier, <i>the day before yesterday</i>	la noix, <i>walnut</i>
boire, irreg., <i>drink</i>	la personne, <i>person</i>
car, <i>for</i>	le potage, <i>soup</i>
s'enrhumer, <i>catch (take) cold</i>	les préparatifs, m., <i>preparations</i>
l'entrée, f., <i>entrée</i>	le radis, <i>radish</i>
la fête, <i>festivity, holiday</i>	le rôti, <i>roast</i>
la glace, <i>ice (cream)</i>	la salade, <i>salad</i>
la grand'mère, <i>grandmother</i>	la sardine, <i>sardine</i>
le grand-père, <i>grandfather</i>	servir, irreg., <i>serve</i>
le hors-d'œuvre, <i>side dish, relish</i>	la sorte, <i>sort, kind</i>
Lucie, <i>Lucy</i>	tôt, <i>soon</i>
d'ici là, <i>from now till then</i>	la visite, <i>visit, call</i>

d'ici là, *from now till then*

A. Continue: 1. Je venais de dîner chez eux, tu. 2. Je dois m'occuper du menu. 3. J'aurais dû commencer plus tôt. 4. Je devais y aller mais je ne pouvais pas, tu . . . tu. 5. J'ai dû partir de bonne heure. 6. Je devrais faire mes préparatifs, tu . . . tes. 7. Je viens de leur parler. 8. Je vais m'occuper de cette affaire. 9. Je suis venu(e) le voir. 10. Si je venais à le voir.

B. 1. Nous venons de dîner chez mon grand-père et ma grand'mère. 2. Toute la famille devait y être, mais quelques-uns des

parents ne pouvaient pas venir. 3. Mon père s'était enrhumé et a dû partir avant la fin. 4. Avant-hier ma tante Lucie, à qui nous devions une visite, a donné une réception. 5. Comme c'est la saison des fêtes de famille, tous nos parents viendront dîner chez nous mardi prochain. 6. D'ici là ma mère et mes sœurs vont avoir beaucoup à faire. 7. Demain ou après-demain elles doivent commencer leurs préparatifs. 8. Si on venait à oublier quelque chose, ma mère serait très fâchée. 9. Elles auraient dû peut-être commencer plus tôt, car il va y avoir (*to be*) une vingtaine de personnes au dîner. 10. Ma mère doit s'occuper du menu. 11. Pour un bon dîner on devrait servir d'abord un hors-d'œuvre de radis, de sardines ou quelque chose de la sorte, et puis un bon potage. 12. Après le potage on devrait avoir une entrée, des légumes, un bon rôti et de la salade. 13. Ensuite on devrait servir des glaces, des fruits, des noix, et une tasse de café noir.

C. (*Oral on B.*)

D. 1. My grandfather and grandmother have just dined with us. 2. It (*ce*) was to be a family dinner. 3. The sons, daughters and their children were to be there. 4. Some of our relatives had to refuse the invitation. 5. My uncle had caught cold and was obliged to stay at home. 6. We are all to go to my aunt Lucy's reception the day after to-morrow. 7. One should attend these family festivities, you know. 8. The whole family is to dine at my aunt's next Monday. 9. She is going to see about the menu at once. 10. My mother was to help her, but she can't. 11. She fell while taking a walk. 12. She ought to have gone to bed at once. 13. You ought to take a little of this salad, it is very good. 14. May I offer you some fruit or walnuts? 15. One shouldn't drink too much black coffee.

E. 1. We have invited twenty people (*personne*) to dinner. 2. We shall first have radishes or sardines and then a soup. 3. The roast will come after the entrée. 4. There will be several sorts of fruits. 5. The ices and coffee will be served at the end. 6. He ought to come sooner. 7. He ought to have come sooner. 8. Here is a twenty-five franc note which I have just found. 9. It must be yours. 10. Yes, it is mine, I must have lost it yesterday. 11. We

were to start for the country the day before yesterday. 12. Come and dine with us next Sunday. 13. You owe us a visit. 14. You ought not to have spoken of it. 15. You ought to begin your preparations at once. 16. What are we to do now? The train has gone. 17. It has just gone. 18. It had just gone when I arrived at the station. 19. We shall have to wait for another train.

LESSON LVIII

171. *Dire*, 'say,' 'tell'; *faire*, 'do,' 'make'; *mettre*, 'put,' 'place'; *prendre*, 'take'

<i>dire</i>	<i>disant</i>	<i>dit</i>	<i>dis</i>	<i>dis</i>
<i>faire</i>	<i>faisant</i>	<i>fait</i>	<i>fais</i>	<i>fis</i>
<i>mettre</i>	<i>mettant</i>	<i>mis</i>	<i>mets</i>	<i>mis</i>
<i>prendre</i>	<i>prenant</i>	<i>pris</i>	<i>prends</i>	<i>pris</i>

EXERCISE LVIII

adieu or au revoir, good-bye

A. (Oral.) Continue: 1. Je mets (prends, dis). 2. Je disais (faisais, mettais, prenais). 3. Je prendrai (mettrai, ferai, dirai). 4. Je fis (mis, pris, dis). 5. Je mettrai (dirais, ferais, prendrai). 6. Je me suis mis(e) à table. 7. Je lui ai dit adieu (au revoir). 8. Que je mette (dise, fasse, prenne). 9. Que je dise (fisse, misse, prisse). 10. Prends. 11. Dis. 12. Mets. 13. Fais.

B. 1. What do you (will you, would you) say? 2. What have you said (done, taken)? 3. The others will take (say) that. 4. Would they say (do) the same thing? 5. I was taking a walk. 6. What was he saying? 7. He has put [on] his overcoat. 8. Tell me what he has said (done, taken). 9. What have you done? 10. Take my stick; don't take John's. 11. We wish you to say (do, take) what you wish (*fut.*). 12. Do you wish me to set the table?

C. 1. Say what you will (*fut.*). 2. They have said (done, taken) that. 3. Have you put the plates on the table? 4. Saying that, he went away. 5. I shall take some salad. 6. They would say the

same thing. 7. They were saying good-bye. 8. They wouldn't take any wine. 9. Take my pen. 10. Put the cups and plates on the table. 11. Let us take a walk. 12. Let us tell them that. 13. I wished him to tell me all (*tout*). 14. I wished him to take my place.

LESSON LIX

172. *Faire* causatively. — 1. This verb + an infinitive corresponds to a great variety of expressions in English which may be explained by the meaning *cause to do or be done*:

J'ai fait écrire les enfants.	<i>I have made the children write.</i>
Il les fera écouter.	<i>He will make them listen.</i>
La robe qu'elle s'est fait faire.	<i>The dress she got made for herself.</i>

(a) The past participle *fait* thus used is invariable.

2. A governed substantive follows the infinitive, but a governed conjunctive personal pronoun goes with *faire*:

Faites venir la domestique.	<i>Have the servant (get the servant to) come.</i>
Faites-la venir.	<i>Have her come (send for her).</i>

3. If the infinitive with *faire* has a direct object, its personal object must be indirect:

Je fis lire mon fils.	<i>I made my son read.</i>
Je fis lire ce livre à mon fils.	<i>I made my son read this book.</i>
Faites-le-lui lire.	<i>Make him (get him to) read it.</i>

(a) Possible ambiguity is sometimes avoided by *par*, e.g. Il fit porter le sac *par* le guide, *He had the sack carried by the guide.*

(b) The infinitive of certain reflexives (*s'asseoir*, *se souvenir*, *se taire*, etc.) regularly omits *se*, e.g. Faites asseoir vos amis, *Have your friends sit down.*

(c) *Laisser*, *let*, *entendre*, *hear*, *voir*, *see*, sometimes have the same construction as *faire*: Laissez-leur (or -les) faire cela, *Let them do that*; J'ai entendu dire cela à mon frère or J'ai entendu mon frère dire cela, *I heard my brother say that.*

EXERCISE LIX

blanchir, whiten, wash (linen)	<i>mis, p. part. of mettre, dressed</i>
brosser, brush	<i>la mise, dress, manner of dressing</i>
le coiffeur, barber, hairdresser	<i>la négligence, carelessness</i>
le complet, suit (of clothes)	<i>la paire, pair</i>
le cordonnier, shoemaker	<i>le pourboire, gratuity, tip</i>
le faux col, collar (detachable)	<i>la propreté, cleanliness, neatness, tidiness</i>
le garçon coiffeur, journeyman barber	<i>respecter, respect</i>
les habits, m., clothes	<i>soigner, take care of</i>
Julien, Julian	<i>soigneusement, carefully</i>
le linge, linen	<i>le soulier, shoe</i>
la manchette, cuff	<i>le vêtement, sing., garment, suit, pl. clothes</i>
la mesure, measure	
faire payer, charge; faire voir, show; laisser à désirer, leave (something) to be desired, not be satisfactory; se laisser aller à, yield to, give way to	

A. Continue: 1. Je me fais respecter. 2. Je ferai travailler les ouvriers. 3. Je vais me faire faire une robe, tu . . . te. 4. Je me suis fait faire un complet, tu . . . t'. 5. Je devrais me faire couper les cheveux, tu . . . te. 6. Je leur ai fait payer le prix. 7. Je me suis fait payer, tu . . . t'. 8. Fais-les (*impv.*) travailler. 9. Je vais leur faire voir les beautés de la ville.

B. 1. Tout jeune homme devrait être bien mis. 2. On ne se fait pas respecter en se laissant aller à la négligence. 3. Il faut qu'on fasse blanchir soigneusement son linge. 4. Les faux cols et les manchettes font voir tout de suite si on aime la propreté. 5. Mon frère Julien soigne assez bien ses vêtements. 6. Cependant sa mise laisse un peu à désirer, et sa mère lui a dit d'aller chez le tailleur se faire faire un complet. 7. Le tailleur lui a fait voir des étoffes, et puis il a pris sa mesure. 8. Le tailleur lui fera payer le complet cent dix francs. 9. Ensuite, chez le cordonnier, il s'est fait prendre mesure pour une paire de souliers. 10. Le cordonnier se la (*or* les) fera payer vingt francs. 11. Entrant chez le coiffeur il s'est fait couper les cheveux. 12. Il paie la coupe de cheveux dix sous. 13. Après s'être fait brosser ses habits il donne quatre sous de pourboire au garçon coiffeur.

C. (Oral on B.)

D. 1. That young man is not well dressed. 2. He is going to get himself a suit made. 3. He will have his measure taken at the tailor's. 4. Have you had your measure taken? 5. I have had (myself) a suit made. 6. I didn't like the materials the tailor showed me. 7. He is going to charge me 125 francs. 8. Here is the pair of shoes which I have had made (for myself). 9. You ought to get your hair cut; it is too long. 10. I shall get it cut to-morrow. 11. After having my clothes brushed, I shall give the barber a tip. 12. Everybody should be well dressed. 13. One must make oneself respected in this world. 14. Get these collars and cuffs washed. 15. I have had our linen washed.

E. 1. Take good care of (*soigner bien*) your clothes. 2. Your dress (*mise*) is not very satisfactory. 3. Go to the shoemaker's to get yourself a pair of shoes made. 4. How much am I to pay? 5. He will charge you 25 francs, but it (*ce*) is cheap. 6. I shall make them study. 7. I shall make them write their exercises. 8. Get the tailor to come. 9. Get these collars washed carefully. 10. Your cuffs are not clean. 11. Cleanliness causes a young man to be respected. 12. Show me some (*de*) of your best cloths. 13. How much will you charge me [for] the suit? 14. This dress which I got (myself) made in Paris doesn't fit me. 15. I shall get myself another made as soon as I arrive in New York.

LESSON LX

173. Envoyer, 'send'; recevoir, 'receive'; mouvoir, 'move'; mourir, 'die'

envoyer	envoyant	envoyé	envoie	envoyai
recevoir	recevant	reçu	reçois	reçus
mouvoir	mouvant	mû (f. mue)	meus	mus
mourir	mourant	mort	meurs	mourus

Like recevoir: s'apercevoir (*de*), perceive.

EXERCISE LX

le cadeau, <i>present</i> , gift	la poste, <i>post office</i>
les nouvelles, f., <i>news</i>	la soif, <i>thirst</i>
mourir de soif, <i>be very thirsty</i>	

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Je m'en aperçois. 2. Je lui enverrai (enverrais) la lettre. 3. Je recevrai quelque chose. 4. Je meurs (mourais) de soif. 5. Je recevais de bonnes nouvelles. 6. Il veut que je reçoive de bons gages. 7. Il faudra que je meure. 8. Que je reçusse.

B. 1. I send (shall send) my son to school. 2. He (you, they) will receive a gift. 3. What news have you received? 4. My poor aunt died yesterday. 5. All men will die. 6. They (we) were very thirsty. 7. They (f.) would have died. 8. Do you wish me to send the letters to the post office? 9. They (we, I) perceive (of) nothing. 10. If he dies, his family will have nothing. 11. I wished him to receive good wages.

C. 1. They receive news every day. 2. Put the letters you have received into this drawer. 3. My father will send me money. 4. I shall receive it soon. 5. All men are born and die. 6. His family knew he was dying. 7. They said he would die. 8. Many persons have died. 9. Napoleon III died in 1873. 10. I wish him to receive this letter to-day. 11. I should like Mr. Liard to send me a good roast.

LESSON LXI

174. Additional Verb-Phrases. — Observe the following:

faire savoir, inform, let one know
entendre dire, hear (say or said)
aller chercher, go for, go and get
envoyer chercher, send for
venir prendre, come for, come and get

entendre parler de, hear (spoken) of
faire attendre, keep (one) waiting
venir chercher, come for
faire venir, send for

EXERCISE LXI

l'accident, m., accident
l'après-midi, f., afternoon
aussitôt que, as soon as
changer, change
le courrier, courier, post, mail
se demander, ask oneself, wonder
exact, exact, precise

Marcel, Marcellus
le neveu, nephew
la nièce, niece
Renée, Renée (name, f.)
retard (en), late
télégraphier, telegraph
téléphoner, telephone

j'ai reçu de ses nouvelles, I have heard from (received news of) him

A. Continue: 1. Je reçois souvent de ses nouvelles. 2. Je vais le lui faire savoir. 3. J'en ai souvent entendu parler. 4. J'entends dire que le train est en retard. 5. Je me demande si c'est vrai. 6. Fais-les (*impv.e.*) attendre. 7. Je ferai venir une voiture. 8. J'envirrai chercher mes neveux, tu . . . tes. 9. Je suis venu(e) les chercher. 10. Je vais les chercher tout de suite.

B. 1. J'ai reçu des nouvelles de mon neveu Marcel il y a quelques semaines. 2. J'ai reçu encore de ses nouvelles par le courrier de ce matin. 3. Il me fait savoir par sa lettre, et il me télégraphie aussi, qu'il arrivera avec ma nièce Renée cette après-midi. 4. Mais on entend tellement parler d'accidents! 5. On ne sait jamais ce qui peut arriver. 6. J'entends dire que leur train, celui de 5 h. 45 du soir, est presque tous les jours en retard. 7. Je me demande s'il va arriver à l'heure exacte aujourd'hui. 8. Je ne voudrais pas qu'on me fasse attendre, car je vais les chercher à la gare. 9. J'ai entendu dire que Marcel et Renée sont beaucoup changés. 10. Je ne les reconnaîtrai plus peut-être. 11. Mais je téléphonera à mon mari de venir nous chercher à la gare. 12. Il pourra envoyer chercher une voiture qui ira le prendre à son bureau. 13. Il m'aidera à les reconnaître. 14. Aussitôt que nous les aurons trouvés nous les amènerons chez nous et nous ferons venir leurs bagages plus tard.

C. (Oral.) 1. Quand avez-vous reçu des nouvelles de votre neveu et de votre nièce? 2. Avez-vous reçu de leurs nouvelles aujourd'hui? 3. Quand vont-ils arriver? 4. De quel train parlez-vous? 5. Arrive-t-il généralement à l'heure exacte? 6. Qui allez-vous chercher à la gare? 7. Votre nièce est-elle beaucoup changée? 8. La reconnaîtrez-vous sans difficulté? 9. Qui doit envoyer chercher une voiture? 10. Que ferez-vous quand vous aurez trouvé votre nièce? 11. Quand enverrez-vous chercher ses bagages? etc.

D. 1. We have just received news of my nephew and niece. 2. We don't often get (receive) news of them. 3. Their letter arrived by this morning's mail. 4. They inform us that they are going to arrive this afternoon. 5. If the train is not late, they will be here at 5.25 P.M. 6. I wonder if the train will arrive on time to-day. 7. I have heard that it is almost always late. 8. My husband and I (we) are going to get them at the station. 9. They have telegraphed us that they will be late. 10. If they are much

changed, we shall not recognize them perhaps. 11. I wonder if they will recognize us. 12. Your father has gone to get a carriage. 13. It will come and get us here. 14. We shall start as soon as it comes. 15. First we shall bring my niece here, and then we shall send for her baggage.

E. 1. Our friends heard from their brother six weeks ago. 2. They heard from him again by yesterday evening's mail. 3. He is going to arrive by the 6.00 P.M. train. 4. His sister will come with him. 5. We have heard of a great many accidents, have we not? 6. The trains are often late. 7. We were wondering whether their train would be late. 8. We should not like to be kept (*use on*) waiting. 9. We are going to get our nephew and niece at the station. 10. We have heard that they are much changed. 11. We can't (*fut.*) recognize them perhaps. 12. Let us telephone to our father. 13. He will come and get us. 14. He will send for a carriage. 15. The carriage will come and get us.

LESSON LXII

175. *Croire*, 'believe,' 'think'; *lire*, 'read'

croire	croyant	cru	crois	crus
lire	lisant	lu	lis	lus

Like *lire*: *élire*, *elect*.

EXERCISE LXII

le journal, *newspaper*

lentement, *slowly*

A. (Oral.) Continue: 1. Je ne crois pas cette nouvelle. 2. Je ne lis (*lisais*) pas bien. 3. Je serai élu. 4. Il faut que je lise d'autres livres. 5. Je lirais plus si j'avais le temps, tu . . . tu. 6. Je ne crois pas tout cela. 7. Les journaux que j'ai lus. 8. Crois-y (*believe in it*). 9. Lis beaucoup. 10. Il voulait que je crusse cette histoire, . . . tu. 11. Je lus la moitié du chapitre.

B. 1. Read more slowly. 2. They (*you, we*) read too fast. 3. By reading we learn to read. 4. What do you wish me (*them, him*) to read? 5. I (*we*) shall read those newspapers. 6. They would read better if they read more slowly. 7. Believe me. 8. Let

us not believe them. 9. Would you believe it? 10. You don't believe what I say. 11. We (I) shall never believe that story.

C. 1. He read (*p. def.*) the whole chapter. 2. They read (*p. def.*) the half of it. 3. I wished him to read good books. 4. What books have you read? 5. Charles used to read badly. 6. He reads much better now. 7. What were you reading when I came in? 8. I was reading the newspaper. 9. I think it is going to rain. 10. They thought we were not coming. 11. I thought they would be elected. 12. You thought I had gone away, didn't you?

LESSON LXIII

176. Infinitive for Noun Clause. — After verbs of declaring, intending, thinking, hoping, the verb of a *that* clause in English may often be rendered in French by a direct infinitive, but only when both verbs in the sentence have the same subject:

Je croyais le voir passer.	<i>I thought (that) I saw him pass.</i>
J'avoue l'avoir oublié.	<i>I confess (that) I forgot it.</i>
J'espère réussir.	<i>I hope (that) I shall succeed.</i>
J'ai cru devoir rester.	<i>I thought (that) I ought to stay.</i>
Je compte y être.	<i>I expect (that) I shall be there.</i>
But: Je crois qu'il est venu.	<i>I think (that) he has come.</i>

(a) Such verbs are: *affirmer, avouer, compter, croire, déclarer, espérer*, etc.

EXERCISE LXIII

avouer, declare, confess	l'élection, f., election
bonjour, good morning, good day	l'examen, m., examination
le bulletin (de vote), ballot paper	la majorité, majority
le candidat, candidate	municipal, municipal
le citoyen, citizen	occupé, busy
la commune, municipality	se passer, be happening, be going on
compter, count, reckon, purpose, intend, expect	à propos (de), with regard (to), by the way
le conseiller, councillor	l'urne, f., urn, ballot box
déposer, deposit, cast (vote)	le vote, voting
l'électeur, m., elector	voter, vote

à moins d'être, if one (etc.) is not; je l'espère, *I hope so*; être refusé, fail (to pass an examination); il compte être régu, *he expects to pass (at an examination)*

A. Continue: 1. J'avoue l'avoir oublié. 2. Je comptais partir ce soir. 3. J'ai cru l'avoir vu passer. 4. Je crois pouvoir passer l'examen. 5. J'espère y réussir cette fois. 6. Je n'ai pas cru devoir voter pour M. Liard. 7. Je ne compte pas être élu. 8. Je crois qu'il sera élu.

B. 1. Bonjour, Raymond, d'où viens-tu? — 2. Je viens du village. — 3. Je croyais t'avoir vu passer il y a une heure. 4. Qu'est-ce qui se passe au village? — 5. C'est le jour des élections. 6. On élit les conseillers municipaux. — 7. J'avoue avoir oublié cette affaire importante. 8. J'étais si occupé à me préparer pour mes examens. 9. À moins d'être bien préparé on n'y réussit pas. 10. J'y ai déjà été refusé. 11. J'espère y être reçu la prochaine fois. 12. Mais à propos des élections, est-ce qu'il y a beaucoup de candidats? — 13. Oui, il y en a plusieurs; mon père en est un, et il compte être élu cette fois. — 14. Je l'espère bien. 15. Est-ce que beaucoup des électeurs ont voté? — 16. Oui, la majorité des citoyens de la commune ont cru devoir déposer leurs bulletins de vote dans l'urne. 17. Alors Raymond dit "au revoir" et s'en va.

C. (Oral.) 1. D'où vient Raymond? 2. Quand l'avez-vous vu passer? 3. Qu'est-ce qui se passait au village? 4. Pourquoi aviez-vous oublié les élections? 5. Avez-vous réussi aux examens? 6. Pourquoi? 7. Combien de candidats y avait-il aux examens? 8. Y ont-ils réussi tous? 9. Avez-vous déjà voté aux élections? 10. Croyez-vous devoir toujours voter? 11. Où dépose-t-on son bulletin de vote? etc.

D. 1. I saw many citizens going to the village yesterday to (*pour*) vote. 2. We thought we saw you passing [by]. 3. We confess we had forgotten the elections. 4. We were preparing (*ourselves*) for our examinations. 5. If we are not well prepared (*see B, 9*), we shall fail. 6. My brother has failed twice. 7. I hope he will succeed this time. 8. He hopes he will succeed at his examinations. 9. Does your uncle expect that he will be elected? 10. He does. 11. I think I can vote to-morrow. 12. I think my uncle will have a considerable majority. 13. How many municipal councillors are there in this municipality?

E. 1. The thief confessed that he had stolen the money. 2. We were very busy yesterday. 3. While the electors were voting we were preparing (ourselves) for the examinations. 4. Vote for Mr. Liard if you think you ought to do so (*le*). 5. He expects to be elected. 6. I hope he will be elected. 7. I hope I shall be able to take a trip next summer. 8. I hope you can (*fut.*) go with me. 9. Where do you expect to embark? 10. I expect I shall embark at Havre. 11. With regard to your examinations, do you expect to pass? 12. I do. 13. I expected to pass the last time, but I failed. 14. I believe you will succeed this time. 15. Let us hope so (*le*).

LESSON LXIV

177. *Boire*, 'drink'; *coudre*, 'sew'; *moudre*, 'grind';
résoudre, 'resolve,' 'solve'

boire	buvant	bu	bois	bus
coudre	cousant	cousu	couds	cousis
moudre	moulant	moulu	mouds	moulus
résoudre	résolvant	résolu	résous	résolus

EXERCISE LXIV

le médecin, *doctor*le verre, *glass*

A. (Oral.) Continue: 1. Je bois (j'ai bu) du lait. 2. Bois un verre d'eau. 3. Est-ce que je résoudrai les problèmes? 4. Je ne boirai (boirais) pas de vin. 5. Je buvais du thé ou du café au lait. 6. Je mouds (moulais) le blé. 7. Je coupe et couds bien. 8. J'ai résolu les problèmes. 9. Je bus un verre de lait. 10. Il faut que je couse la robe.

B. 1. We (you, they) drink water. 2. Let him drink a glass of milk. 3. What were they drinking? 4. He never drank any wine. 5. The doctor wished him to drink a little wine. 6. The miller grinds (has ground, will grind) the wheat. 7. Let him grind it.

8. He (I) was grinding it. 9. We (you, they) sew and cut well.
 10. Solve your problems. 11. I have solved mine. 12. Let us drink a cup of coffee and milk before starting.

C. 1. I (we) shall not drink wine. 2. It is not necessary for us to drink wine. 3. I should not drink wine if I were not ill. 4. If you drank wine, you would be ill. 5. Don't drink wine; don't drink any. 6. The dressmaker sews (has sewn, will sew) all day. 7. She (I) was sewing while you were reading. 8. Have the pupils solved their problems? 9. The problems that they have solved were not easy. 10. The miller ground the wheat to make flour. 11. The wheat was ground by the miller. 12. The dressmakers sewed (*p. def.*) the ladies' silk dresses.

LESSON LXV

178. Use of Infinitive. — 1. Review Lesson XXVI and observe the following:

Il a fini *par* m'insulter.

He ended by insulting me or He finally insulted me.

Je commencerai *par* apprendre
ma leçon de français.

I shall begin by learning (or I shall first learn) my French lesson.

Je suis venu (*pour*) le consulter.

I came (in order) to consult him.

Il est trop fâché pour écouter.

He is too angry to listen.

Il est assez riche pour voyager.

He is rich enough to travel.

(a) *Par* — *by* usually only with *commencer* and *finir*, Ex. 1 and 2.

(b) *Pour* emphasizes the purpose, with a verb of motion, Ex. 3 (cf. § 170).

(c) *To* — *pour*, regularly after *assez* and *trop*, Ex. 4 and 5.

2. The infinitive often stands after prepositional phrases, of which the last word is *de* or *à*:

Je me dépêche *de* peur d'être en
retard.

*I am hastening for fear of being late
(for fear I shall, etc.).*

Agissez *de façon à* réussir.

Act so as to succeed.

3. Observe the idiomatic distinctions in the infinitive constructions at the head of the Exercise below.

EXERCISE LXV

afin de, <i>in order to</i>	fatigué, <i>tired</i>
l'algèbre, f., <i>algebra</i>	la jambe, <i>leg</i>
autant, <i>as much</i>	latin, <i>Latin</i>
boiter, <i>limp, be lame</i>	manquer, <i>fail, miss</i>
la cause, <i>cause</i>	ordinairement, <i>generally</i>
égal, <i>equal</i>	précédent, <i>preceding</i>
l'exemple, m., <i>example</i>	probablement, <i>probably</i>
faillir, <i>fail</i>	le vers, <i>verse, line (of poetry)</i>

à cause de, *because (on account) of; cela m'est égal, that is all the same to me, I don't care, etc.; aimer autant, like as well, just as soon; aimer mieux, like better or prefer (to do), rather (do); j'ai fini de lire, I have finished reading*

j'ai failli tomber
j'ai pensé tomber
j'ai manqué de tomber } *I came very near (was on the point of) falling*

A. Continue: 1. Je me suis dépêché afin de finir. 2. Je suis trop fatigué pour finir. 3. Je commençai par apprendre les vers. 4. J'aimerais autant partir tout de suite. 5. J'aimerais mieux rester à la maison. 6. Je n'ai pas manqué le train. 7. Je finirai par résoudre mes problèmes. 8. J'ai fini de travailler pour ce soir. 9. Dépêche-toi de peur d'arriver en retard. 10. J'ai pensé (or failli) tomber.

B. 1. À notre école les classes commencent à neuf heures. 2. Afin de pouvoir préparer tous nos devoirs nous en faisons une partie le soir précédent. 3. Quelquefois nous sommes trop fatigués pour les faire tous. 4. Nous commençons généralement par préparer la leçon de latin. 5. J'aimerais autant commencer par résoudre nos problèmes d'algèbre. 6. Mais mon frère aime mieux faire d'abord le latin. 7. Tout cela m'est égal si je prépare mes autres leçons. 8. L'autre jour par exemple nous n'avons pas pu terminer nos problèmes à cause du latin. 9. Nous finissons ordinairement par notre leçon d'anglais. 10. On finit de travailler chez nous à dix heures. 11. Mon père s'amuse quelquefois à lire les journaux jusqu'à onze heures. 12. Nous nous réveillons souvent tard. 13. Et de peur d'être en retard à l'école nous nous dépêchons. 14. L'autre jour je suis tombé en me dépêchant et j'ai failli me casser une jambe. 15. Je boite encore.

C. (*Oral on B.*)

D. 1. I am too tired this evening to do all the lessons. 2. Let us begin by preparing our Latin. 3. On account of my algebra, I would rather not do my Latin. 4. I generally do my problems first. 5. But my brothers like best to do the easy lessons first. 6. Let us finish by learning something easy, for example, our verses. 7. I don't care, but I would just as soon learn them first. 8. I missed my history lesson yesterday. 9. We must finish working at ten. 10. We must go to bed now for fear of wakening too late. 11. We were very near being late yesterday, you know. 12. Yes, and I came very near breaking my leg. 13. I was hastening in order not to be late. 14. You see I am limping yet.

E. 1. We are too tired to prepare all our exercises this evening. 2. Has your brother finished preparing his? 3. Yes, and he is amusing himself now reading the newspaper. 4. Let us hasten for fear of being late. 5. We have hastened in order not to be late at the station. 6. My father rose late, and (he) missed the train. 7. He had to wait for the next train. 8. He came near missing that one too. 9. Would you prefer to go to the concert or the theatre? 10. It is all the same to us. 11. As for me, I would rather see a good play. 12. We shall probably end up by staying at home. 13. Most people like best to begin by doing something easy. 14. Those who work will finally succeed.

LESSON LXVI

179. *Battre*, 'beat,' 'thresh'; *dormir*, 'sleep'; *servir*, 'serve'; *nettoyer*, 'clean'

battre	battant	battu	bats	battis
dormir	dormant	dormi	dors	dormis
servir	servant	servi	sers	servis
nettoyer	nettoyant	nettoyé	nettoie	nettoyai

Like *dormir* and *servir*: s'endormir, *go to sleep*; se servir de, *make use of, use*.

EXERCISE LXVI

le beurre, *butter*
cruel, *cruel*
mal, *badly*

le (la) malade, *sick person*,
patient
la nuit, *night*

battre le beurre, *churn*

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Je bats le blé dans la grange. 2. Je dors toujours bien. 3. Est-ce que je me sers d'un crayon bleu? 4. Je n'ai pas bien dormi cette (*last*) nuit. 5. Dors bien. 6. Je dormis (*dormirai*) longtemps. 7. Bats le beurre. 8. Je me suis endormi(e) avant minuit. 9. Sers-toi de ces livres-là. 10. Sers le dîner. 11. Je nettoie les souliers. 12. Je nettoierai la vaisselle.

B. 1. Good morning, have you slept well? 2. Very well, thank you; and you? 3. Oh, I always sleep well now. 4. I am glad you are sleeping better. 5. The maid is churning. 6. The harvesters are threshing the wheat. 7. Let us thresh the wheat. 8. Serve the lunch, if you please. 9. Madam, the lunch is served (*or* Madam is served). 10. I wish you to serve these ladies. 11. They are served already. 12. He was cleaning (*would clean*) the shoes.

C. 1. My father always slept badly. 2. At what time did you go to sleep? 3. I went to sleep before twelve. 4. I slept very badly last night. 5. The children haven't gone to sleep yet. 6. That cruel mother is beating her child. 7. George was beaten for stealing apples. 8. Let us make use of these books. 9. Use my pen if you wish. 10. I have been using it. 11. The doctor wishes the patient to sleep. 12. I should like the maid to clean the kitchen. 13. That is no use (*use servir à*).

LESSON LXVII

180. **Government of Verbs.** — 1. An English transitive verb is sometimes rendered in French by a verb with *de* or *à*:

Il s'approchait de la ville.
Je me souviens de vous.
Il obéit à son père.
Je lui obéirai.

He was approaching the town.
I remember you.
He obeys his father.
I shall obey him.

2. A French transitive verb sometimes has the force of an English verb + a preposition:

J'attends le train.

I am waiting for the train.

3. **De** and **à** are sometimes not translated literally:

Cela dépend de vous.

That depends on you.

Pensez à votre devoir.

Think of your duty.

4. Compare the French and English constructions:

Je paie le thé.

I pay for the tea.

Je le paie à l'épicier.

I pay the grocer for it.

Je le lui ai payé.

I have paid him for it.

Je lui prends le fusil.

I take (away) the gun from him.

Il demande du pain à son père.

He asks his father for bread.

(a) Further examples: **acheter quelque chose à quelqu'un**, *buy something from somebody*; **emprunter . . . à . . .**, *borrow . . . from . . .*; **ôter . . . à . . .**, *take away . . . from . . .*; **voler . . . à . . .**, *steal . . . from . . .*; **pardonner . . . à . . .**, *pardon somebody for . . .*

5. In many verbs the meaning varies with the preposition:

Ils jouent aux cartes.

They play (at) cards.

Elle joue du piano.

She plays (on) the piano.

(a) Further examples: **penser à**, *think of, think about (turn over in one's mind)*; **penser de**, *think of (have an opinion about)*; **servir, serve**; **servir à, serve as or for; se servir de, make use of, use**.

EXERCISE LXVII

ainsi, <i>thus, so</i>	pardonner, <i>pardon</i>
la baratte, <i>churn</i>	le piano, <i>piano</i>
dépendre, <i>depend</i>	poser, <i>place, put, ask (question)</i>
employer, <i>employ</i>	le pré, <i>meadow</i>
l'étable, f., <i>stable (for cattle)</i>	la qualité, <i>quality</i>
la faute, <i>fault</i>	la question, <i>question</i>
former, <i>form</i>	sage, <i>wise, well-behaved, good (of children)</i>
les grands-parents, <i>grandparents</i>	le seau, <i>pail</i>
la laiterie, <i>dairy</i>	tirer or traire, <i>irreg., milk</i>
marcher, <i>March, go, run</i>	l'ustensile, m., <i>utensil</i>
Marguerite, <i>Margaret</i>	
obéir, <i>obey</i>	

et ainsi de suite, *and so forth, and so on; faire marcher, make or cause to go, work (of machines); battre des mains, clap one's hands*

A. Continue: 1. J'obéis à mon père, tu . . . ton. 2. Je lui obéis. 3. Je lui prends son livre. 4. Je me sers d'encre noire. 5. Je m'en sers. 6. J'emploie de l'encre noire. 7. Je m'approche du feu. 8. Je lui demande de l'argent. 9. Je m'aperçois de cela. 10. Je m'en suis aperçu(e). 11. Je pensais à elles. 12. Je ne m'en suis pas servi. 13. Je n'y ai pas pensé.

B. 1. Paul et Marguerite sont chez leurs grands-parents à la campagne: 2. Ils sont sages et obéissent à leur grand'mère. 3. Elle leur pardonne facilement leurs petites fautes. 4. Ils s'amusent beaucoup à la regarder travailler et l'aident aussi. 5. Quelquefois elle leur dit d'aller au pré chercher les vaches. 6. Ils amènent les vaches à l'étable et grand'mère les tire. 7. Grand-père lui prend les seaux pleins de lait et les emporte à la laiterie. 8. Deux fois par semaine on fait du beurre. 9. On se sert d'une baratte pour battre le beurre. 10. On nettoie soigneusement la baratte, car la qualité du beurre dépend beaucoup de la propreté des ustensiles qu'on emploie. 11. Grand-père fait marcher la baratte et les enfants s'approchent de lui pour voir. 12. Ils lui posent (*or font*) beaucoup de questions. 13. Ils lui demandent: "Grand-père, tu ne dis rien; à quoi penses-tu? 14. Combien le marchand te paie-t-il le beurre? 15. Combien as-tu payé la baratte?" 16. Et ainsi de suite. 17. Bientôt on s'aperçoit que le beurre se forme et les enfants battent des mains.

C. (Oral.) 1. Où étaient les deux enfants? 2. Comment s'appellent-ils? 3. À qui obéissaient-ils? 4. Que leur pardonnait-elle? 5. À quoi s'amusaient-ils? 6. Qu'est-ce que la grand'mère leur disait quelquefois? 7. Qui tirait les vaches? 8. À qui le grand-père prenait-il les seaux? 9. De quoi se servait-on pour faire le beurre? 10. À quoi sert la baratte? 11. Qui faisait marcher la baratte? 12. Dites-moi les questions que les enfants posaient à leur grand-père. 13. Pourquoi battaient-ils des mains? etc.

D. 1. Children be good; obey your parents. 2. Obey them always. 3. These children go to the meadow for the cows. 4. They have brought them to the stable. 5. Grandmother will milk the cows. 6. Grandfather will take from her the pails of milk. 7. I work the churn in the dairy. 8. Clean the churn. 9. The quality of the butter will depend on cleanliness. 10. The dairy and the uten-

sils must be clean. 11. We ask our grandparents many questions. 12. What are you thinking of? 13. I am not thinking about anything. 14. How much did the dealer pay you for the butter? 15. The butter has come. 16. We clapped our hands because the work was finished. 17. What use is a churn?

E. 1. Did you perceive that he didn't obey his father? 2. I didn't perceive it. 3. What do you think of this book? 4. Use my pen, yours is bad. 5. I shall use it with pleasure. 6. He took the pail from me. 7. I took the pail from him. 8. Think of your lessons. 9. We were thinking of them. 10. Pay the tailor for your clothes. 11. I have paid him for them. 12. Ask your friend for some money. 13. I have borrowed some from him already. 14. My little brothers are playing marbles. 15. Can your sister play the piano? 16. It is very cold; draw near the fire. 17. Pardon me for this fault. 18. Twice two make four, twice three make six, and so forth.

LESSON LXVIII

181. *Partir*, 'set out,' etc.; *sentir*, 'feel,' 'smell,' etc.; *, 'follow'*

<i>partir</i>	<i>partant</i>	<i>parti</i>	<i>pars</i>	<i>partis</i>
<i>sentir</i>	<i>sentant</i>	<i>sentí</i>	<i>sens</i>	<i>sentis</i>
<i>suivre</i>	<i>suivant</i>	<i>suivi</i>	<i>suis</i>	<i>suivis</i>

Like *partir*: *sortir*, *go out*.

EXERCISE LXVIII

<i>le chien</i> , <i>dog</i>	<i>le maître</i> , <i>master</i>
<i>le facteur</i> , <i>porter</i>	<i>se sentir</i> , <i>feel</i> (of health)
<i>le froid</i> , <i>cold</i>	<i>sortir</i> , <i>tr.</i> , <i>take (get) out</i>

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Je ne sens (sentais) pas le froid. 2. Je pars (partirai) de grand matin. 3. Je partis sans dire adieu. 4. Pars avant midi. 5. Sens ces fleurs. 6. Sors d'ici. 7. Je suis mon maître, tu . . . ton. 8. Je les ai suivis. 9. Je suivais le colonel. 10. Que je suivisse (partisse, sentisse).

B. 1. She is leaving (has left) for France. 2. My sisters set out yesterday. 3. He is going out to take a walk. 4. Let him not go out now. 5. Let him stay at home if he doesn't feel well. 6. Do you feel the cold? 7. They didn't feel the cold. 8. These flowers smell sweet (*bon*). 9. The dog follows his master. 10. He was followed by his dog. 11. Let him follow us. 12. Don't follow me. 13. Let us not go out this morning. 14. Let the others go out if they wish.

C. 1. They (*f.*) have gone out. 2. Let us go out [for] a little. 3. Don't go away without saying good-bye. 4. Go away from here at once. 5. If I were to follow him he would be angry. 6. We followed (*p. def.*) our parents. 7. The parents were followed by their children. 8. They will not feel well to-morrow. 9. They felt well. 10. Don't you feel well? 11. Let the porter get out our luggage. 12. Porter, please get out our luggage. 13. When you have got it out, bring it to the carriage.

LESSON LXIX

182. *C'est* and *il est*. — Observe the following typical sentences:

C'est facile (clair, bien).

It (that) is easy (clear, well).

C'est à désirer.

It (that) is to be desired.

C'est facile à faire.

It (that) is easy to do.

Il est facile de parler.

It is easy to talk.

Il est clair que j'ai raison.

It is clear that I am right.

Il est à désirer que la guerre finisse bientôt.

It is to be desired that the war should soon end.

(a) In Ex. 1, 2 and 3, *ce* = *it* or *that*, is the real subject.

(b) But when the real subject follows *être* in such constructions it is expressed by *de* + infinitive, as in Ex. 4, or by a *que* clause, Ex. 5 and 6, and *il* = *it* regularly stands as anticipatory subject.

NOTE. — Colloquially, *c'est* is somewhat freely used for *il est*, e.g. *C'est clair que j'ai raison*, and is always found in certain phrases, e.g. *c'est dommage*, *c'est pitié*, etc.

183. Ce and *il(s)*, *elle(s)*, etc. — Care must be taken to distinguish constructions of the following types:

Elle est Française.	<i>She is French (a Frenchwoman).</i>
Ils sont Allemands.	<i>They are German (Germans).</i>
Sa femme est couturière.	<i>His wife is a dressmaker.</i>
C'est une Française.	<i>She is a Frenchwoman.</i>
C'est une couturière.	<i>She is a dressmaker.</i>
Ce sont des Allemands.	<i>They are Germans.</i>
Quel Français est-ce?	<i>What Frenchman is it?</i>

(a) Observe in Ex. 1, 2 and 3 that the noun of nationality, calling or description omits the article; in such case a personal subject must precede être.

(b) But if the predicate noun, as in Ex. 4, 5, 6 and 7, has un, des or any other determinative (definite article, partitive, possessive adjective, demonstrative, interrogative adjective), it becomes the real subject, and ce precedes être (cf. §§ 35, 80).

EXERCISE LXIX

agréable, <i>agreeable, pleasant</i>	la médecine, <i>medicine</i>
brave, <i>brave, worthy</i>	nombreux, <i>numerous</i>
la clientèle, <i>customers, practice</i>	normand, <i>Norman</i>
conséquent (<i>par</i>), <i>consequently</i>	la Normandie, <i>Normandy</i>
le dommage, <i>damage, pity</i>	observer, <i>observe</i>
se fournir, <i>buy or get one's provisions (supplies, etc.)</i>	la réputation, <i>reputation</i>
heureux, <i>happy, fortunate</i>	le rez-de-chaussée, <i>ground floor</i>
	supérieur, <i>superior, upper</i>

c'est pourquoi, *that is why*; faire de bonnes affaires, *do a good business (trade)*; à partir de deux heures, *beginning at two o'clock*; c'est dommage que (+ subjunctive), *it is a pity that*

A. Complete by supplying ce or il and the correct preposition:

1. . . . est difficile . . . faire. 2. . . . sera difficile . . . faire cela.
3. . . . est à désirer qu'il parte bientôt. 4. . . . facile . . . apprendre.
5. . . . est clair que la leçon est difficile. 6. . . . est intéressant de voyager. 7. . . . serait mieux . . . ne rien dire. 8. . . . serait mieux.
9. . . . est très bon; j'aime cela.

B. Complete by supplying c'est, ce sont, il (elle) est, ils (elles) sont, as required: 1. . . . des Anglaises. 2. . . . cordonniers. 3. . . . une Française. 4. . . . Américains. 5. . . . couturières.

6. . . . médecin. 7. . . . un médecin habile. 8. . . . des Normands.
9. . . . une vieille Normande.

C. 1. Il est très intéressant d'observer les nombreux voisins que nous avons dans cette maison. 2. Au rez-de-chaussée il y a un épicier. 3. C'est chez lui que nous nous fournissons souvent. 4. Il est Normand, et vend de bon beurre et de bon fromage qui lui viennent de Normandie. 5. C'est un très brave homme. 6. C'est pourquoi il a tant de clients. 7. Il est facile de faire de bonnes affaires si on a une bonne réputation. 8. C'est facile à expliquer. 9. Notre voisin du premier (étage) est médecin. 10. C'est un homme très agréable. 11. Il a une clientèle importante. 12. C'est aujourd'hui mercredi et il va recevoir beaucoup de malades. 13. Il n'est que neuf heures, mais on commence déjà à arriver. 14. C'est jeudi qu'il fait son cours à l'école de médecine. 15. Par conséquent il ne recevra demain qu'à partir de deux heures. 16. Il est heureux que nous ayons deux si bons voisins. 17. C'est dommage que nous en ayons de moins bons aux étages supérieurs.

D. (Oral.) 1. Qui est votre voisin du rez-de-chaussée? 2. Est-il Français? 3. Qu'est-ce qu'il vend? 4. Est-ce un brave homme? 5. Pourquoi a-t-il une bonne clientèle? 6. Est-il facile d'avoir beaucoup de clients? 7. Qui est votre voisin du premier? 8. Est-ce un bon médecin? 9. Quel jour de la semaine est-ce? 10. Quelle heure est-il? 11. Quand est-ce que votre voisin fait son cours? 12. Quand reçoit-il ses malades? etc.

E. 1. It is pleasant to have good neighbours. 2. Our neighbour on (of) the ground floor is a Norman. 3. He is a grocer. 4. His wife is a Norman also. 5. They are very worthy people. 6. Is it at his shop that you get your provisions? 7. Why is it that he has so many customers? 8. It is because he has a good reputation. 9. It is easy to have plenty (*beaucoup*) of customers if one sells cheap. 10. That is very true. 11. Who is it who has just come in? 12. It is our neighbour of the first flat. 13. He is a clever doctor who has a large practice. 14. It is to-day that he sees (receives) his patients. 15. It is a pity that there are so many sick people this winter. 16. It is fortunate that you have such (*de si*) good neighbours.

F. 1. That gentleman is one of our numerous neighbours. 2. His wife is French. 3. Are you an American, madam? 4. No, sir, I am an Englishwoman. 5. It is interesting to study medicine. 6. It is difficult to learn French. 7. It is easier to read it than to write it. 8. It is a very difficult language. 9. Should we not start now? 10. I don't know; it is a pity we didn't start yesterday. 11. That is true; it is raining so much to-day. 12. There is the lady who lives in one of the upper stories. 13. Yes, it is she. 14. It is easy to see that she is not a Frenchwoman. 15. What day is it to-day? 16. What time is it?

LESSON LXX

184. *Traduire*, 'translate'; *construire*, 'construct,' 'build'

traduire	traduisant	traduit	traduis	traduisis
construire	construisant	construit	construis	construisis

Like *construire*: *instruire*, *instruct*, *educate*.

EXERCISE LXX

le poème, poem

le poète, poet

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Je traduis (traduisais) de l'anglais en français. 2. Je construisais (construis) une maison. 3. Les morceaux que j'ai traduits. 4. Les maisons que j'ai construites. 5. Traduis ces vers en français. 6. Ne les traduis pas en anglais. 7. Je traduisis un gros livre. 8. Le maître voudrait que je traduise beaucoup, . . . tu. 9. J'instruisis mes neveux.

B. 1. We learn much by translating. 2. I wish you to translate this poem. 3. Let us translate our exercises. 4. Which verses have you translated? 5. Architects build houses. 6. What houses has this architect built? 7. He (they) built (*p. def.*) many houses in this city. 8. The children whom I was instructing have learnt much.

C. 1. The master has wished John to translate a piece of Latin. 2. What pieces have you translated? 3. That poet translated (*p. def.*) many poems into English. 4. Translate these verses for me. 5. Mr. Potin was building a fine castle in Normandy. 6. We were building fine houses. 7. Let him translate this French poem. 8. They (*m.*) are well educated. 9. She is a very [well] educated lady.

LESSON LXXI

185. Impersonal Verbs. — 1. Review § 114.

2. Many verbs may stand in the third person singular with impersonal *il* anticipating a real subject, singular or plural, following the verb:

Il était tombé de la neige.

Some snow had fallen.

Il en reste trois livres.

There remain three pounds of it.

Il est arrivé des lettres.

Some letters have arrived.

Il est arrivé des accidents.

Some accidents have happened.

(a) Observe that the past participle is invariable.

3. *Il est* (*était*, etc.) may be used for *il y a*:

Il est des hommes qui le croient. *There are some men who believe it.*

4. *Y avoir* is often used to form expressions of time reckoned backwards, or of distance:

Il y a trois ans (de cela).

Three years ago.

Combien y a-t-il d'ici à Paris?

How far is it to Paris?

5. Observe the following:

De quoi s'agit-il?

What is the matter? etc.

Il s'agit de l'acheter.

It is a question of buying it.

Il se peut qu'il vienne.

It may be that he will come.

EXERCISE LXXI

s'agir de, be a question of

l'hôpital, m., hospital

*l'aide-maçon, m., mason's helper,
hodman*

*les matériaux, m., material(s)
outre, in addition to*

la chute, fall

parmi, among

la construction, building

la pierre, stone

se détacher, get loose

la pluie, rain

l'échafaudage, m., scaffolding

réparer, repair

s'en falloir, be near

la tête, head

glissant, slippery

le toit, roof

grave, serious

se tuer, kill oneself, be killed

guérir, get well, recover

la tuile, tile

heureusement, fortunately

*se faire, take place; faire glissant, be slippery; se faire mal, hurt oneself,
get hurt; peu s'en est fallu . . . ne, came very near, almost happened*

A. *Continue:* 1. Je me suis fait mal, tu t'. 2. Peu s'en est fallu que je ne fisse cela, . . . tu . . . 3. Je m'en suis détaché(e), tu t'. 4. J'ai failli tomber.

B. *Supply the proper past indefinite forms:* 1. Il (tomber) de la pluie. 2. La pluie (tomber). 3. Il (arriver) des lettres. 4. Des lettres (arriver). 5. Il s' (détacher) une tuile. 6. Une tuile s' (détacher).

C. 1. On a construit cette maison il y a trois ans. 2. Il est arrivé un certain nombre d'accidents pendant la construction. 3. Il s'est fait plusieurs chutes parmi les ouvriers. 4. Un jour il était tombé de la neige et l'échafaudage était glissant. 5. À cause de cela deux aides-maçons, qui apportaient des matériaux aux maçons, sont tombés. 6. Heureusement ils ne se sont pas fait beaucoup de mal. 7. Un autre jour il a fallu qu'un ouvrier montât sur le toit. 8. Il s'agissait d'une tuile qui s'était détachée. 9. Mais il était tombé de la neige et en réparant la tuile l'ouvrier est tombé. 10. Peu s'en est fallu qu'il ne se tuât. 11. Il lui a fallu deux mois d'hôpital pour guérir. 12. Une autre fois un ouvrier a reçu sur la tête une tuile qui tombait. 13. Il a failli en mourir. 14. Outre ces trois cas il n'y a pas eu d'accidents graves.

D. 1. This house was built (use *on*) five years ago. 2. Many accidents happened (there happened, etc.). 3. Several falls occurred. 4. Many masons fell who were working on the scaffolding. 5. Some of the masons hurt themselves [very] much. 6. One day a workman was to repair the roof. 7. What was the trouble (use *s'agir*)? 8. It was a matter of a tile which had fallen. 9. Snow had fallen and it was slippery. 10. He fell and he had to stay three months in the hospital. 11. It may be that he will stay there four months. 12. Another workman got hurt also. 13. A stone fell (see C, 12) on his head.

E. 1. Fortunately not many serious accidents happened among the workmen. 2. Several tiles had become loose. 3. In repairing them a workman fell, and came near being killed. 4. It had rained. 5. Much rain had fallen that summer. 6. There were several accidents but no one was killed. 7. Amongst the workmen two hodmen hurt themselves. 8. They recovered, but they had to stay a month

in the hospital. 9. The building of that castle lasted ten years. 10. In addition to the masons, there were painters and other workmen.

LESSON LXXII

186. *Cuire*, 'cook,' 'bake,' etc.; *courir*, 'run';
valoir, 'be worth'

<i>cuire</i>	<i>cuisant</i>	<i>cuit</i>	<i>cuis</i>	<i>cuisis</i>
<i>courir</i>	<i>courant</i>	<i>couru</i>	<i>cours</i>	<i>courus</i>
<i>valoir</i>	<i>valant</i>	<i>valu</i>	<i>vaux</i>	<i>valus</i>

EXERCISE LXXII

cuire (or *faire cuire*), *cook* (tr.); *cuire*, *cook* (intr.); *valoir la peine*, *be worth while*; *valoir mieux*, *be better*

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Je fais cuire la viande. 2. Je cuis du pain. 3. Je cuirai des poissons. 4. Cours vite. 5. J'ai couru. 6. Je vaux (valais, valus, vaudrai) autant que lui. 7. Je cours (courais, courrai) en toute hâte. 8. Que je vaille (valusse). 9. Il faut que je cuise les légumes. 10. Il fallait que je courusse.

B. 1. He was running. 2. We were cooking. 3. If they had fish, they would cook them. 4. The horse ran fast. 5. That cow will be worth five hundred francs. 6. That is no good (= is worth nothing). 7. He wishes us to run. 8. Bake the bread. 9. That was better. 10. They will (would) run. 11. He wished me to cook the vegetables. 12. They have not run. 13. The blackboard was no good.

C. 1. The horses will run. 2. That is not worth while. 3. If you had baked the bread, it would be worth five cents a pound. 4. He wishes us not to run. 5. Do not run so fast. 6. It would be better [to] go slowly. 7. The baker has baked the bread. 8. That bread will not be worth six cents a pound. 9. I am sorry that that is worth nothing. 10. You must cook the meat. 11. This meat is not well cooked. 12. We did not wish them to run fast. 13. We were running. 14. The vegetables were cooking.

LESSON LXXIII

[In §§ 187-191 are explained some uses of tenses and moods not dealt with in the more elementary lessons.]

187. Present Indicative. — 1. Observe its use with *depuis*, *since*: *depuis quand?* *since when?* *il y a . . . que*, *voici (voilà) . . . que*, to denote how long an action has been continuing:

Depuis quand êtes-vous ici?	<i>How long have you been here?</i>
Je suis ici depuis dix jours.	<i>I have been here for ten days (past).</i>
Il y a (or voici, voilà) deux mois que j'attends une lettre.	<i>I have been expecting a letter for two months.</i>

2. But if the action is denoted as being entirely past, a past tense must be used:

Combien de temps a-t-il attendu? *How long did he wait?*
Il a attendu (pendant) dix jours. *He waited for ten days.*

(a) *Pendant* emphasizes the duration of the time.

3. Observe:

C'est là que je l'ai vu. *It was (is) there that I saw him.*

188. Imperfect Indicative. — Observe its use to denote what had been continuing (cf. § 187):

Depuis quand étiez-vous là? *How long had you been there?*

(a) The imperfect stands occasionally for the conditional anterior in a result clause, e.g. *Si je ne l'avais pas saisi, il tombait du train*, *If I hadn't seized him, he would have fallen from the train.*

189. Future. — This tense, as also the future anterior, sometimes denotes probability, possibility, supposition, or the like:

Ce seront nos amis qui viennent d'arriver. *Those are (I suppose, no doubt) our friends who have just come.*

Je me serai trompé. *I must have made a mistake.*

190. Conditional. — 1. It is used in deferential statement or request:

Je le croirais du moins. *I should think so at least.*

Auriez-vous la bonté de rester? *Would you kindly stay?*

2. It sometimes denotes probability, etc. (cf. § 189):

Serait-il vrai? *Can (could) it be true?*

3. It sometimes denotes concession (= even, even if, though), after **quand**, **quand même**, or with **que**:

Quand (même) il me tuerait. *Even if he should kill me.*

Il me le dirait que je ne le croirais *Even though he told me so, I should not believe it.*

4. It may denote implied futurity (cf. § 76):

Je prendrais ce qui resterait. *I should take what remained.*

5. It is sometimes used in giving the substance of hearsay information, or the like:

À ce qu'on dit le roi serait malade. *By what they say the king is ill.*

191. Infinitive. — Observe its exceptional uses:—

1. In brief phrases with imperative force:

S'adresser à côté. *Apply next door.*

Répondre aux questions suivantes. *Answer the following questions.*

2. With **de** = a finite verb (historical infinitive):

Et l'ennemi de s'enfuir. *And the enemy fled (or flees).*

EXERCISE LXXIII

l'arrivée, f., *arrival*

la pâte, *paste, dough*

la cuisson, *cooking, baking*

le pétrin, *kneading trough*

le four, *oven*

pétrir, *knead*

impatiemment, *impatiently*

Pierre, *Peter*

le lendemain, *day after, next day*

rassis, *stale (of bread)*

le levain, *yeast*

la servante, *servant*

lever, *rise*

la tartine, *slice*

oser, *dare*

la veille, *evening before*

le pain de ménage, *homemade bread; une tartine de beurre*, *a slice of bread and butter;* **être en visite**, *be on a visit;* **être dans la joie**, *be in (great) glee;* **cela ne fait rien**, *that makes no difference, doesn't matter;* **au moins**, *at least;* **mais si**, *yes (it does, yes, yes, etc.)*

A. Continue: 1. J'attends depuis dix jours. 2. J'y étais depuis trois semaines. 3. Il y a (voici or voilà) un mois que j'attends une lettre. 4. J'ai travaillé pendant toute la soirée. 5. C'est à Londres que je l'ai vu pour la première fois, . . . tu. 6. Je me serai trompé(e), peut-être. 7. Je ne saurais le croire.

B. (*Pain de ménage*) 1. Pierre et Jacqueline sont en visite chez tante Julie depuis quelques jours. 2. Depuis le moment de leur arrivée ils sont dans la joie. 3. Le lendemain de leur arrivée ils ont vu faire du beurre. 4. Un jour ils ont assisté à la cuisson du pain. 5. Ils attendaient impatiemment depuis la veille. 6. Le moment arriva. 7. La vieille servante Célestine avait mis la farine et le levain dans le pétrin. 8. La pâte commençait à lever. 9. Les enfants voulaient tout voir. 10. "Laissez-nous approcher; nous n'y toucherons pas." — 11. Mais non, mes enfants. 12. Quand même vous n'y toucheriez pas je n'oserais pas vous laisser approcher. — 13. Je crois, dit Pierre, que cela ne ferait rien. — 14. Mais si, mon petit homme, cela ferait beaucoup. 15. Tu ne dois pas y regarder." 16. Plus tard Célestine pétrit la pâte. 17. Elle en fait des pains qu'elle met au four pour les faire cuire. 18. Et après cela elle les sort du four. 19. Les enfants en voudraient pour faire des tartines de beurre. 20. Mais le pain frais est moins bon que le pain rassis. 21. Il vaudrait mieux attendre au moins vingt-quatre heures.

C. (*Oral on B.*)

D. 1. The two children are on a visit at their aunt's. 2. They have been in [great] glee for several days. 3. Since their arrival they have been very happy. 4. They wanted to be present at the baking of the homemade bread. 5. The old servant had brought the kneading trough into the kitchen. 6. The flour and yeast had been in it since the evening before. 7. The next day the dough had begun to rise. 8. The children had waited impatiently. 9. Celestine, why won't you let us come near? 10. You may come near (*reflex.*), but you mustn't touch the dough. 11. That will make no difference, said Pierre. 12. We should like to have a slice of bread and butter. 13. Give us a piece when you take the bread out of the oven. 14. It will be too fresh; I shouldn't dare to give you it. 15. Yes, do; give it to us now. 16. No, no, not now. 17. Stale bread is better for children.

E. 1. They had long been saying that that would happen. 2. We have been wondering for some days where you were. 3. This castle

has existed since the 14th century. 4. It was in that century that it was built. 5. It had been freezing for three days. 6. It froze for three days. 7. It had been snowing, which was very good for the sports. 8. How long had you been there when we came? 9. More than three weeks. 10. How long did your uncle remain in America? 11. He remained there more than ten years. 12. Could you tell me what time (*l'heure qu'*) it is?

F. Turn the following into the ordinary form of conditional sentence (cf. § 113): 1. Il le dirait que je ne le croirais pas. 2. La maison serait dix fois plus belle que je ne l'achèterais pas.

LESSON LXXIV

192. *Asseoir, 'seat'; suffire, 'suffice,' 'be sufficient'*

asseoir	asseyant	assis	assieds	assis
suffire	suffisant	suffi	suffis	suffis

Like *asseoir*: *s'asseoir, sit, sit down, be seated.*

EXERCISE LXXIV

le fauteuil, armchair	suffisant, conceited
prier, pray, beg, ask	

A. (Oral.) Continue: 1. Je m'assieds (assois). 2. Je me suis assis(e). 3. Assieds-toi près du feu. 4. Je m'assiérai près de la fenêtre. 5. Il désire que je m'asseye (assoie), . . . tu. 6. Je suffis (suffisais). 7. Je suffirai à cet ouvrage. 8. Il ne croit pas que j'y suffise. 9. Que je suffisse.

B. 1. How conceited he is! 2. That is sufficient (*pres.*). 3. Let that suffice. 4. That will be sufficient. 5. We shall be sufficient for everything. 6. Sit down (*or be seated*) if you please. 7. I used to sit there. 8. We often sit there. 9. They will not sit there. 10. He sat down in the armchair. 11. Let us sit down. 12. The ladies have not sat down. 13. She was sitting in an armchair.

C. 1. It was necessary that we should sit down. 2. We shall not sit down. 3. Two francs will be sufficient. 4. Mary sat down beside the fire. 5. That had to (use *fallait*) suffice. 6. The children will sit down on those chairs. 7. Ask the ladies to sit down. 8. We were asked to sit down. 9. When you (*tu*) are in the room you will sit down. 10. Let no one sit there. 11. Do not sit beside the window. 12. Everybody is seated.

LESSON LXXV

193. Remarks on Subjunctive. — 1. Review §§ 142–148, and note that many expressions, ordinarily followed by the indicative, require the subjunctive whenever doubt is implied (usually by interrogation, negation or condition):

Je ne crois pas que ce soit lui.	<i>I don't think it is he.</i>
Espérez-vous qu'il réussisse?	<i>Do you expect he will succeed?</i>
Si je prétendais qu'il eût tort.	<i>If I asserted that he was wrong.</i>
But: Je crois que c'est lui.	<i>I think it is he.</i>
J'espère qu'il réussira.	<i>I hope he will succeed.</i>

(a) Such are: *s'apercevoir, sentir, voir (perceiving); croire, espérer, penser, trouver (thinking); être certain, être probable, savoir (knowing); avouer, dire (declaring), etc.*

(b) After questions, the indicative usually stands if the answer *yes* is expected, and the subjunctive if *no* is expected.

(c) Also, when the statement of the subordinate clause is assumed to be a fact, the indicative is used, e.g. *S'il savait que tu es ici, If he knew that you are here; Savez-vous qu'il est arrivé? Do you know that he has come?*

2. **Il semble** (more or less doubt being implied) regularly requires the subjunctive, while **il me (te, etc.) semble** (= *je crois, je pense*) takes the indicative:

Il semble qu'elle ait tort.	<i>It seems that she is wrong.</i>
Il me semble qu'elle a tort.	<i>It seems to me she is wrong.</i>

(a) **Il me semble** also comes under 1, above.

3. The present subjunctive of **savoir** is sometimes used to denote deferential statement in a principal sentence:

Je ne sache rien de si bon.	<i>I know of nothing so good.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------------------

4. The pluperfect subjunctive stands exceptionally for the pluperfect indicative in an *if* clause, and for the conditional anterior in a *result* clause (cf. § 113):

S'il eut (= avait) su cela, il ne l'eut (= aurait) pas dit. *If he had known that, he would not have said it.*

5. The subjunctive is used after *que* replacing a conjunction requiring the subjunctive (cf. § 147), and also after *que* replacing *si = if*:

Venez que (= afin que, pour que) *Come, in order that I may see you.*
ie vous voie.

Si j'y vais et que je le voie. *If I go, and if I see him.*

EXERCISE LXXV

la bibliothèque, bookcase	la mode, fashion
le (la) camarade, comrade, companion	probable, probable
commander, order	le rideau, curtain
la commode, chest of drawers, bureau	serrer, press, put away
l'ébéniste, m., cabinet-maker	le store, (window) blind
la gravure, engraving	le tapis, carpet, tablecloth (coloured)
le miroir, mirror	la toilette, dressing table
	le travail, work

à la mode, *in fashion, fashionable; faire visite à, to visit; de sorte que, so that*

A. Continue: 1. Je crois que cela est vrai. 2. Je ne crois pas que ce soit vrai. 3. Il est certain que j'en aurai besoin. 4. Est-il certain que j'en aie besoin? 5. Il croit que c'est moi, . . . toi. 6. S'il espère que je réussisse. 7. Il est probable que je partirai demain. 8. Est-il probable que je le sache? 9. Il semble que j'aie besoin d'un tapis. 10. Il me semble que j'en ai besoin.

B. Give the correct form of the verb in italics: 1. Je ne dis pas que ce *être* vrai. 2. Espérez-vous qu'ils y *être* demain? 3. J'espère qu'ils y *être*. 4. Je n'espère pas qu'il *venir*. 5. N'espérez-vous pas qu'il *venir*? 6. Il leur semble que cela *être* ainsi. 7. Il semble qu'il *avoir* besoin de meubles. 8. Attendez que je le *faire*.

C. 1. Paul croit avoir besoin de meubles pour sa chambre. 2. Sa mère et lui vont chez l'ébéniste en commander. 3. Paul croit qu'il lui faut un lit neuf. 4. "Mais, crois-tu, dit sa mère, que cela te soit nécessaire?" — 5. Oui, maman, l'ancien n'est plus à la mode. 6. Il me semble aussi que j'ai besoin d'un fauteuil. — 7. Tu crois? Moi, je ne pense pas que tu en aies besoin. 8. Nous mettrons trois ou quatre chaises dans ta chambre, de sorte que tes camarades puissent s'asseoir quand ils te feront visite, et cela suffira. — 9. J'espère au moins que j'aurai une table de travail et une petite bibliothèque. — 10. Oui, mon enfant. 11. Il est clair que tu as besoin de ces choses-là. 12. Je crois qu'il te faudra aussi une commode pour serrer ton linge. 13. Mais je ne crois pas que tu aies besoin d'une toilette. 14. Il faut aussi que nous garnissions ta chambre de quelques gravures et d'un miroir. — 15. Ne trouves-tu pas aussi que j'ai besoin d'un tapis pour le parquet et d'un autre pour ma table? — 16. C'est vrai. 17. Il te faut aussi un store et des rideaux pour ta fenêtre."

D. (*Oral on C.*)

E. 1. We think we need new furniture. 2. These chairs are not fashionable now. 3. I do not think you need a new bed. 4. It seems to us that we need a bookcase to put our books in (use *y*). 5. I hope you will have an armchair. 6. We shall order one, so that you may sit down when you visit us. 7. It is not certain that we need a carpet for the floor. 8. Do you think you need a table-cloth for your table? 9. I hope my mother will adorn my room with a few engravings. 10. I think you will need a mirror. 11. I shall need a window blind and curtains also. 12. Put away your linen in the drawers. 13. We shall put our books in the bookcase.

F. 1. Sit down that I may be able to speak to you. 2. We hope our comrades will come by the first train. 3. I do not think they will come early. 4. Is it not probable that the train will be late? 5. All the trains have been late for several days. 6. Is it certain that you leave this afternoon? 7. It is probable that I shall. 8. But perhaps I shall not leave before to-morrow. 9. You don't think I need a dressing table, do you? 10. Yes, I do (*mais si*), and I think you need a bureau and a study table. 11. I must order them at the

cabinet-maker's. 12. If they knew I was (am) here, they would pay me a visit. 13. Don't they know you have come? 14. Draw near that I may hear you better. 15. Do you know who has just come?

LESSON LXXVI

194. *Offrir, 'offer'; souffrir, 'suffer,' 'endure'*

offrir	offrant	offert	offre	offris
souffrir	souffrant	souffert	souffre	souffris

EXERCISE LXXVI

le malheur, misfortune *souffrant, ailing, not (very) well*

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Je souffre (souffrais) beaucoup. 2. Je ne souffrirai pas cela. 3. Je lui offre de l'argent. 4. Il faut que je souffre cela. 5. Souffre que cela se fasse. 6. Il fallait que je lui offrisse la main. 7. J'en ai beaucoup souffert. 8. Offre-lui ce que tu as, . . . nous. 9. Les malheurs que j'ai soufferts, . . . tu.

B. 1. He is always ailing. 2. They have suffered a great deal. 3. We will not endure that. 4. Let us offer to (*de*) help them. 5. Suffer us to say that. 6. He had to endure it. 7. He offered (*p. def.*) me his hand. 8. We have offered them money. 9. Let them offer us that. 10. I have suffered a great misfortune. 11. We shall offer them what we have. 12. We offer you everything. 13. What place have you offered him?

C. 1. Nobody can suffer him. 2. I did not offer (*p. def.*) him any wine. 3. Have you offered them bread? 4. Offer him a cup of tea. 5. You had to suffer that, hadn't you? 6. Do not suffer him to speak. 7. Do not offer them what you have. 8. They suffer their misfortunes without saying anything. 9. Our friends suffered nothing. 10. We offered (*p. def.*) them all (that which) we had. 11. We used to suffer a great deal because of that. 12. You will never suffer for that. 13. If you knew the misfortunes I have suffered.

LESSON LXXVII

195. Infinitive or Subjunctive. — The subjunctive is often avoided by the use of an infinitive (cf. § 156, note 1), thus:—

1. With verbs taking an indirect personal object:

Je conseille à ma fille de lire ces livres-ci. *I advise my daughter to read these books.*

Je lui défends de lire ceux-là. *I forbid her to read those.*

(a) Such verbs are: conseiller, défendre, demander, dire, écrire, ordonner, permettre, reprocher, etc.

2. With verbs taking a direct personal object:

Je l'ai priée de monter. *I asked her to go up.*

Cela les empêche de sortir. *That prevents them from going out.*

(a) Such verbs are: empêcher, prier, remercier, etc.

3. Observe also the construction with two objects:

Je le lui reproche. *I reproach him (her) for it.*

Je le lui demande. *I ask him (her) for it.*

Je le remercie de sa bonté. *I thank him for his kindness.*

Je l'en remercie. *I thank him for it.*

Je vous en prie. *I beg you to do (etc.) so.*

EXERCISE LXXVII

s'adresser, apply	ennuyer, annoy, trouble
l'ardeur, f., ardour, warmth	le jeu, game, play
l'attention, f., attention	la loi, law
attirer, attract, call	méchant, bad, naughty
le bien, good (noun)	modérer, moderate
se conduire, irreg., conduct one-self	permettre, irreg., permit
la conduite, conduct	peut-être, perhaps
conseiller, advise	la police, police
corriger, correct	préférer, prefer
défendre, defend, forbid	protéger, protect
élèver, bring up	reprocher, reproach, tax
mal élevé, rude, impolite, ill-mannered; père de famille, father (of a family)	sinon, if not, otherwise

A. Continue: 1. Le roi ordonne que je fasse cela. 2. Le roi m'ordonne de faire cela. 3. Elle me l'a conseillé. 4. La loi défend que je fasse cela. 5. La loi me le défend. 6. Il est défendu que je fasse cela. 7. Il m'est défendu de faire cela.

B. 1. Notre voisin a des enfants très mal élevés. 2. Je vais lui demander de les corriger. 3. Je devrais lui reprocher de manquer à son devoir. 4. Un bon père empêche ses enfants de se conduire mal. 5. Tout le monde devrait conseiller aux enfants d'être sages. 6. On ne devrait jamais permettre à personne d'être méchant. 7. Le bon père de famille ordonne à ses enfants de faire toujours le bien. 8. Si je disais à notre voisin de modérer l'ardeur de ses enfants dans leurs jeux, le ferait-il? 9. Peut-être. Sinon, dois-je écrire à la police de me protéger? 10. La police défend aux enfants d'ennuyer le public, mais je n'aime pas m'adresser à elle. 11. Je préfère prier encore une fois mon voisin de corriger ses enfants. 12. Il me remerciera peut-être d'avoir attiré son attention sur leur conduite.

C. (Oral on B.)

D. 1. Are your friend's children ill-mannered? 2. Yes, and we have often asked him to correct them. 3. We have taxed him with failing in his duty. 4. A good father does not permit his children to be naughty. 5. Everybody should advise them to do good. 6. Does not a good father always order his children to be good? 7. Does your friend moderate his children's ardour in their games? 8. Did you tell that little boy to be good? 9. Shall I write to the police to protect you? 10. I shall ask my friend to correct his children. 11. I beg you not to apply to the police.

E. 1. I thanked her for having called my attention to (*sur*) their conduct. 2. I thanked her for it. 3. It is forbidden to annoy the public. 4. You should not conduct yourself badly. 5. Ask your father to come with you. 6. Permit me to say to you that I do not like your conduct. 7. Do you advise your brother to go away? 8. No, I advise him to stay. 9. He has conducted himself badly, but he will not be naughty any more (*plus*). 10. If you are ill-mannered, you will attract (the) attention to yourself. 11. Take some of these pears, I beg of you. 12. I thank you for them.

LESSON LXXVIII

196. Agreement of Past Participle. — All cases of agreement of the past participle depend on the general principles already stated (§§ 49, 120), but observe the following:

La belle journée qu'il a fait!	<i>What a fine day we have had!</i>
La lettre que j'ai voulu écrire.	<i>The letter I wished to write.</i>
La dame que j'ai entendue chanter.	<i>The lady that I heard sing.</i>
La chanson que j'ai entendu chanter.	<i>The song that I heard sung.</i>
Les médecins qu'il a fait venir.	<i>The doctors he sent for.</i>

- (a) The past participle of an impersonal verb is invariable, Ex. 1.
- (b) In verbal phrases when an infinitive governs a preceding direct object, the past participle is invariable, Ex. 2; but note Il nous a priés d'y aller.
- (c) Entendu, vu, laissé agree if the following infinitive has active force, but are invariable if it has passive force, Ex. 3 and 4.
- (d) Fait + infinitive is invariable, Ex. 5 (cf. 172, 1, a).

NOTE. — When the direct object is an expression of quantity or a collective, the past participle regularly agrees with the prevailing sense (cf. § 160), but it has been thought unnecessary to include examples in an elementary text-book.

EXERCISE LXXVIII

la chanteuse, singer	la pièce, piece (of money)
embrasser, embrace, kiss	le pouls, pulse
exquis, exquisite, delicious	ravissant, charming
femme docteur, woman doctor, lady physician	le régime, regimen, diet
le gâteau, cake	le remède, medicine
s'informer (de), inquire (about)	la santé, health
la merveille, wonder	sonner, ring
la pâtisserie, pastry	tâter, feel
le pharmacien, chemist, druggist	tirer, put out (the tongue)
le (la) pianiste, pianist	la voix, voice

mettre au régime, prescribe diet for, put on diet; faire entrer, show in;
 à merveille, marvellously, wonderfully; comment trouvez-vous cela?
 what do you think of that?

A. Supply the proper form of the past participle of the infinitive in italics: 1. Voilà mes cousins; je les ai *prier* de venir. 2. La belle saison qu'il a *faire*. 3. Les morceaux qu'elle a *vouloir* jouer. 4. C'est ma sœur; nous ne l'avons pas *laisser* partir. 5. C'est la maison que j'ai *voir* bâtir. 6. Ce sont les personnes que j'ai *entendre* sonner. 7. La servante que j'ai *envoyer* chercher le remède.

B. 1. Geneviève est souffrante. 2. Elle s'est enrhumée au concert. 3. Sa cousine Denise vient la voir. 4. Geneviève l'a envoyé chercher ce matin. 5. La femme de chambre l'a entendue sonner, et elle l'a fait entrer. 6. Denise embrasse sa cousine et s'informe de sa santé. 7. "On a fait venir le médecin j'espère. — 8. Oh oui, c'est M^{me} Lecomte, la femme docteur, que ma mère a fait venir. 9. Elle m'a tâté le pouls et m'a fait tirer la langue. 10. Puis elle m'a ordonné un remède que la servante a pris (*got*) ensuite chez le pharmacien. 11. Outre cela elle m'a mise au régime. 12. Je ne dois prendre que du pain et du lait. 13. Pas de gâteaux, pas de pâtisserie pendant trois ou quatre jours. — 14. À propos, comment as-tu trouvé la chanteuse que nous avons entendue chanter au concert? — 15. Elle chante à merveille. — 16. Elle a une voix exquise, n'est-ce pas? 17. Et les deux morceaux que nous avons entendu jouer par le pianiste? — 18. Ils étaient ravissants."

C. (Oral on B.)

D. 1. We caught cold at the theatre. 2. We (*f.*) are not very well to-day. 3. Our cousins Denise and Jeanne have come to see us; we sent for them. 4. The housemaid heard them ring. 5. She has shown them in. 6. They inquired about our health. 7. They asked us if we had had the doctor. 8. It was a woman doctor that my mother sent for. 9. Did she feel your pulse? 10. Yes, and she made me show my tongue. 11. The old servant went to the chemist's to get the medicine. 12. The doctor has prescribed a diet for me (*f.*). 13. I am not to have either cakes or pastry for several days. 14. The singer whom you heard singing at the concert sang wonderfully, did she not? 15. Yes, and the pieces of music we heard played were charming.

E. 1. There are the houses that we saw being built last year. 2. By the way, where are the medicines you sent for? 3. Is it my

cousin (*f.*) whom you have shown in? 4. It is (*she*); I have shown her upstairs (*faire monter*). 5. Who is the lady whom I heard sing at your house yesterday evening? 6. She is an Englishwoman with an exquisite voice. 7. What did you think of the songs she sang? 8. They were charming. 9. She and her sister are still here; we didn't let them go away. 10. We begged them to stay another week (still eight days). 11. My aunt has been put on diet because she has caught a cold. 12. Here is a two-franc piece which you dropped (let fall) when (*en*) going out. 13. I saw it fall, and I picked it up.

LESSON LXXIX

197.

Écrire, 'write'; vivre, 'live'

écrire	écrivant	écrit	écris	écrivis
vivre	vivant	vécu	vis	vécus

Like *écrire*: *décrire, describe*.

EXERCISE LXXIX

le mot, *word, note*
la paix, *peace*

le roman, *novel*
le volume, *volume*

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. J'écris des lettres. 2. Je décrivais mon voyage, tu . . . ton. 3. Je lui écrirai un mot.. 4. Je vis de peu. 5. Je ne lui écris pas. 6. Il faut que je leur écrive. 7. Décris ce que tu as vu. 8. Il fallait que je vécusse seul. 9. Je vivrai de mon travail. 10. Je vivais en paix. 11. J'écrivis des romans.

B. 1. That novel will live. 2. Describe the play to me. 3. I was writing a letter. 4. I wrote him a note. 5. They lived on little. 6. They have to write. 7. We live by (from) our work. 8. If he had a pen, he would write. 9. He had to write. 10. They will describe their travels. 11. Here are the letters I have written. 12. Victor Hugo wrote (*p. def.*) this poem in 1840.

C. 1. He lived almost ninety years. 2. He wrote seventy volumes. 3. She is still living (lives still). 4. You have to write. 5. I do not think he will live long. 6. He thinks that novel will

live. 7. He has described his travels. 8. The poems that he wrote are exquisite. 9. Let us live in peace. 10. They were living in peace with everybody. 11. I wish you may live a long time. 12. Victor Hugo was still living when I was born.

LESSON LXXX

198. Partitives. — 1. Review §§ 25, 28, 29, and observe the following:

N'a-t-il pas des amis?	<i>Has he no friends?</i>
Pas du lait mais du thé.	<i>Not milk but tea.</i>
Il n'a que des dettes.	<i>He has nothing but debts.</i>
C'étaient des grands hommes.	<i>They were great men.</i>
Des petits-fils; des petits pois.	<i>Grandsons; green peas.</i>

(a) With negatives the article remains when the existence of the object referred to is implied, Ex. 1; in contrasts, Ex. 2; with *ne . . . que* = *only*, Ex. 3; and when adjective and noun form a real or virtual compound, Ex. 4 and 5.

2. When *de* forms part of a phrase governing a partitive, the partitive sign is wholly omitted:

Il vit de pain.	<i>He lives on bread.</i>
Il se sert d'encre noire.	<i>He uses black ink.</i>
Un arbre couvert de feuilles.	<i>A tree covered with leaves.</i>

199. Article with Titles. — 1. A title before the name of a person takes the definite article, except in direct address:

La reine Victoria fut aimée.	<i>Queen Victoria was beloved.</i>
Le docteur Ribot est arrivé.	<i>Doctor Ribot has come.</i>
But: Bonjour, docteur Ribot.	<i>Good morning, Dr. Ribot.</i>

2. If the title is preceded by a title of courtesy (e.g. *monsieur*, etc.), it keeps the article in all cases:

Bonjour, monsieur le docteur.	<i>Good morning, doctor.</i>
Son altesse le prince l'a dit.	<i>His Highness the prince said so.</i>

(a) For other titles, see § 211.

200. Apposition. — 1. Appositive nouns used in parenthetical explanation regularly take no article:

L'Avare, comédie de Molière. *The Avare, a comedy by Molière.*
 Paris, fils de Priam. *Paris, (the or a) son of Priam.*

2. Apparent apposition is frequent in expressions like:

L'église (sc. de) Saint-Pierre. *St. Peter's (the church of, etc.).*
 Des meubles (sc. du temps de) *Louis XV furniture.*
 Louis XV.

EXERCISE LXXX

l'appartement, m., <i>suite of rooms,</i> flat	déjeuner, <i>take lunch, lunch</i> le dessert, <i>dessert</i>
l'argenterie, f., <i>silverware</i>	le (la) domestique, <i>servant</i>
le beau-frère, <i>brother-in-law</i>	à droite (sc. main), <i>to or on the right.</i>
le bœuf, ox, <i>beef</i>	l'escalier, m., <i>stairway</i>
la bonne chère, <i>good cheer, good living</i>	à gauche, <i>to or on the left</i>
le bon vivant, ' <i>jolly fellow,' etc.</i>	meubler, <i>furnish</i>
le buffet, <i>sideboard</i>	moderne, <i>modern</i>
le capitaine, <i>captain</i>	Notre-Dame, <i>Notre Dame</i>
le caviar, <i>caviare</i>	rôtir, <i>roast</i>
le confort, <i>comfort</i>	le siège, <i>seat, chair</i>
le corridor, <i>passage, hall</i>	la verrerie, <i>glassware</i>
décorer, <i>decorate, adorn</i>	
être en train de, <i>be occupied in, be busy</i> (Eng. + -ing form); mettre le couvert, <i>set (lay) the table;</i> (en) robe de chambre, <i>in their jackets or skins</i> (of potatoes); les petits pains, <i>breakfast rolls, rolls;</i> les petits pois, <i>green peas</i>	

A. Continue: 1. Je me sers de farine pour faire du pain. 2. J'emploie de la farine. 3. Je le fais avec de la farine. 4. Je le fais de farine. 5. Je vis de pain. 6. Je ne mange que du pain. 7. N'ai-je pas des amis ici? 8. J'ai acheté des meubles Louis XVI.

B. 1. Ma sœur et mon beau-frère habitent un appartement, 125 rue Notre-Dame, à droite de l'église Saint-Pierre. 2. C'est une belle maison avec tout le confort moderne. 3. Même les escaliers et les corridors sont beaux à voir. 4. Mon beau-frère est capitaine et le capitaine Pictet lui fait visite de temps en temps. 5. Tous les deux (or l'un et l'autre) aiment la bonne chère, quoiqu'ils ne soient pas des bons vivants. 6. Le capitaine Pictet vient déjeuner au-

jourd'hui. 7. On est en train de mettre le couvert dans la salle à manger. 8. Cette pièce est meublée avec goût et décorée de jolies gravures du XVIII^e siècle. 9. Les sièges et le buffet sont des meubles Louis XVI. 10. Quand le buffet est garni de vaisselle, d'argenterie et de verrerie il est très beau. 11. Les assiettes et les verres sont sur la table. 12. On va servir du caviar, du bœuf rôti, des pommes de terre (en) robe de chambres, des petits pois et des petits pains. 13. Au dessert on aura du fromage et du café.

C. (Oral.) 1. Où habitez-vous? 2. Décrivez-moi votre appartement. 3. Qui est l'ami de votre beau-frère? 4. Sont-ils des bons vivants? 5. Qui vient déjeuner chez vous aujourd'hui? 6. Que fait-on dans la salle à manger? 7. Décrivez les meubles de cette pièce. 8. Qu'est-ce qu'on va servir au déjeuner? 9. Qu'est-ce que vous prendrez au dessert?

D. 1. We used to live [at number] 75 Lafayette Street. 2. The house was on the left of St. Paul's church. 3. We lived in a flat which hadn't all the modern comfort[s]. 4. The stairway wasn't beautiful. 5. My father was a colonel. 6. Colonel Henri used to visit him from time to time. 7. They are not 'jolly fellows,' but they like good living. 8. The servants are busy setting the table. 9. When the table is adorned with glassware and silverware it is very beautiful. 10. We have some Louis XVI chairs and a side-board of the same century. 11. At the lunch they will have first a hors-d'œuvre. 12. They will be served (use *on*) with roast beef and green peas. 13. At dessert they will have good cheese and black coffee.

E. 1. We use flour to make bread. 2. Use my pen to write your letter. 3. The passages are adorned with engravings of the XVII century. 4. We have Louis XVI furniture in our dining room. 5. We are looking for a house which is well furnished. 6. Queen Victoria was born in 1819. 7. When Captain Lesage used to come to see us he would often lunch with us. 8. My brother-in-law and he liked good living. 9. People use glasses to drink wine. 10. They use cups to drink coffee. 11. Both rose early and took some rolls and coffee with milk. 12. Give me some of the black coffee. 13. This cup is full of coffee. 14. We didn't have any of the good cheese which we bought at Potin's.

LESSON LXXXI

201. *Plaire, 'please'; rire, 'laugh'*

plaire	plaisant	plu	plais	plus
rire	riant	ri	ris	ris

Like *plaire*: *se plaître*, *be pleased, enjoy oneself, like it, etc.*

EXERCISE LXXXI

je vous demande pardon, monsieur, or pardon, monsieur, I beg your pardon, sir

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Je plais (plairai, plus) à tout le monde. 2. Je ne plaisais (plairais) à personne. 3. Je ne lui plais pas. 4. Je m'y plaisais beaucoup. 5. Il ne croit pas que je leur plaise. 6. Pourquoi est-ce que j'en ris? 7. Ne ris pas des malheureux. 8. Il faut que je rie. 9. J'ai beaucoup ri. 10. Je riais souvent en classe.

B. 1. That pleases (will please) him. 2. The play pleased (would please) nobody. 3. Do you like it in the country? 4. I do. 5. Come when it pleases you. 6. At what are you laughing? 7. I beg your pardon, I didn't laugh. 8. Don't laugh at the misfortunes of others. 9. They always laughed at us. 10. We shall laugh if it (that) pleases us. 11. They laughed very much at it.

C. 1. The architect desired the plan to please you. 2. We never liked it in the country. 3. I don't think you will enjoy it there. 4. He tries to please everybody. 5. He will please nobody. 6. That child was always laughing and singing. 7. Why do you laugh at that? 8. I don't wish you to laugh at it. 9. Why did you laugh a moment ago? 10. It wasn't necessary that he should laugh. 11. I always have to laugh when I see that.

LESSON LXXXII.

202. Omission of Article. — 1. The article is omitted in many expressions made up of a verb + a noun:

J'ai soif; il a bien faim. *I am thirsty; he is very hungry.*

Je vous demande pardon. *I beg your pardon.*

(a) Examples are: *avoir besoin, need; avoir chaud (froid), be warm (cold); avoir faim (soif, sommeil), be hungry (thirsty, sleepy); avoir raison (tort), be right or be in the right (wrong); faire chaud (froid), be warm (cold); faire attention, pay attention; prendre garde, take care; very, quite, are expressed commonly by bien (sometimes très).*

(b) Compare also the omission of the article in prepositional phrases like *après (le) dîner, after dinner; avec plaisir, with pleasure*, and many others.

2. Contrary to English usage, *un (une)* stands before an abstract noun adjectively modified:

Il montra un soin extrême. *He showed extreme care.*

Une patience à toute épreuve. *Patience equal to anything.*

(a) Compare also expressions like *J'ai une soif ardente, I have (a) burning thirst; Il fait un froid terrible, It is terribly cold.*

203. Article for Possessive Adjective. — 1. The definite article is frequently so used when no ambiguity results, but is not always obligatory:

Donnez-moi la main. *Give me your hand.*

Il a perdu la vie. *He has lost his life.*

Elle s'est déchiré la main. *She has torn her hand.*

Son (le) bras lui fait mal. *His arm hurts him.*

2. So also with *avoir mal* (*froid, chaud, etc.*, cf. § 202), and in phrases of description with *avoir*:

J'ai mal à la tête (aux dents). *I have a headache (toothache).*

Avez-vous froid aux mains? *Are your hands cold?*

Il a le nez long (or un long nez). *He has a long nose.*

3. When the object possessed is singular as regards each possessor, it regularly remains singular, even though more than one possessor is denoted:

Ils ont perdu la vie. *They have lost their lives.*

Ils ont ôté leur chapeau. *They took off their hats.*

Ils sont entrés, le chapeau sur la tête. *They came in with their hats on their heads.*

204. Observe the constructions in the following:

Il fait froid.	<i>It (the weather) is cold.</i>
Il fait froid ce matin.	<i>It's a cold morning.</i>
Il fait froid dans cette salle.	<i>It is cold in this hall (this hall is cold).</i>
J'ai froid.	<i>I am cold.</i>
L'eau est froide.	<i>The water is cold.</i>
J'ai froid aux mains.	<i>My hands are cold.</i>
Vous avez les mains froides.	<i>Your hands are cold.</i>

EXERCISE LXXXII

ardent, <i>ardent, burning</i>	l'ordonnance, <i>f., prescription</i>
bonsoir, <i>good evening (night)</i>	le pore, <i>pore</i>
le corps, <i>body</i>	rétabli, <i>restored (in health), well again</i>
la douleur, <i>pain</i>	le rhume, <i>cold</i>
élevé, <i>high</i>	secouer, <i>shake</i>
éternuer, <i>sneeze</i>	le séjour, <i>sojourn, stay</i>
garder, <i>keep</i>	la température, <i>temperature</i>
la gorge, <i>throat</i>	terrible, <i>terrible</i>
gravement, <i>gravely</i>	le thermomètre, <i>thermometer</i>
la grippe, ' <i>grippe, influenza</i>	tousser, <i>cough</i>
humide, <i>damp</i>	transpirer, <i>perspire</i>
le midi, <i>south</i>	

cette dent me fait mal, *this tooth pains (hurts) me; j'ai un mal de dents terrible, I have a dreadful toothache; comment allez-vous? how are you? comment ça va-t-il?* (fam.), *how are you? ça va mal* (fam.), *I am not (very) well; prenez garde à vous, take care of yourself; faire une ordonnance, write (give) a prescription; qu'avez-vous? what is the matter with you?*

- A. 1. Depuis quelque temps il fait trop froid et trop humide.
2. Beaucoup de gens ont des rhumes. 3. Moi j'ai pris la grippe.
4. J'ai mal à la tête et à la gorge. 5. Je tousse et éternue beaucoup.
6. J'ai des douleurs par tout le corps. 7. Les bras et les jambes me font bien mal. 8. J'ai un mal de dents terrible. 9. Je n'ai pas très faim, mais j'ai une soif ardente. 10. J'ai tellement chaud que je transpire par tous les pores. 11. Mon père a envoyé chercher le médecin. 12. Le voilà qui sonne. 13. "Bonsoir, monsieur le docteur. — 14. Bonsoir, Pierre, comment ça va-t-il? — 15. Ça va mal, docteur. 16. Je souffre partout." 17. En me tâ-

tant le pouls il me dit que j'ai les mains bien chaudes. 18. Il me met un thermomètre sous la langue. 19. Il regarde son thermomètre et secoue gravement la tête. 20. "Vous avez la température bien élevée. 21. Prenez garde à vous. 22. Vous garderez le lit quelques jours, n'est-ce pas? 23. Je vous ferai une ordonnance. 24. Quand vous aurez pris le remède vous irez mieux. 25. Puis le temps changera; il fera plus beau. 26. Vous serez bientôt complètement rétabli. 27. Vous pourrez peut-être aussi faire un petit séjour dans le Midi. 28. On guérit souvent en changeant d'air."

B. (*Oral on A.*)

C. 1. The weather has been very damp. 2. You have a cold, haven't you? 3. Yes, and my head is aching. 4. My sister has a sore throat. 5. Everybody is sneezing and coughing. 6. My father is ill. 7. What is the matter with him? 8. He has taken the 'grippe.' 9. He has pains all over his body. 10. These children are very cold. 11. They were playing in the yard and their hands and feet are cold. 12. They are very hungry and very thirsty too.

D. 1. How are you? 2. What is the matter with you? 3. The doctor will put a thermometer under your tongue. 4. Take care of yourself. 5. You must keep to your bed. 6. You will be better to-morrow. 7. Your hands are hot, but your temperature is not very high. 8. Here is a prescription I have written (*faire*) for you. 9. This medicine will do you good (*du bien*). 10. Make a short (*petit*) stay in the south and you will be completely restored [to health]. 11. You are quite right; I shall do so (it). 12. I shall get well by changing climate.

E. 1. It is warm in winter in the south of France. 2. When I was skating my feet were very cold. 3. I suffered a great deal from it. 4. But I am quite warm now. 5. I have a bad (use *bien*) headache, and I have a toothache also. 6. Our professor has a sore throat and must keep [to] the house. 7. Are you too warm? 8. No, I am too cold. 9. When we are hungry we eat slices of bread and butter. 10. If we are thirsty, we like water better than wine. 11. I am terribly thirsty. 12. Give me a glass of water, if you please.

F. 1. It was so cold that I had to put on warmer clothes. 2. If you are cold, take a cup of hot coffee. 3. You said it was warmer

to-day, but I think you are wrong. 4. It is colder. 5. I beg your pardon; I am right. 6. Monkeys have long arms and small heads. 7. Those bad boys entered the classroom with their hats on their heads. 8. My father almost lost his life in a railway accident. 9. He has (is) not completely recovered yet. 10. His arm hurts him still.

LESSON LXXXIII

205.

Tenir, 'hold'

tenir	tenant	tenu	tiens	tins
-------	--------	------	-------	------

(a) *Tenir* is conjugated precisely like *venir* (cf. § 167).

Like *tenir*: *appartenir*, *belong*; *obtenir*, *obtain*; *contenir*, *contain*.

Like *venir*: *devenir*, *become* (*of*).

EXERCISE LXXXIII

la permission, <i>permission</i>	tenir de, <i>take after</i>
----------------------------------	-----------------------------

le porte-monnaie, <i>purse</i>	
--------------------------------	--

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Qu'est-ce que je deviendrai (deviendrais)? 2. Je suis devenue heureuse. 3. Je devenais très riche. 4. Ma mère désire que je devienne plus sage, . . . tu. 5. J'obtiens (obtins) ainsi un bon prix. 6. J'obtiendrai (obtiendrais) la permission d'y entrer. 7. J'appartiens à cet endroit.

B. 1. The boxes contained pencils and pens. 2. A glass containing milk was on the table. 3. This purse contains all my money. 4. They have become very poor. 5. What has become of him (her)? 6. What has become of my pens? 7. To whom did that castle belong? 8. I ask [for] what belongs to me. 9. Some pictures belonging to this artist have been stolen. 10. What price will you obtain?

C. 1. This young man has become [a] doctor. 2. What will (would) become of us? 3. This field belonged to my father's property. 4. It will become my property when my uncle dies. 5. They say that living will become dearer. 6. We shall obtain (the) permission to stay. 7. He held the letter in his hand. 8. I wish that you may become happier. 9. The son takes after his father. 10. I hope the letter will contain money. 11. Don't hold your pen like that.

LESSON LXXXIV

206. Adjectives and Nouns. — 1. Review § 34, and observe:

causeur, m., causeuse, f., *chatty* (adj.), *a chatty person* (noun)

flatteur, m., flatteuse, f., *flattering* (adj.), *a flatterer* (noun)

créateur, m., créatrice, f., *creative* (adj.), *a creator* (noun)

(a) When a corresponding present participle exists, -eur of nouns and adjectives becomes -euse in the feminine, Ex. 1 and 2 (cf. causant, flattant); otherwise -teur becomes -trice in the feminine, Ex. 3.

2. The feminine of many nouns is formed like that of adjectives of the same ending:

écolier, -ère, *schoolboy*

instituteur, -trice, *teacher*

paysan, -anne, *peasant*

citadin, -e, *inhabitant of the town*

207. Agreement of Adjectives. — Review § 14, and observe the following special cases: —

1. Adjectives used as adverbs are regularly invariable:

Ces roses sentent bon.

These roses smell sweet.

2. Nouns serving as adjectives of colour are invariable:

Des robes lilas (citron).

Purple (lemon-coloured) dresses.

(a) But rose, cramoisi, pourpre, agree like adjectives.

3. A very few adjectives are always invariable:

Vingt livres sterling.

Twenty pounds sterling.

4. With avoir l'air, the adjective agrees either with air (m.), or with the subject (d'être being expressed or implied):

Elle a l'air doux.

She has a gentle air (appearance).

Elle a l'air (d'être) douce.

She seems or looks gentle.

(a) Either expression may be used without distinction.

5. The peculiar agreement with gens:

Les vieilles gens sont positifs.

Old people are practical.

Toutes les vieilles gens.

All the old people.

Tous les (ces) habiles gens.

All the (those) clever people.

Les gens sont tous ici.

The people are all here.

- (a) All forms agreeing with **gens** are plural.
 (b) An adjective is feminine before **gens** and masculine after it, Ex. 1 and 2, but cf. c.

(c) *All* = toutes only when separated from **gens** by an adjective variable for the feminine, Ex. 2; otherwise *tous*, Ex. 3 and 4.

NOTE.— *Jeunes gens* = *young men*, *young people*, is always masculine, and also **gens** used as an antecedent, e.g. *Les gens qui sont venus*.

208. Comparatives. — 1. Review § 56, and contrast the French and English forms of the following:

De plus en plus violent.	<i>More and more violent.</i>
Plus il devient riche moins il est	<i>The richer he becomes the less generous he is.</i>
généreux.	
Il en sera d'autant plus riche.	<i>He will be the richer for it.</i>
Le carnage fut d'autant plus grand	<i>The carnage was the greater because</i>
qu'ils étaient plus nombreux.	<i>they were more numerous.</i>

2. A finite verb completing a comparison is preceded by **ne**, unless the preceding verb is negative:

C'est meilleur que je ne croyais.	<i>It is better than I thought.</i>
Ce n'est pas si mal que je croyais.	<i>It is not so bad as I thought.</i>

3. When **aussi** (or **si**) is omitted, **comme** (not **que**) is used:

Un roi riche comme Crésus.	<i>A king as rich as Cræsus.</i>
----------------------------	----------------------------------

EXERCISE LXXXIV

agricole, <i>agricultural</i>	gai, <i>gay, merry, cheerful</i>
l'air, m., <i>air, appearance</i>	horticole, <i>horticultural</i>
le bouquet, <i>bouquet, nosegay</i>	l'instituteur, m., f. —trice, <i>teacher</i>
la bouquettière, <i>flower girl</i>	le lilas, <i>lilac; adj., purple</i>
la boutonnière, <i>buttonhole</i>	nouveau, <i>new, novel</i>
charmant, <i>charming</i>	le parterre, <i>flower garden</i>
le citadin, f. —e, <i>townsman</i>	le produit, <i>product</i>
coiffer, <i>dress the hair (head)</i>	promener, <i>lead or take about</i>
le concours, <i>competition, show</i>	la prospérité, <i>prosperity</i>
doux, <i>gentle, mild</i>	la rose, <i>rose</i>
l'écolier, m., f. —ère, <i>schoolboy (girl)</i>	sérieux, <i>serious</i>
les environs, m., <i>neighbourhood</i>	le signe, <i>sign</i>
coup d'œil, <i>glance, prospect, sight, view; à la (sc. mode) française, in the French style or fashion; neuf, new (not old), nouveau, new, fresh, novel</i>	la tente, <i>tent</i>

A. (Concours agricole et horticole) 1. Tous les braves gens des environs y arrivent à pied ou en voiture. 2. Les paysans y apportent les produits des champs, les paysannes ceux du verger et du parterre. 3. On y amène aussi les bœufs et les vaches. 4. Ils sont au parc à l'ombre. 5. Les vaches ont l'air très douces, n'est-ce pas? 6. Les paysans sont bons pour leurs bêtes et leur donnent à manger. 7. On met les fleurs et les fruits sous des tentes. 8. Les fleurs sentent bon et offrent un coup d'œil charmant. 9. Les pommes ont l'air d'être mûres. 10. Il fait beau et il y a beaucoup de monde. 11. Les citadins, hommes d'affaires, observent les signes de la prospérité du pays. 12. Les citadines cherchent de nouvelles espèces de fleurs ou de fruits. 13. Un instituteur et une institutrice promènent leurs écoliers et leurs écolières pour les instruire. 14. Une jolie bouquetière en robe lilas et coiffée à l'italienne vend des fleurs. 15. Tous les jeunes gens en achètent pour mettre à leur boutonnière. 16. Toutes les vieilles gens s'occupent d'affaires sérieuses.

B. (Oral.) Read A aloud, turning present tenses into the imperfect.

C. 1. The country people of the neighbourhood are coming to the agricultural show. 2. They will bring to it the products of the fields. 3. The oxen and cows will be brought too. 4. And they do not forget the products of the orchard and flower garden. 5. The animals look so gentle. 6. Look at the flowers in (= under) the tents. 7. What a pretty sight! 8. And they smell so sweet! 9. Smell this bouquet. 10. These pears look ripe. 11. It is a new kind of pear. 12. These are business men. 13. They are townsmen. 14. The townswomen hope to find new kinds of roses or of fruits. 15. The teachers (*f.*) will bring their schoolgirls here. 16. All the young men will buy flowers from the flower girls. 17. Do you see that young countrywoman dressed in the Italian fashion? 18. I mean the young woman in [a] purple dress.

D. 1. All the young people are merry. 2. All the old people are more serious. 3. The older you are the more serious you become. 4. These worthy people are kind to everybody. 5. Everybody is kind to them. 6. We observed many signs of prosperity at the horticultural show. 7. The teachers (*m.*) were taking their scholars about (there). 8. They wanted to show them something new.

9. The schoolboys asked their teachers many questions. 10. The schoolgirls admired the flowers. 11. They have bought some pretty ones for their teachers (*f.*). 12. Old people are more serious than young people. 13. I am more serious than I used to be (*l'*). 14. This young countrywoman looks very intelligent. 15. She sold a good many flowers to the young men. 16. The younger one is the more one spends. 17. We become wiser and wiser as we become old. 18. My old friend has become as rich as Croesus in South America.

LESSON LXXXV

209. *Cueillir*, 'pluck,' 'gather'; *ouvrir*, 'open';
tressaillir, 'start,' 'tremble'

<i>cueillir</i>	<i>cueillant</i>	<i>cueilli</i>	<i>cueille</i>	<i>cueillis</i>
<i>ouvrir</i>	<i>ouvrant</i>	<i>ouvert</i>	<i>ouvre</i>	<i>ouvrirs</i>
<i>tressaillir</i>	<i>tressaillant</i>	<i>tressailli</i>	<i>tressaille</i>	<i>tressaillis</i>

Like *ouvrir*: *courrir*, *cover*; *découvrir*, *discover*; *s'ouvrir*, *open* (intr.).

EXERCISE LXXXV

Colomb, *Columbus*

l'exposition, *f.*, *exhibition*

- A. (*Oral.*) *Continue*: 1. Je tressaille (*tressaillais*, *tressaillis*) de joie. 2. J'ouvre (*ouvrals*, *ouvrts*) la malle. 3. Ouvre la porte. 4. Couvre-toi la tête, . . . nous. 5. Je cueille (*cueillais*, *cueillis*) des fleurs pour en faire un bouquet. 6. Les lettres que j'ai ouvertes. 7. J'ouvrirai les fenêtres. 8. Il faut que je les ouvre.

- B. 1. She starts when she hears a noise. 2. They were trembling with fear. 3. Open the door, please. 4. I have opened it. 5. The door opens (*reflex.*). 6. I was opening my letters when he came. 7. I am (*was*) gathering flowers to make a bouquet. 8. Here are the flowers I have gathered for the exhibition. 9. Let her gather the prettiest flowers. 10. When will you pick your apples? 11. The fields were covered with snow.

- C. 1. The windows are not open; open them. 2. I wish him to open his valise. 3. The king in person opened (*p. def.*) the exhibition. 4. On opening the letter she trembled. 5. Cover your head or you will catch cold. 6. The table was covered with papers.

7. She trembles (trembled) with joy. 8. They started at the noise of the train. 9. We are covering the apples with straw. 10. Where are the flowers that you were gathering? 11. Columbus discovered America in 1492.

LESSON LXXXVI

210. Personal Pronoun. — The following special cases of agreement should be noted: —

1. The invariable forms **il** (subject) and **le** (direct object) are used when the antecedent is indefinite or absent:

Y en a-t-il? — Je le crois.	<i>Is there any? — I think so.</i>
Je le ferai si vous le désirez.	<i>I shall do so if you wish (it).</i>
Nous l'avons emporté.	<i>We have carried the day.</i>

2. So also the pronominal adverbs **en** and **y**:

Voyons! où en étions-nous?	<i>Let me see! where were we?</i>
Quoiqu'il en soit.	<i>However it may be.</i>
Votre père y est-il?	<i>Is your father in (at home)?</i>

3. **Le** (**la**, **les**) sometimes has predicative force:

Êtes-vous sa mère? — Je la suis.	<i>Are you his mother? — I am.</i>
Êtes-vous M ^{me} B.? — Je la suis.	<i>Are you Mrs. B.? — I am.</i>
Êtes-vous fatiguée? — Je le suis.	<i>Are you tired? — I am.</i>
Sont-ils soldats? — Ils le sont.	<i>Are they soldiers? — They are.</i>
Soyez braves et je le serai.	<i>Be brave and I shall be so.</i>

(a) If **le** refers to a determinate substantive (not partitive), it agrees, Ex. 1 and 2; otherwise it is invariable, Ex. 3, 4 and 5.

211. Possessives. — Review §§ 15, 16, 83–85, and observe: —

1. The use of the possessive adjective in polite address:

Bonjour mon père (mon colonel).	<i>Good morning, father (colonel).</i>
Mademoiselle votre sœur y est-elle?	<i>Is your sister at home?</i>

(a) In direct address **mon** (**ma**, etc.) commonly precedes a noun of relationship (but not **papa**, **maman**) or the title of a superior officer; **votre** (**vos**) is often preceded by **monsieur** (**madame**, etc.).

2. **Own = propre**, or is expressed by **à + a pronoun**:

Je l'ai fait de mes propres mains.	<i>I did it with my own hands.</i>
C'est mon opinion à moi.	<i>It is my own opinion.</i>
Il a une maison à lui.	<i>He has a house of his own.</i>

3. Ambiguity is sometimes avoided by using *à*, thus:

Son père à lui (*à elle*). *His (her) father.*

4. The possessive pronoun may be used absolutely:

Je ne demande que le mien. *I ask only what is mine.*

Les miens. *My family (friends, party, etc.).*

212. Relative Pronoun. — 1. For the general rules, see §§ 92–98.

2. Qui without antecedent means *he who, the one(s) who, those who*, and when repeated *some . . . others*:

Qui s'excuse s'accuse. *He who excuses himself accuses himself.*

Qui d'un côté qui de l'autre. *Some on one side some on the other.*

3. Observe de quoi = “ce qui est nécessaire pour”:

Il a de quoi vivre. *He is well off.*

Donnez-moi de quoi écrire. *Give me something to write with.*

Merci! — Il n'y a pas de quoi. *Thanks! — Don't mention it (etc.).*

EXERCISE LXXXVI

l'achat, m., <i>purchase</i>	faible, <i>weak</i>
l'avoine, f., <i>oats</i>	la ferme, <i>farmhouse</i>
la basse-cour, <i>farmyard</i>	le foin, <i>hay</i>
la charrue, <i>plough</i>	l'hectare, m., <i>about 2½ acres</i>
comprendre, irreg., <i>understand</i>	le labour, <i>ploughing</i>
le cultivateur, <i>farmer</i>	la moissonneuse, <i>reaping machine</i>
le curé, <i>parish priest, curé</i>	nommer, <i>name, appoint</i>
le droit, <i>right</i>	l'orge, f., <i>barley</i>
l'écurie, f., <i>(horse) stable</i>	pareillement, <i>equally, likewise, also</i>
enchanté, <i>charmed, delighted</i>	le propriétaire, <i>proprietor, landlord</i>
l'existence, f., <i>existence</i>	le républicain, <i>republican</i>
exploiter, <i>exploit, work</i>	la terre, <i>earth, land</i>

ils se serrent la main, *they shake hands*; c'est là ma maison, *that is my house (there)*; il m'en veut, *he has a grudge against me*; je n'y comprends rien, *I don't understand it at all*; où en êtes-vous de . . . ? *how far are you on with . . . ? j'en ai pour . . . , I have . . . worth of it*; ils l'ont emporté, *they have won, have carried the day*; il y va de ma vie, *my life is at stake*; c'en est fait de moi, *it is all over (all up) with me*; que voulez-vous que j'y fasse? *what am I to do? how can I help it?* what can you expect? *etc.*

A. Continue: 1. Je ne lui en veux pas. 2. Je n'y ai rien compris. 3. Où en suis-je de mes préparatifs? . . . tu . . . tes. 4. Est-ce que j'y comprends quelque chose? 5. Je l'emporterai sur eux. 6. C'en est fait de moi, . . . toi. 7. Il y va de ma vie, . . . ta. 8. J'ai une maison à moi, tu . . . à toi. 9. Je ne demande que le mien, tu . . . le tien.

B. (Dans la basse-cour) 1. "Bonjour, monsieur le curé. — 2. Bonjour, mon enfant. Monsieur votre père y est-il? — 3. Je vais l'appeler." 4. M. Legrand, gros cultivateur, arrive. 5. Le curé, récemment nommé, et lui se serrent la main. 6. "Vous êtes monsieur le curé? — 7. Et vous, monsieur Legrand? Je suis enchanté de faire votre connaissance. — 8. Moi pareillement, monsieur le curé. — 9. C'est là votre maison? — 10. Oui, c'est là la ferme. 11. Et plus loin c'est le château du propriétaire. 12. J'exploite quatre-vingts hectares dont la moitié est à lui et l'autre moitié à moi. 13. C'est de la bonne terre. 14. Les miens et moi sommes très heureux. 15. Mais depuis l'achat de mes quarante hectares notre propriétaire nous en veut. 16. Je n'y comprends rien. 17. Quoi! je n'aurais pas le droit d'acheter des terres? — 18. Mais où en êtes-vous de votre récolte, dit le curé. — 19. Nous en sommes aux trois quarts. 20. Le foin, l'avoine et l'orge sont très bons. 21. J'en aurai pour dix mille francs. 22. Voici l'écurie. 23. Les chevaux n'y sont pas. 24. Ils font marcher la moissonneuse dans les blés, et les bœufs sont au labour. 25. Nous labourons en ce moment avec trois charrues. 26. À propos, avez-vous des nouvelles des élections d'hier? — 27. Les républicains l'ont emporté sur les nôtres. 28. Quel dommage! 29. Il y va de l'existence de l'église, et peut-être de la France. 30. C'en est fait de nous. 31. Mais que voulez-vous que nous y fassions? 32. Nous sommes les plus faibles."

C. (Oral on B.)

D. Supply the proper form of le: 1. Etes-vous Anglais? Nous . . . sommes. 2. Etes-vous l'institutrice? Je . . . suis. 3. Sont-ils heureux? Ils . . . sont. 4. Sont-ce de braves gens? Il . . . sont. 5. Etes-vous fatiguées? Nous . . . sommes. 6. Etes-vous la femme du cultivateur? Je . . . suis.

E. 1. The new parish priest met the boy in the barnyard. 2. He asked him if his father was in. 3. He went to get his father. 4. The big farmer and the priest shook hands. 5. The priest was delighted to make his acquaintance. 6. That is the farmhouse behind the trees. 7. That is my landlord's castle. 8. The farmer had land of his own. 9. Half the land he worked belonged to him. 10. He and his [family] were well off. 11. But their landlord had a grudge against them. 12. They couldn't understand it at all. 13. The priest asked him how far he was on with his harvest. 14. The hay, oats and barley were already cut. 15. He had 5000 francs' worth of them. 16. Some of the harvesters were cutting the wheat (*plur.*). 17. We use reaping machines for that. 18. Other men are ploughing the fields with two ploughs. 19. To plough they use oxen. 20. The republicans won at the elections. 21. Our party (§ 211, 4) was beaten, said the priest. 22. But what can you expect?

F. 1. However it may be, I am not satisfied. 2. I shall accompany you if you wish (it). 3. I should be delighted if you did so. 4. He is wrong, but I will not tell him so. 5. I have made this bread with my own hands. 6. Have you a house of your own, or do you live with your relations? 7. You have been very kind to me and mine. 8. I thank you for it. 9. Don't mention it. 10. Our party will carry the day at the elections, I am certain (of it). 11. Are you republicans? 12. We are. 13. Good evening, aunt; are you ready to (a) go? 14. I am; let us go. 15. You seem to have a grudge against me. 16. We have read this work (*ouvrage*), but we don't understand it at all. 17. If you don't change [your] manner-of-living (*vie*), it is all up with you.

LESSON LXXXVII

213. *Craindre*, 'fear'; *joindre*, 'join'; *peindre*, 'paint'

craindre	craignant	croint	croins	craignis
joindre	joignant	joint	joins	joignis
peindre	peignant	peint	peins	peignis

(a) Note the similarity of these verbs in conjugation.

Like *craindre*: *plaindre*, *pity*; *se plaindre*, *complain*.

EXERCISE LXXXVII

L'artiste, m. or f., artist *le portrait, portrait*
malheureux, unfortunate

A. (*Oral.*) *Continue:* 1. Je crains (craignais) de tomber. 2. Ne crains rien. 3. Ne te plains pas de cela. 4. Je peins (peignais) un paysage. 5. Les paysages que j'ai peints . . . que tu. 6. Il voudrait que je lui peigne un tableau, . . . tu. 7. Je joignis les bouts et les cousis ensemble. 8. Je peignis la boiserie. 9. Je plaignais les pauvres par (*in*) ce temps d'hiver.

B. 1. You paint very well. 2. Which (*plur.*) of the pictures have you painted? 3. Pity my misfortunes. 4. I pity you; you are very unhappy. 5. We do not complain. 6. Join the ends of this piece of cloth and sew them together. 7. They feared to miss the train. 8. Would you fear to arrive too late? 9. The fortunate do not always pity the unfortunate.

C. 1. Where is the portrait you were painting? 2. I should like you to paint my portrait. 3. Who painted this landscape? 4. That artist painted (*p. def.*) many landscapes. 5. Let us pity the unfortunate. 6. What does he fear? 7. He will fear to meet us. 8. We feared to say a single word. 9. They were always complaining.

LESSON LXXXVIII

214. *On.* — Review § 38, and observe further:

On est triste quand on a faim. *A man is sad when he is hungry.*

On se demande si, etc. *People wonder whether, etc.*

On perdrait son temps. *You would lose your time.*

Lorsqu'on presse trop un poisson il vous échappe. *When you hold a fish too tightly it escapes you.*

(a) *On* as subject is repeated if necessary, Ex. 1.

(b) The reflexive pronoun corresponding to *on* is *se* and the possessive is *son*, Ex. 2 and 3.

(c) Since *on* serves only as subject, the corresponding objective forms are borrowed from *vous*, etc., Ex. 4.

215. Whoever, whatever. Observe the following:

Qui que tu sois (vous soyez).	<i>Whoever you are (= may be).</i>
Quiconque parlera sera puni(e).	<i>Whoever speaks will be punished.</i>
Une plume quelconque.	<i>Any pen whatever (some, any kind of a pen, some pen or other).</i>
Quelques efforts qu'il fasse.	<i>Whatever efforts he makes (may make).</i>
Quelle qu'en soit la cause.	<i>Whatever (may) be the cause of it.</i>
Quoi que ce soit.	<i>Whatever it be (is, may be).</i>
Quoi que vous fassiez.	<i>Whatever you (may) do.</i>

(a) *Whoever* — qui que with être (subjunctive), Ex. 1, and elsewhere qui-conque, Ex. 2; other equivalents are: *celui qui* (cf. § 82), or *qui* (cf. § 212, 2).

(b) *Any . . . whatever* = *quelconque*, which follows its noun and agrees like an ordinary adjective, Ex. 3.

(c) *Whatever*, preceding a noun = *quelque(s) . . . que* + subjunctive, Ex. 4.

(d) *Whatever*, preceding *to be* = *quel que* + subjunctive, Ex. 5.

(e) *Whatever*, absolutely = *quoi que* + subjunctive, Ex. 6 and 7.

(f) Observe also: *Lequel désirez-vous?* — *N'importe lequel, . . . Any one at all (whatever); Qui doit lire?* — *N'importe qui . . . Any one at all (whatever).*

EXERCISE LXXXVIII

allumer, <i>light, kindle</i>	le fluide, <i>fluid</i>
l'avenir, m., <i>future</i>	le gaz, <i>gas</i>
la bougie, <i>wax candle</i>	l'habitation, f., <i>habitation, dwelling</i>
brûler, <i>burn</i>	l'huile, f., <i>oil</i>
la chaleur, <i>warmth, heat</i>	humain, <i>human</i>
la chandelle, <i>candle</i>	inflammable, <i>inflammable</i>
le charbon, <i>coal</i>	la lampe, <i>lamp</i>
le chauffage, <i>heating</i>	la lumière, <i>light</i>
chauffer, <i>warm, heat</i>	la manière, <i>manner, way</i>
échapper (à), <i>escape (from)</i>	mystérieux, <i>mysterious</i>
l'éclairage, m., <i>lighting</i>	l'obscurité, f., <i>darkness</i>
éclairer, <i>light, illuminate</i>	l'observation, f., <i>observation</i>
l'électricité, f., <i>electricity</i>	le pétrole, <i>petroleum</i>
électrique, <i>electric</i>	

lampe à pétrole, *petroleum lamp; à l'avenir, in the future*

- A. Continue: 1. Qui que je suis j'ai besoin d'amis, . . . tu . . . tu.
 2. Quelques remèdes que je prenne je ne guéris pas, . . . tu . . . tu.

3. Quelle que soit mon habitation il faut la chauffer, . . . ton, etc.
 4. Quoi que je fasse je ne réussirai pas, . . . tu . . . tu. 5. Je pourrai me servir de n'importe quel livre, tu . . . te.

B. 1. Quelles que soient les habitations humaines, il faut les chauffer et les éclairer. 2. Qui que vous soyez vous avez besoin de chaleur et de lumière. 3. Dans l'obscurité il faut allumer quelque chose d'inflammable. 4. Quoi qu'on fasse il faut un chauffage quelconque par le temps froid. 5. Pour se chauffer on brûle du bois ou du charbon. 6. De ce dernier on tire aussi le gaz dont on éclaire les maisons et les rues. 7. On se sert aussi de lampes à pétrole. 8. On peut se demander ce qu'on ferait si le pétrole venait à manquer. 9. De quelle espèce d'huile se servirait-on dans ce cas? 10. De n'importe quelle espèce, car toutes les espèces servent à l'éclairage. 11. On pourrait employer aussi des chandelles et des bougies. 12. Les unes et les autres ont souvent servi à éclairer les maisons. 13. Il y a aussi la lumière électrique. 14. Qu'est-ce que c'est que l'électricité? 15. C'est un fluide remarquable qui échappe à notre observation. 16. De quelque manière qu'on l'emploie elle reste toujours mystérieuse. 17. Nous ne savons pas ce que c'est que l'électricité.

C. (Oral.) 1. Pourquoi faut-il que nos habitations soient chauffées et éclairées? 2. Que nous faut-il pour cela? 3. Que nous faut-il faire dans l'obscurité? 4. D'où tirons-nous le gaz? 5. Qu'est-ce que nous faisons pour nous chauffer? 6. Qu'est-ce que nous faisons du gaz? 7. À quoi servent les lampes à pétrole? 8. Que ferions-nous s'il n'y en avait pas? 9. De quelle autre lumière nous servons-nous? 10. Que dit-on ici de l'électricité? etc.

D. 1. One must heat the houses in cold climates. 2. Whoever we are we must have light. 3. In darkness we must have some kind of a lamp. 4. Whatever the dwellings of men may be they must be lighted. 5. Whatever you do you must have fire in cold weather. 6. We use wood and coal to heat our houses. 7. We use coal to make gas. 8. We light our houses with (*de*) gas. 9. Do you use petroleum lamps in your house? 10. I wonder what people would do without petroleum. 11. Could they use any sort of oil whatever? 12. Yes, and they could use electric light. 13. Do you know what

electricity is? 14. They call it a mysterious fluid, but nobody knows what it is. 15. In whatever way it may be employed (use *on*), it will probably remain mysterious.

E. 1. Heating is necessary in cold climates. 2. Lighting is necessary everywhere. 3. The ancients used oil lamps or candles. 4. Light the gas. 5. Do not light the fire yet. 6. We used to burn wood formerly, but we burn coal now. 7. In the future we shall use electricity to give us heat. 8. We use it now to give us light. 9. Whoever you are, you must work in this country. 10. You can't escape work here. 11. You can't use any wood whatever (use *n'importe*) to make furniture. 12. Whoever comes to see me is well received. 13. Whatever you have to say, say it at once. 14. Whatever be the cause of it, they don't come to see us now.

LESSON LXXXIX

216. Adverbs from Adjectives. — Adverbs of manner are formed from many adjectives by adding **-ment**, thus: —

1. Added directly to adjectives ending in **e, é, i, u:**

facilement, décidément, poliment, absolument

2. Otherwise added to the feminine of the adjective:

pur, purement, doux, doucement, actif, activement

(a) Exceptionally **-e** changes to **-é** on adding **-ment**, e.g. **énorme, énormément, précise, précisément**.

(b) Most adjectives in **-ant, -ent** change **-nt** to **-m**, and add **-ment**, e.g. **constant, constamment, prudent, prudemment**; but not **lentement** and some others.

(c) Observe **gentiment (gentil)**, **brièvement (bref)**, **impunément (impuni)**.

217. Adverbial Distinctions. — 1. **Si = yes** implies contradiction of or dissent from a negative assertion or question:

Je n'irai pas. — Si, si, venez. *I shall not go. — Yes, yes, come.*

Il ne s'en va pas? — Mais si. *He is not going? — Yes, certainly.*

2. Observe the following expressions:

Je dis que oui (non). *I say yes (no).*

Je crois que oui (non). *I think so (not).*

3. Autant = as much (many); tant = so much (many):

J'ai tant d'amis; j'en ai autant que n'importe qui. *I have so many friends; I have as many as anybody.*

4. *Only* = **seulement** (1) when no verb is present, (2) when *only* refers to the subject, (3) or to the verb, (4) or to a *que* clause, and (5) it may be used to strengthen **ne . . . que**; otherwise *only* = **ne . . . que** or **seulement**:

Seulement les braves.

Only the brave.

Seulement mon frère le sait.

Only my brother knows it.

Écoutez seulement.

Only listen.

Il dit seulement qu'il vient.

He only says he is coming.

Il n'a seulement qu'à venir. *He has*

But: Je n'ai que dix francs (*or* j'ai seulement dix francs); Il n'a qu'à demander (il a seulement à demander), etc.

(a) Only referring to the subject, may be turned also by il n'y a que, ce n'est que; only referring to the verb may be turned by the help of faire: Il n'y a que les morts qui ne reviennent pas, *The dead only do not come back*; Elle ne fait que pleurer, *She does nothing but weep*.

(b) Observe also the frequent use in modern French of *ne . . . pas que*, not only, e.g. *Il n'y a pas que les pauvres qui aient besoin d'être aidés*, *It isn't only the poor that need to be helped*.

5. Certain adverbs of place are used like *en*, *y* (cf. §§ 27, 39) as equal to a preposition + a pronoun (of things):

Voyez sur la table, cherchez dessus et dessous. Look on the table, search on it and under it.

(a) Thus: dedans, dehors, dessus, dessous, devant, derrière, etc.

6. Que has adverbial force in exclamations:

Que vous êtes heureux! *How happy you are!*

7. Tout used adverbially agrees like an adjective when immediately preceding a feminine adjective beginning in a consonant or **h** aspirate, but is elsewhere invariable:

Elles étaient toutes pâles et tout agitées. *They were quite pale and very much excited.*

8. Observe the following renderings of *however*, *wherever*, *whenever*:

Quelque riche qu'il soit.	<i>However rich he is (may be).</i>
Quelque bien que vous parliez.	<i>However well you (may) speak.</i>
Toutes bonnes qu'elles sont.	<i>However kind they are (may be).</i>
Si (Pour) bonne qu'elle soit.	<i>However kind she is (may be).</i>
Partout où je le vois.	<i>Wherever I see him.</i>
En quelque lieu que je le voie.	
Où que je le voie.	<i>Whenever I see him.</i>
Toutes les fois que je le vois.	

EXERCISE LXXXIX

l'aiguille, f., <i>needle</i>	oisif, <i>idle</i>
aisé, <i>easy, comfortable, well-to-do</i>	l'oisiveté, f., <i>idleness</i>
le canard, <i>duck</i>	paraître, irreg., <i>appear</i>
les ciseaux, m., <i>scissors</i>	la paresse, <i>laziness</i>
le dé, <i>thimble</i>	paresseux, <i>lazy</i>
dehors, <i>outside</i>	la poule, <i>hen</i>
enseigner, <i>teach</i>	pourtant, <i>however</i>
étrange, <i>strange</i>	la richesse, <i>wealth</i>
le fil, <i>thread</i>	la tâche, <i>task</i>
Hélène, <i>Helen</i>	utile, <i>useful</i>
l'occupation, f., <i>occupation</i>	le vice, <i>vice</i>
je ne saurais qu'en faire, <i>I don't know what to do with it</i>	la volaille, <i>poultry</i>

A. *Continue:* 1. Je crois que non. 2. J'ai autant d'amis que n'importe qui. 3. J'ai tant de foin que je ne saurais qu'en faire, tu . . . tu. 4. Je n'aurai qu'à demander. 5. Je n'avais que peu d'argent. 6. Je l'ai cherché sur la table et dessous. 7. Quelque habile que je sois. 8. Toute fatiguée que je paraiss. 9. Je ne suis pas paresseux.

B. 1. L'oisiveté est (la) mère de tous les vices. 2. Tout aisée qu'elle est M^{me} Legrand désire que sa fille Hélène apprenne à faire les choses utiles. 3. Il n'y a pas que les pauvres qui aient besoin d'apprendre à travailler. 4. Quelque étrange que cela puisse paraître les riches en ont autant besoin que les pauvres. 5. Les pauvres n'ont qu'à gagner leur vie. 6. Les riches ont une tâche encore plus difficile,— celle d'employer leur richesse pour le bien d'autrui. 7. Que la petite Hélène est heureuse! 8. Elle n'a pas que des

amusements pourtant. 9. Elle a ses devoirs, son ouvrage. 10. Elle a déjà son dé, son aiguille, son fil et ses ciseaux. 11. Sa mère, si occupée qu'elle soit, trouve le temps de lui montrer à faire des vêtements. 12. Elle coupe, coud, garnit. 13. Elle a tant à faire qu'elle n'a pas le temps d'être oisive. 14. Non seulement elle a des occupations dans la maison, elle en a aussi dehors. 15. Elle s'occupe de la volaille de la basse-cour. 16. Elle donne à manger aux poules et aux canards. 17. Elle cherche des œufs partout où il y en a.

C. (Oral.) 1. Que dit-on ici de l'oisiveté? 2. Que désirait M^{me} Legrand? 3. La tâche des riches est-elle difficile? 4. Pourquoi dites-vous cela? 5. Que dit-on ici des pauvres? 6. La petite Hélène est-elle oisive? 7. Décrivez ses occupations. etc.

D. 1. The mother would like her daughter to learn useful things. 2. Laziness is a vice. 3. If we (*m.*) are idle we shall learn nothing useful. 4. It is not children only who need lessons. 5. However strange it may seem, everybody needs them. 6. You have as much need of them as I. 7. You and I have only to earn our living. 8. The task of the rich man is still more difficult. 9. He must work as much as we. 10. He must learn to use his wealth for the good of others.

E. 1. How fortunate we are! 2. He who has work to do is fortunate. 3. Little girls should have needles, thread, thimbles and scissors. 4. They must have plenty of duties and occupations. 5. However busy I am, I have time to teach my little sister. 6. I teach her [how] to make clothes. 7. We have so much to do that we haven't time to be idle. 8. We are busy not (*non*) only at school but at home. 9. We have tasks in the house and outside [of it]. 10. We feed the poultry every morning. 11. Whenever we feed the hens and ducks we look for eggs.

F. 1. Is it going to rain? 2. I think so. 3. I think not, for it is windy. 4. Mr. Legrand has as much land as his neighbour. 5. He has never had so much hay as he has (of it) this year. 6. If you need anything, you have only to ask [for it]. 7. Only ask for that and you shall have it. 8. The patient only said that he was tired and that he wanted to sleep. 9. He had been ill for a few days only. 10. I had only five francs, but I gave him the half of it.

G. 1. I looked for my pen on the table and under it, but without finding it. 2. You haven't electric lighting in your house? 3. Oh yes, we have had it for two years. 4. Those boys are lazy; they will not work. 5. However well-to-do you are, you must work. 6. Whenever I meet Mr. Brunot he asks after your health. 7. Wherever you are, never forget that you are a Frenchman. 8. It isn't only my Latin that I find difficult. 9. Only work, and you will finally succeed. 10. I have done nothing but work all my life.

LESSON X●

218. Negation. — 1. Apart from a verb, *no*, *not* = *non*:

L'avez-vous dit? — Non (pas). *Did you say so?* — *No.*
 Non content de cela. *Not satisfied with that.*
 Peut-être que non. *Perhaps not.*

(a) Observe also *pas du tout*, *not at all*.

2. Along with a verb a negation consists regularly of two parts, *ne* + some other word or words, thus:

ne . . . pas, <i>not</i>	ne . . . aucunement	<i>} not at all</i>	ne . . . rien, <i>nothing</i>
ne . . . point, <i>not</i>	ne . . . nullement		ne . . . ni . . . ni,
ne . . . guère, <i>hardly</i>	ne . . . aucun		<i>neither . . . nor</i>
ne . . . jamais, <i>never</i>	ne . . . nul	<i>} no, none</i>	
ne . . . plus, <i>no more</i>	ne . . . pas un		
ne . . . que, <i>only</i>	ne . . . personne	<i>, nobody</i>	

(a) *Point* is usually more emphatic than *pas*, and is less common in ordinary language.

(b) Negation is often denoted by *pas* without *ne*, in familiar language: Ai-je pas dit cela? (= n'ai-je pas dit cela?).

3. *Ne* always precedes the verb, and *pas*, etc., regularly follows it:

Je ne le leur ai pas dit.	<i>I did not tell them so.</i>
Je n'en ai guère eu.	<i>I hardly had any of it.</i>

(a) But *pas* (*point*), usually, and *plus*, often, precede a simple infinitive; they may precede or follow *avoir*, *être*, either when alone or in the infinitive perfect: Il parle de ne pas y aller; J'étais fâché de ne vous avoir pas vu (or de ne pas vous avoir vu).

4. If the verb is omitted, but implied, **ne** is omitted:

Qui est venu? — Personne. *Who has come?* — *Nobody.*
 Est-il venu? — Pas encore. *Has he come?* — *Not yet.*

(a) *Pas* (point) so used may not stand alone.

219. Omission of *pas*, etc. — **Ne** alone serves as a negative:—

1. In a *que* clause after negation:

Il n'y a rien qu'il ne sache. *There is nothing he doesn't know.*

(a) So also after *prendre garde que*, *take care lest* (*that not*), and similar expressions.

2. Sometimes in an *if* clause with *si*:

Si je ne me trompe. *If I am not mistaken.*

3. Sometimes in questions, such as:

Que ne ferais-je pour lui? *What wouldn't I do for him?*
 Que n'attendez-vous? *Why don't you wait?*

4. Always in *je ne saurais*, etc., *je ne sais quoi*:

Ne sauriez-vous m'aider? *Can't you help me?*
 Un je ne sais quoi de noble. *Something indefinitely noble.*

(a) *Pas* is sometimes omitted with *pouvoir* and with other tenses of *savoir*.

5. In a few set expressions, such as:

N'importe; n'avoir garde. *It matters not; not to care.*

220. Redundant **ne**. — In a *que* clause (subjunctive) **ne** is often redundant, as compared with English, thus:—

1. After expressions of fearing (but see *a*, *b*, below):

Je crains qu'il ne vienne. *I fear he will come.*

(a) But after *not fearing*, expressed or implied, **ne** is omitted: *Je ne crains pas qu'il vienne*, *I do not fear he will come*; *Craignez-vous qu'il vienne?* *Do you fear he will come (surely not)?*

(b) When the *not happening* is feared, the full negative form stands in the *que* clause: *Je crains qu'il ne vienne pas*, *I fear he will not come*; *Je ne crains pas qu'il ne vienne pas*, *I do not fear he will not come*.

2. With compound tenses after *il y a*, etc.:

Il y a dix jours que je ne l'ai vu. *I haven't seen him for ten days.*
 Depuis que je ne vous ai vu. *Since I saw you.*

3. After **s'en falloir**, negatively, interrogatively, or with **peu, guère, etc.**:

Peu s'en est fallu que je ne partisse. *I came very near starting.*

4. After **empêcher, éviter, à moins que, avant que** (the latter optionally):

Empêchez qu'il ne sorte.

Prevent him from going out.

J'éviterai qu'on ne me voie.

I shall avoid being seen.

À moins qu'il ne soit malade.

Unless he is ill.

Avant qu'il (ne) parte.

Before he goes.

(a) This **ne** is not infrequently omitted after **empêcher** and **éviter**; after **empêcher** mostly when negative or interrogative.

5. After expressions of doubt or denial, used negatively or with implied negation:

Je ne doute pas que ce ne soit lui. *I don't doubt that it is he.*

Niez-vous que ce ne soit lui? *Do you deny, etc. (surely not)?*

(a) But: **Je doute que ce soit lui; Doutez-vous que ce soit lui?** (question as to a presumed fact).

NOTE.—Rules 4 and 5 are less strictly observed than 1-3, but always use **à moins que . . . ne**; for **ne** with comparatives, see § 208, 2.

EXERCISE XC

l'agent (de police), m., policeman	éviter, avoid
d'avance, beforehand, too soon	la locomotive, locomotive, engine
la bicyclette, bicycle	le moyen, means, way
le (la) bicycliste, bicyclist	le pas, step
caser, put in place, settle	rarement, rarely, seldom
la collision, collision	sain, healthy, sound
le compartiment, compartment	sauf, safe
dépasser, exceed	siffler, whistle
dérailler, go off the track	timide, timid
écraser, crush	le tramway, tramway, tram(car)
escorter, escort	la vitesse, speed

avoir peur de, be afraid of; faire peur à, frighten; avoir peur que, be afraid that, fear that; de peur que, for fear that; faire collision, collide; sain et sauf, safe and sound; se faire écraser, get crushed (run over)

A. 1. Tante Clémence habite la campagne. 2. Elle reçoit l'invitation d'aller voir ses amis de la ville. 3. Il y a des années qu'elle ne les a vus. 4. Ayant rarement voyagé elle est assez timide. 5. Elle a peur de tout. 6. En partant elle a peur de manquer le train et elle arrive à la gare une demi-heure d'avance. 7. Une fois casée dans le compartiment elle a peur que quelque accident n'arrive en route. 8. Il n'y a rien qui ne lui fasse peur. 9. Toutes les fois que siffle la locomotive elle tressaille. 10. Elle craint que le train ne déraille, qu'il ne fasse collision avec un autre, qu'il ne s'arrête pas à la gare où elle doit descendre. 11. Mais elle arrive saine et sauve. 12. Dans les rues ses amis l'accompagnent de peur qu'elle ne se fasse écraser par les tramways. 13. Elle ne sort guère à moins qu'une autre personne ne l'escorte. 14. En sortant seul on ne saurait toujours éviter qu'une voiture vous attrape. 15. Et les bicyclettes, n'y a-t-il pas moyen d'empêcher qu'elles marchent si vite? 16. Je doute qu'on puisse empêcher les bicyclistes de dépasser la vitesse permise par la police, à moins d'avoir des agents à chaque pas. 17. Il est défendu d'aller vite, mais que voulez-vous qu'on y fasse?

B. (*Oral on A.*) 1. *Read aloud sentences 2–13, turning the narrative into the past.* 2. *Give the rule for all cases where **ne** is used alone with a verb.*

C. 1. Our friends haven't seen us for a long time. 2. I haven't travelled much, but I am not timid. 3. I am not afraid of everything. 4. You are not afraid of anything. 5. We were afraid of missing the train. 6. We were afraid you would miss (*pres.*) the train. 7. I fear that an accident has happened. 8. There was nothing that frightened me. 9. Are you afraid the train will run off the track? 10. Do not go out unless your friends escort you. 11. Take care that you do not get run over by the tramway.

D. 1. We are bicyclists. 2. The police can't prevent us from going (*infin.*) fast. 3. It is against the law (*see A, 17*) to exceed a speed of more than five kilometres an hour. 4. Not satisfied with the speed allowed by the police, you want to go faster and faster. 5. Unless there is a policeman at every step, that can't be prevented (*use on*). 6. There is nobody who doesn't go fast sometimes. 7. What bicyclist obeys the police? — None. 8. There

was a collision on the railway, but nobody was killed. 9. Everybody arrived safe and sound.

E. 1. It is months since I was in the country; I rarely go there. 2. I shall pay you a visit to-morrow, unless the weather should be bad. 3. In any (*tout*) case you must pay us a visit before you go. 4. If I am not mistaken, the engine of our train has just whistled. 5. I am afraid we shall not be comfortable in this compartment. 6. Let us find (*chercher*) another, no matter what one. 7. Do you fear the train will not stop at your station? 8. I am not afraid it will not stop. 9. Take care that your aunt doesn't get run over by the tramway.

F. 1. The police can't prevent automobiles from running too fast. 2. There is not one of them that doesn't exceed the speed limit (*see A, 16*). 3. If we go too fast, we can't avoid the police catching us now and then. 4. I do not doubt that the policemen are in the right. 5. There is nothing that that young man cannot learn. 6. Nobody doubts that he will finally succeed. 7. I am afraid you are cold; draw near the fire. 8. It is years since we had a winter like this one, if I am not mistaken.

LESSON XCI

221. Observe the use of *à*, *de*, *en*, *sur*, in forming adjectival phrases, often rendered in English by compound nouns, or by nouns used as adjectives:—

1. *De, en*, denoting material:

Une maison <i>en</i> (<i>de</i>) brique(s).	<i>A brick house.</i>
Une robe <i>de</i> (<i>en</i>) soie.	<i>A silk dress.</i>
Un collier <i>de</i> perles.	<i>A pearl necklace.</i>

2. *De* denoting source, purpose, destination, etc.:

La porcelaine de Sèvres.	<i>Sèvres porcelain.</i>
Les vins d'Espagne.	<i>Spanish wines.</i>
La salle de bains.	<i>The bathroom.</i>
Le train de Paris.	<i>The Paris train.</i>

3. **À** denoting purpose for which, or characteristic:

Une salle à manger.	<i>A dining room.</i>
Une tasse à thé.	<i>A teacup.</i>
Un coffret à bijoux.	<i>A jewel case.</i>
Un ver à soie.	<i>A silkworm.</i>
Une porte à deux battants.	<i>A folding door (i.e. with two leaves).</i>
Un bateau à vapeur.	<i>A steamboat.</i>
L'homme au chapeau noir.	<i>The man with a black hat.</i>

4. **À** and **sur** describing processes in art:

Une peinture à l'huile.	<i>An oil painting (painting in oils).</i>
Une gravure sur acier.	<i>A steel engraving (engraving on steel).</i>

222. Observe the following prepositional distinctions:—

1. **Environ** = *about* (of quantity); **vers**, *towards*, *about* (of time):

Environ dix kilomètres (cent francs); **vers** (les) dix heures; **vers** 1830.

2. **Entre**, *between*, *among* (also distributively and reciprocally); **parmi**, *among* (in the midst of):

Une station **entre** Paris et Rouen; **entre** dix et douze heures; partagez-le **entre** vos amis; il fut trouvé **entre** les morts; **entre** (in) les mains de mon ami; ils parlaient **entre eux**; une brebis **parmi** les loups.

3. **Avant**, *before* (of time, order, rank); **devant**, *before* (in front of, in presence of):

Avant midi; mettez l'article **avant** le nom; **devant** le feu; **devant** le roi.

4. **Vers**, *towards* (physical tendency): **envers**, *towards* (moral tendency):

Levez les yeux **vers** le ciel; il est juste **envers** tous.

5. **Au-dessous de**, *under*, *underneath* (more specific than **sous**); **au-dessus de**, *over*, *above*, *higher than*:

Au-dessous du tableau; **au-dessous** de la valeur; **au-dessus** de la porte; les nombres **au-dessus** de cent.

6. **Près de**, *near* (physical): **auprès de**, *near*, *with*, *as regards*, etc. (moral):

Près du feu; **auprès** de sa famille.

EXERCISE XCI

l'acajou, m., <i>mahogany</i>	le musée, <i>museum</i>
l'acier, m., <i>steel</i>	le noyer, <i>walnut</i>
le battant, <i>part of a double or folding door</i>	l'objet, m., <i>object</i>
le bijou, <i>jewel</i>	l'or, m., <i>gold</i>
la brique, <i>brick</i>	la parure, <i>adornment</i>
le chêne, <i>oak</i>	le pastel, <i>pastel</i>
le cocon, <i>cocoon</i>	la peinture, <i>painting</i>
le coffret, <i>casket, case</i>	la perle, <i>pearl</i>
le collier, <i>necklace</i>	la porcelaine, <i>porcelain</i>
le cuivre, <i>copper</i>	la princesse, <i>princess</i>
l'eau-forte, f., <i>aquafortis; etching</i>	sculpter, <i>carve</i>
forge, <i>forged, wrought</i>	la soierie, <i>silk (collect.)</i>
illustrer, <i>Illustrate</i>	la taille, <i>cutting</i>
l'industrie, f., <i>industry</i>	le vase, <i>vase</i>
l'ivoire, m., <i>ivory</i>	vaste, <i>vast</i>
le marbre, <i>marble</i>	Vénus, <i>Venus</i>
le mobilier, <i>furniture (collect.)</i>	le ver, <i>worm</i>

il boit dans un verre, *he drinks from (out of) a glass;* je mange dans une assiette, *I eat from a plate;* je l'ai pris dans un tiroir (*sur la table*), *I took it from a drawer (from the table)*

A. 1. Hier nous avons visité un grand musée. 2. Il se trouve dans un ancien château bâti en brique et en pierre de taille (*free-stone*). 3. Nous entrons par la belle porte en chêne à deux battants. 4. Au rez-de-chaussée on trouve les objets qui illustrent l'histoire de l'industrie. 5. Dans la salle des soieries on voit le cocon du ver à soie aussi bien que les belles robes de soie et les tapisseries des Gobelins. 6. Dans une autre salle se voient des tasses à thé et à café qui ont passé par des mains de reines. 7. Nous montons au premier par le bel escalier en marbre. 8. On entre dans la première pièce par une porte magnifique en fer forgé. 9. Cette salle s'appelle le "Salon des Fleurs." 10. Le gardien appelle notre attention sur le mobilier en acajou à tapisseries de Beauvais. 11. Il nous montre de beaux vases en porcelaine de Sèvres. 12. Nous admirons un coffret à bijoux en ivoire. 13. Le gardien prend dans le coffret un collier de perles, autrefois la parure d'une princesse. 14. Il y a ici en outre un beau tableau nommé "Vénus aux cheveux d'or."

15. Ensuite nous entrons dans la vaste ancienne salle à manger à boiseries sculptées en noyer. 16. On y voit beaucoup de tableaux: des peintures à l'huile et des portraits au pastel. 17. Il y a aussi des gravures sur cuivre (*copperplate*), sur acier et à l'eau-forte (*etching*).

B. (Oral on A.)

C. 1. My grandfather lives in an old stone house. 2. There is a beautiful oak table in his dining room. 3. The chairs and side-board are also of oak. 4. Silk is the product of the silkworm. 5. The product of thousands of silkworms is required (use *il faut*) to make a silk dress. 6. In the museum we admired especially the Gobelin tapestries and the Sèvres porcelain. 7. The tapestries are to be seen in the silk room. 8. We use teacups to drink tea. 9. We don't drink (the) tea from coffee cups. 10. Kings and queens have drunk from these wineglasses. 11. Give me a wineglass. 12. Give me another glass of wine. 13. At the entrance to (of) the "Flower Hall" we observed a fine wrought-iron door. 14. My mother has a jewel casket of carved ivory. 15. Among the queen's jewels was a pearl necklace. 16. The London train arrived half an hour ago.

D. 1. We are going to have a brick house built. 2.. The castle was built half in brick, half in freestone. 3. All the stairways are of marble. 4. The entrance doors are large folding doors of oak. 5. Permit me to call your attention to this fine mahogany furniture. 6. Don't you admire these Beauvais tapestries? 7. Frenchmen think that Sèvres porcelain is the finest in the world. 8. The vases of Sèvres porcelain are the finest objects in the museum. 9. I keep my jewels in a little casket of carved walnut. 10. The gentleman with the straw hat is Mr. Brunot. 11. The artist showed us the portrait of a charming little girl with golden hair. 12. This artist is very clever at (a) painting in oils. 13. Most people prefer oil paintings to steel engravings or etchings.

LESSON XCII

223. Conjunctions. — 1. *Que = that* is followed by the indicative or subjunctive according to the context:

Je vois qu'il est malade.

I see that he is ill.

Je suis fâché qu'il soit malade.

I am sorry he is ill.

2. **Que**, standing for another conjunction, regularly takes the same construction as the conjunction it replaces:

Quand vous aurez fini et que vous *When you have finished and (when you) have time.*

aurez le temps.
Venez que (= afin que, pour que) *Come that I may see you.*
je vous voie.

(a) For **que** = **si**, **if**, see § 193, 5.

3. **When** = **quand** or **lorsque** (the latter never interrogatively):

Quand (lorsque) je l'ai vu. *When I saw him.*

Dites-moi quand il arrivera. *Tell me when he will arrive.*

4. **Pendant que** = **while**, **whilst**; **tandis que** = **while**, **whilst**, **whereas**, **on the contrary**:

Lisez le journal pendant que *Read the newspaper while I am writing this note.*
j'écris ce billet.

Tandis que vous êtes ici. *Whilst (while) you are here.*

Le père travaille, tandis que le *The father works, while (whereas) the son is always idle.*
fils est toujours oisif.

5. **Depuis que** denotes time; **puisque** denotes cause assigned:

Je suis bien seul depuis que mon *I am very lonely since my brother went away.*
frère est parti.

Il faut que je reste puisqu'il n'y a *I must remain, since there is no train this evening.*
pas de train ce soir.

6. Certain prepositions and prepositional phrases, governing an infinitive, correspond to conjunctival forms in **que**; the prepositional construction is usually employed when one subject is common to two verbs, but if not, the **que** form must be used:

Je partis de peur de le voir. *I left for fear of seeing him.*

Je partis de peur qu'il ne me vît. *I left for fear he might see me.*

(a) Other examples: **afin de** (**afin que**); **de crainte de** (**de crainte que**); **à moins de** (**à moins que**); **avant de** (**avant que**); **après de** (**après que**); **de peur de** (**de peur que**); **pour** (**pour que**); **sans** (**sans que**); **jusqu'à** (**jusqu'à ce que**), etc.

224. Reference list of conjunctions requiring the subjunctive:

à (la) condition que ¹	de (telle) sorte que ²	pourvu que
afin que	en attendant que	quand même ⁵
à moins que . . . ne	en cas que	que ⁶
au cas où ²	encore que	quoique
au cas que	en sorte que ³	sans que
avant que	en supposant que	si ⁷
bien que	jusqu'à ce que ⁴	si bien que ⁸
ce n'est pas que	loin que	si peu que
dans le cas où ²	malgré que	soit que . . . soit que
de crainte que . . . ne	nonobstant que	soit que . . . ou que
de façon que ³	non (pas) que	supposé que
de manière que ³	pour peu que	tellement . . . que ⁹
de peur que . . . ne	pour que	

¹ Also indic. or condl. ² More usually condl. ³ Subj. of purpose, but not of result.
⁴ Sometimes indic. of completed past event. ⁵ Cond. ant. or plupf. subj. ⁶ See § 223, 1, above. ⁷ See § 193, 5.

EXERCISE XCII

les ancêtres, m., <i>ancestors</i>	le laboureur, <i>ploughman</i>
augmenter, <i>increase</i>	la marche, <i>March</i>
le bâtiment, <i>building</i>	le marteau, <i>hammer</i>
le bûcheron, <i>woodcutter</i>	à mesure que, <i>in proportion as</i>
la civilisation, <i>civilization</i>	la moisson, <i>harvest, crop</i>
la consommation, <i>consumption</i>	moissonner, <i>harvest</i>
continuer, <i>continue</i>	le perfectionnement, <i>improvement</i>
défricher, <i>clear (land)</i>	le pont, <i>bridge</i>
l'enclume, f., <i>anvil</i>	pour que, <i>in order that, so that</i>
exagérer, <i>exaggerate</i>	la poutre, <i>beam</i>
la faucale, <i>sickle</i>	le procédé, <i>process</i>
la fonte, <i>cast iron</i>	réaliser, <i>realize, effect</i>
le forgeron, <i>blacksmith</i>	soit que . . ., <i>whether</i>
la hache, <i>axe</i>	tant que, <i>so (as) long as</i>
imaginer, <i>imagine, conceive</i>	utiliser, <i>utilize</i>
inventer, <i>Invent, find out</i>	

cela va en augmentant, *that keeps increasing*

A. 1. Que la figure du forgeron est intéressante! 2. Depuis que la civilisation existe il aide les hommes par ses travaux. 3. Jusqu'à ce qu'il eût fait une hache le bûcheron ne pouvait pas couper les

arbres. 4. Après que le bûcheron eut défriché la terre le laboureur eut besoin de la charrue. 5. Aussitôt qu'il y eut une moisson il fallut faire une faufile pour la moissonner. 6. À mesure que la civilisation avançait on imaginait de nouveaux procédés d'utiliser le fer. 7. Pour que la hache et la faufile coupassent bien on inventa l'acier. 8. Puisqu'il fallait travailler vite et à bon marché on inventa la fonte. 9. Du moment qu'on a réalisé ces perfectionnements le fer a commencé à remplacer le bois et la pierre. 10. Dans les bâtiments nous employons des poutres d'acier tandis que nos ancêtres ne se servaient que de poutres de bois. 11. Les nouveaux chemins même sont des chemins de fer. 12. Mais soit qu'on fasse des routes ou des ponts ou des navires, la consommation du fer va en augmentant. 13. On pourrait dire sans exagérer que tant que continuera la marche de la civilisation elle sera accompagnée de la musique du marteau et de l'enclume.

B. (Oral on A.)

C. 1. What an interesting figure that (*que celle*) of the blacksmith! 2. His work has helped civilization very much. 3. The woodcutter could not cut trees until he had an axe. 4. The ploughman needs a plough as soon as the ground is cleared. 5. The harvester cannot cut his wheat until he has a sickle. 6. People invent new processes in proportion as civilization advances. 7. Steel is used to make axes. 8. Cast iron was invented so that people could work faster and cheaper. 9. Many improvements have been effected. 10. Iron must take the place of wood and stone. 11. Steel beams are used in our days, whilst formerly wooden beams were used. 12. The consumption of iron keeps increasing. 13. Whether we make ships or bridges, we need iron. 14. We shall need iron as long as civilization continues. 15. The march of civilization is accompanied by the music of the anvil. 16. Man cannot advance without new processes being invented.

D. 1. When Captain Pictet arrives I shall ask him to come in. 2. Since our relatives arrived we have been (*pres.*) very busy. 3. Since you need money I shall lend you some. 4. We started at eight o'clock in order not to be late. 5. I heard from my sister before she left (*quitter*) London. 6. Do not run for fear you may

fall. 7. If he had ploughed the ground and if (*que*) he had sown the wheat, the crop would have been abundant. 8. Unless we are diligent we shall not succeed. 9. I shall be busy until you come. 10. They will not finish early without your helping them.

E. 1. Before we had electric light we used gas. 2. Our neighbours still have (the) gas, whilst we have electric light. 3. Wait until we have (the) time to see you. 4. He will wait until his brother comes. 5. While we were taking a cup of coffee the train started. 6. I work in order to become rich. 7. You work that your children may be rich. 8. Do not speak without thinking. 9. Do nothing without telling me what you are going to do. 10. We shall be glad when we have finished.

MATERIAL FOR CONVERSATION

NOTE.—This "Material for Conversation" is placed after the Lessons for the sake of convenience, and not to suggest that the Lessons should be mastered before conversation is begun. Conversation should begin early, and certain parts of the "Material," such, for example, as the "Fundamental Expressions," should be learned and used as soon as possible.

The classroom and its activities will naturally furnish the first topics for conversation. Hence the teacher should provide his class early with the vocabulary necessary for speaking about the objects, studies, etc., which pertain to the classroom. The vocabulary necessary for other topics should be furnished as the needs of the class demand.

1. Fundamental Expressions

(a) When pointing to objects:

Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela (ça)? *What is that?*

C'est un crayon. *It's a pencil.*

Comment appelle-t-on cela (ça)? *What is that called?*

On appelle cela (ça) un livre. *That's called a book.*

(b) When speaking of objects, actions, ideas, etc.:

Comment dit-on 'house' en français? *How do you say 'house' in French?*

En français on dit 'maison.' *You say 'maison' in French.*

Comment dit-on 'run' en français? *How do you say 'run' in French?*

On dit 'courir' en français. *You say 'courir' in French.*

Que veut dire le mot 'pain'? *What does the word 'pain' mean?*

Le mot 'pain' veut dire 'bread.' *The word 'pain' means 'bread.'*

(c) When speaking of spelling, pronunciation, etc.:

Comment écrivez-vous (écris-t-on) le mot 'livre'? *How do you spell the word 'livre'?*

Quelle est l'orthographe du mot 'livre'? *You spell the word 'livre' thus.*

On écrit le mot 'livre' ainsi,
l-i-v-r-e.

(For names of French letters, see Introd., A.)

Comment prononcez-vous (prononc-e-t-on) ce mot? *How do you pronounce this word?*

Quelle est la prononciation de ce mot? *You pronounce this word thus.*

On prononce ce mot ainsi.

2. Politer Forms

(a) In addressing people:

Monsieur, Madame, Mademoiselle. *Sir, Madam, Miss.*

(b) In asking and receiving:

S'il vous plaît.	<i>If you please or please.</i>
Merci (<i>after accepting</i>).	<i>Thank you or thanks.</i>
Merci (<i>in declining</i>).	<i>No, thank you or no, thanks.</i>
Avec plaisir.	<i>With pleasure.</i>
Je vous remercie beaucoup (bien, mille fois, infiniment).	<i>I thank you very much.</i>

(c) When not understanding:

Monsieur? Madame? Mademoiselle?

Plaît-il? or Pardon? or Je vous demande pardon. (*More familiar: Comment? or Vous dites?*)

(d) When desiring consent:

Voulez-vous (bien)...? or Veuillez. *Will you kindly . . .?*
Ayez la bonté (l'obligeance) de . . . *Be kind enough to . . .*

(e) Politeness is often increased by the use of the conditional:

Pourriez-vous me dire, madame, l'heure qu'il est?

Voudriez-vous (bien) me dire où nous en sommes aujourd'hui?

3. Model Conversation

On sonne (frappe) à la porte. J'ouvre moi-même et je dis:

— Bonjour (bonsoir), mon cher ami. Entrez donc. Je suis enchanté (charmé) de vous voir.
— Merci, je ne vous dérange pas?

— Oh non! pas du tout. Permettez-moi de vous débarrasser de votre chapeau.
— Merci, vous êtes trop bon.

There's a ring (knock) at the door. I open the door myself and say:

— *Good day or good morning (good evening), my dear friend. Do come in. I am delighted to see you.*
— *Thank you, I hope I am not disturbing you?*

— *Oh no, not at all. Allow me to take your hat.*
— *Thanks, you are too kind.*

- Ayez la bonté (donnez-vous la peine) de vous asseoir (*less formal*: *asseyez-vous donc*); ici dans ce fauteuil.
- Merci beaucoup, mais j'ai peur de vous déranger.
- Pas du tout. Ne vous gênez pas. Et comment vous portez-vous depuis si longtemps? (*less formal*: Comment allez-vous? comment ça va-t-il? comment ça va?)
- Très bien (pas mal), merci, et vous (-même)?
- J'ai été un peu souffrant.
- J'en suis désolé! Qu'est-ce que vous aviez?
- C'était une espèce de neurasthénie. Mais ça va déjà mieux.
- Tant mieux. J'espère que ça passera vite.
- Mais vous n'êtes pas bien; ce fauteuil n'est pas bon (commodo, confortable).
- Si! si!
- Mais non, permettez-moi. Je vais vous donner ce coussin. Levez-vous, s'il vous plaît. Là! maintenant, asseyez-vous. Vous êtes mieux, n'est-ce pas?
- Oh, oui! mais vous êtes trop aimable.

Après avoir causé un peu, mon ami s'excuse. Il faut qu'il s'en aille. Il dit:

- Mes compliments à ~~mon père~~ et à madame votre mère.
- Merci, je n'y manquerai pas. Bien des choses (de ma part) à votre frère.

Nous nous disons: 'au revoir,' 'à ce soir,' 'à demain matin,' 'à lundi (mardi, etc.) prochain.' Nous nous serrons la main, et le voilà parti.

— Kindly be seated; here in this chair.

— Thank you very much, but I am afraid of disturbing you.

— Not at all. Make yourself at home. And how have you been this long time?

— Very well, thanks, and how are you?

— I have not been very well.

— I am very sorry. What was the matter?

— It was a sort of nervous exhaustion. But I am better now.

— I am glad to hear it. I hope it will soon disappear.

— But you're not comfortable; that chair doesn't suit you.

— Oh yes, it does.

— No, no, allow me. I'll give you this cushion. Rise, please. Now then, sit down. That's better, isn't it?

— Yes, indeed, but you are too kind.

After chatting a little my friend begs to be excused. He must go. He says:

- Remember me to your father and mother.
- Thanks, I shall (will). Remember me to your brother.

We say to one another 'good-bye,' 'good-bye till this evening,' 'till to-morrow morning,' 'till Monday (Tuesday etc.), next.' We shake hands and he's gone.

REVIEW EXERCISES

Note. — These sentences have been selected for the most part from Harvard, Yale and other College Entrance Papers, and are grouped so as to illustrate important points of grammar.

I. The Article

A. 1. I have no friends. 2. I have a great many flowers and will give you some. 3. He has neither father nor mother. 4. They haven't any money. 5. There were many houses in the town. 6. Here are some fine pears; do you wish any? 7. Are there any pencils in that box? There are none now. 8. Here are some fine apples. 9. They are all going to France to-morrow. 10. If you are thirsty you may drink some cold water. 11. He wanted to buy some apples but he didn't have any money. 12. You are wrong in thinking so. 13. Have you any books? Give me some. I have no books now. 14. We had a good deal of snow last winter. 15. There are many things we can learn by reading good books. 16. I beg your pardon; I am right and you are wrong. 17. I am always cold [on] the days when it is cold. 18. Are you warm? Yes, and I am thirsty also. 19. Is there any water here? Yes, here is some good, cool water. 20. There are white hens and black ones in the barn.

B. 1. Don't you need your hat when you go out? 2. Won't you buy her some good red apples? 3. Have you good friends? 4. We saw pebbles and sand in the water of the river. 5. In Canada people eat a great deal of fruit in autumn. 6. I am sure he asked for ripe apples; these are green ones. 7. The weather has been very warm and the flowers need water. 8. The little bird said, "Open the window for me, I am very hungry." 9. When horses are thirsty they need water and they go to the river. 10. There are good books and bad ones. 11. I have no friends in this country, but I have some in America. 12. He has potatoes, cabbage(s) and onions. He planted them on the second of May. 13. There were some very pretty flowers at the market this morning. 14. Perhaps you are right, but certainly I am too warm. 15. That pupil likes history better than grammar. 16. Children

sometimes have wonderful courage. 17. The boys rushed in with their hats on their heads. 18. I had my hair cut this morning. 19. Mrs. Brown is a Frenchwoman. 20. Queen Victoria was born in 1819.

II. Numerals

1. I shall be eighteen years old in nineteen hundred and seventeen.
2. What time was it? It was half past ten.
3. When did your brother return from Europe? He arrived last night at a quarter past eight.
4. Write out in French 21, 63, 177, 46th, $\frac{1}{2}$, $\frac{3}{4}$.
5. What day of the month is it? It is the fifteenth of May, 1911 (*write date in full*).
6. They were born on the same day, the 17th of July, 1893 (*write date in full*).
7. I was born on the 15th of August, 1895 (*write date in full*).
8. What time was it when the train left?
9. It was twenty minutes to eleven.
10. Can you tell me the time? It is half past two.
11. I have here a box full of cherries. How many are there? Ninety-one.
12. I have been in Toronto a fortnight and I like the city.
13. We did not go there yesterday at ten o'clock.
14. You say that he is twenty years old.
15. Is his oldest brother not ten years older?
16. Does the train start for Boston at a quarter to nine?
17. We have been here three weeks.
18. My grandfather is eighty years old.
19. During the first two years he did not study.
20. Fifteen cents make seventy-five centimes.
21. Victor Hugo was born in 1802 (*write date in full*).
22. He died in 1885 (*write date in full*).
23. It is half past eleven; we must go home.

III. Personal Pronouns

1. Will you introduce me to her?
2. Are you angry with me?
3. Give it to me.
4. I took him there a week ago.
5. We have given the books back to them.
6. Show them to us, please.
7. Don't send them to him.
8. Hide yourself behind the door.
9. Will you kindly give me some?
10. Give it to us, do not give it to them.
11. They have made fun of us all day.
12. He lends it to me every Sunday.
13. Give us some, but do not give us so many.
14. John's watch is [made] of (*en*) gold. His father gave it to him.
15. I have your books, I shall finish one of them next week.
16. Did you sell that lady any sugar?
17. Yes, I sold her some, but I sold none to her sister.
18. Don't sell her any.
19. Where will he find a better neighbour than I?
20. We have none, but we should like to have some to-morrow.
21. His coat does not fit

him well; he has just been trying it on. 22. How many prizes have you? I have only one. 23. I have given them to my sister; they were hers. 24. Go away, we cannot be friends, but I have no grudge against you. 25. You have taken my pen. Please give it to her. 26. I saw him this morning, but I did not speak to him about it. 27. Here are some also; keep them for me. 28. I do not doubt it; he will win the day.

IV. Demonstratives

1. He who does not talk too much is wise. 2. Don't give me this pencil, give me that one. 3. These cakes are not as good as the ones we bought here yesterday. 4. It is easier to do this than that. 5. This house and the one in which our cousins live will be sold to-morrow. 6. This is worse than that. 7. Have you learned to-day's lesson better than yesterday's? 8. Which of these pears do you like the best? The one you have brought. 9. Is it you who told him so? 10. This book is mine, but that is my sister's. 11. Those who leave will never return. 12. These little children are the ones you met yesterday. 13. This pen and that one are mine. Where is your brother's? 14. It is easy to do. 15. Those are Germans. 16. Victor Hugo and Michelet are Frenchmen, the former is a poet, the latter an historian. 17. It was we who did the work. 18. Those who are not killed will fight. 19. Here are two books; give me this one and keep that one. 20. This man is my friend, that one is my enemy.

V. Possessives

1. Is that your umbrella? No, this one is mine, that one is yours. 2. This is my friend's watch. 3. Where do your parents live? In Montreal. 4. Here are my pens. Where are yours? 5. I don't know where mine are. 6. Didn't your parents see our friends and hers in England? 7. No, they saw only hers, because yours had already gone to Paris. 8. My watch and his are on the table, are they not? 9. Your party will not be stronger than ours. 10. This is my house; where is yours? 11. Mine is yonder behind the church. 12. A friend of mine has come from Chicago. 13. A relative of mine who lives in Chicago has become very rich. 14. An Englishman, a friend of mine, told me that. 15. Do you know the difference between mine and thine? 16. Is that watch yours? 17. No, sir, it is not mine, I think it is my brother's.

18. My dress is not ready yet, but yours was ready yesterday.
19. Your harvest is better than ours this year. 20. My book is on the table, yours is under it.

VI. Relatives and Interrogatives

A. 1. Do not forget what I told you. 2. I do not like the flowers which she sold me. 3. Is the church of which you have spoken near your house? 4. Here are two books, which is the more interesting? 5. Your father told me what your brother had done. 6. Take what you need and leave the rest beside my table. 7. What is the matter with that little boy? 8. What have you given back to him? 9. This is the boy whose father is in England. 10. I don't know what you have just said. 11. Which of those horses do you like best? 12. Whom did you see? 13. Who is your neighbour? 14. What have you written? 15. What is that beside you? 16. What kind of weather is it? 17. The gentleman for whose farm I offered \$10,000 has not sold it yet. 18. What is there in that box? 19. There is the book I spoke of to you last week. 20. Is that the house you spoke to me about? 21. He who has never suffered does not know what joy is.

B. 1. The king asked whose was the field where they were reaping. 2. I cannot express to you my gratitude for (*de*) what you have done. 3. What are you doing now? Have you not begun yet? 4. There is the apple tree of which I have spoken so often. 5. Why do people give the best things to those who do not need them? 6. Have you finished the books I gave you last week? 7. Didn't you buy the pictures I saw in your room? 8. Tell me what you want me to do. 9. Do you know what they thought? They thought you had no friends. 10. He did not tell me what the Louvre is. 11. Those are the flowers which I have bought. 12. There is a man whose son I know. 13. All that he has to do is to tell you what he has seen. 14. What a big apple! Who gave it to you? 15. What are you going to do to-day? I do not know yet. 16. What is a pear tree? It is a tree which yields pears. 17. Whose is that house on the other side of the road? 18. My brother owed me the half of what he had received. 19. Who is she? Whose daughter is she?

C. 1. We are going to eat the fruit of the apple tree which is in our garden. 2. You will send her a box of the coffee which I brought from France. 3. What is a classroom? It is a room in

which we tell the teacher what we know. 4. Who is it? It is my father's friend, the general of whom I was speaking yesterday. 5. Tell me what you have been doing to-day. 6. Which of these two towns is the larger? 7. Has he read the letter which she has written him? 8. You see what it is to be a stranger. 9. Which of these gentlemen is the one I want to speak to? 10. A dictionary is a book which is used to explain the meaning of words. 11. Which of your friends has gone to Europe? 12. I met two men last week whose names I have forgotten. 13. That is the man whose son lives in the United States. 14. Whose son was Alexander? What did he do? 15. Can you tell me which is the largest lake in North America? 16. Has he all the money he needs? He has all I had. 17. My two brothers who live in Germany will remain with me until next Friday. 18. He would not tell me what he had said. 19. Do you need the books we have read this year? 20. We shall need those you read and others also.

VII. Indefinites

1. I will say nothing about it to any one. 2. Nothing is the matter with him. 3. Perhaps something better will be offered us. 4. I have seen no one to-day, but I saw everybody at church yesterday. 5. The old lady wishes to give the boy something good. 6. What do you need? I don't need anything. 7. You never saw any one so contented. 8. Everybody was hungry, and yet nobody wanted to make peace just to have bread. 9. Each of his fables is the story of a day. 10. If one has books enough, one can amuse himself reading. 11. There is never anybody at his house. 12. We were informed that his ship was to leave at noon on Saturday. 13. None of my friends has gone this year. 14. Give them something good to drink. 15. Has your father anything good in his garden? Nothing. 16. There is no fire in this room. How cold it is! 17. We were told not to come. 18. Did you see anybody you knew at the station? 19. I saw nobody there whom I knew. 20. What did you give him? I gave him nothing.

VIII. Irregular Verbs

1. Give the future indicative, first person singular of *valoir*, *faire* and *cueillir*. 2. Give the imperative, second person plural of *avoir*, *boire* and *conduire*. 3. Give the present subjunctive, first person singular of *lever*, *plaire* and *acquérir*. 4. Give the future

indicative, first person singular of *savoir*, *courir* and *venir*. 5. Give the present subjunctive, third person singular of *avoir*, *envoyer* and *jeter*. 6. Give the past participle of *prendre*, *dire* and *lire*. 7. Give the past definite in full of *voir*, *vivre* and *tenir*. 8. Give the imperfect subjunctive in full of *savoir*, *taire* and *écrire*. 9. Give the present indicative in full of *vouloir*, *se taire* and *s'en aller*. 10. Give the past definite in full of *croire*, *devoir* and *boire*. 11. Give the principal parts of *suivre*, *plaindre* and *paraître*. 12. Give the principal parts of *aller*, *boire*, *venir* and *courir*. 13. I have sat down. 14. It has opened. 15. They are sleeping. 16. They were eating. 17. Let us run. 18. He will run. 19. They are drinking. 20. He is dying. 21. She died this morning. 22. Where was she born?

IX. Government of Verbs

1. Think of me when I am (*fut.*) not here. 2. I shall never be able to use them. 3. Do you ever think of England when you are in the United States? I never think of it. 4. I was going to ask my brother for some tickets. 5. He always has some and I shall ask him for two. 6. How much did you pay for the shoes you bought? 7. I paid twenty francs ninety-five centimes for them. 8. Will you buy me some paper to-morrow? 9. I cannot wait for you any longer; the breakfast is on the table. 10. Look in your dictionary for the meaning of all the words. 11. Listen to her, and when she makes mistakes, tell her. 12. I bought this hat at your hatter's and I paid ten francs for it. 13. She bought several hats in that shop and she paid very high for them. 14. He paid twelve thousand francs for the automobile (motor-car) he bought in London. 15. I have paid twenty-five francs for my hat. How much did you pay for yours? 16. The children are looking for the book. 17. How much did you pay for those beautiful red roses? 18. She has lost it, but I am going to look for it. 19. Did he approach the house? He did. 20. Did you remember what I told you? I didn't. I forgot it. 21. What do you use when you write? 22. I use paper and ink.

X. The Infinitive

A. 1. Tell your friend to come and see me. 2. I wish I were in France now. 3. The teacher makes the boys study their lessons. 4. Where can he be? 5. He won't be long in arriving. 6. I saw her leave the house half an hour ago. 7. Please send for him.

8. Are you going to have a house built this year? 9. The ladies I saw this morning have just set out for Paris. 10. I made him write a letter to his brother. 11. Make them send us another box of cakes. 12. Make them write slowly. 13. Make them write it slowly. 14. Their teacher made them write their exercises. 15. We have just given him what he wanted. 16. We heard them say that their friends had gone to Germany. 17. He stayed at home all day, but his friends could not come to see him. 18. It would be better to talk less and work more. 19. I still have several pages to read before (the) evening. 20. I had a house built for my son who has just married.

B. 1. I nearly fell on leaving your house. 2. You have only to bathe in the river. 3. You have only one thing to do, that is to confess everything to your father. 4. The king has just left the palace, but he will be back to-morrow. 5. Don't try to tell the whole story; it is too long. 6. How much water did I tell you to put in? 7. They have just arrived from France, and will return in the spring. 8. When are you coming to see us? 9. We shall not go to see you this week. 10. After reading the letter I gave it to him. 11. He has just left his friends in the street. 12. We do not want to return home, we want to stay here. 13. He amuses himself by describing to his family what he has seen. 14. I shall not fail to follow your advice. 15. It isn't worth doing (the trouble of being done). 16. Make him do his work before he goes away. 17. I see a gentleman at the door; will you be good enough to show him in? 18. Be good enough to give me what you have in your hand. 19. Could you tell me, sir, what the name of this street is? 20. We shall not go on foot to-day; we prefer to drive.

C. 1. Where are you going to spend your holidays? In the country. 2. Be good enough to tell me all you have seen and heard. 3. I am having my house painted. It will be finished a week from to-day. 4. We intended to go for a walk, but the weather was bad. 5. Show the ladies up and make the children be quiet. 6. Tell them to have it sent to her. 7. We cannot wait. Something must be done. 8. My neighbour told me that he was to leave [on] the next day. 9. I heard my name called three times. 10. Do you not see those two men coming? 11. They had the sick [man] carried into the other room. 12. Tell them to go away; they are making too much noise. 13. He has tried to do so twice already. 14. He is to set out for Germany to-morrow. 15. I was to meet my cousin here. She is to marry my friend to-

morrow. 16. After the marriage, the newly married couple intend to live in Boston. 17. I had just visited my old friend who lives near the church. 18. I have had my boys read this book. 19. The young girls had (*ont dû*) to read it the day before yesterday. 20. He finally accepted the conditions.

XI. The Imperfect, Past Definite and Past Indefinite

1. My brother was reading when they entered the room. 2. Did they receive as much of them as you [did]? 3. We were translating our exercises when the professor entered the classroom. 4. Why did he go downstairs a few minutes ago? He went to send for the doctor. 5. When were you born? 6. On which chair did you place my valise? 7. I placed it on the one beside the window. 8. I didn't hear the man who was talking. 9. Many children have already gone to school, but there are some still at home. 10. Where did you go after breakfast? 11. Did you buy a pair of shoes when you went for a walk? 12. I did not see him at the station last night. 13. I did not buy (*prendre*) a ticket because my friends had not come. 14. There were many people who were going to take the train for Boston. 15. We drank some hot milk, we went to bed and we slept all night. 16. The river froze during the winter and we skated every Saturday. 17. With whom were they taking a walk when we met them? 18. I have not finished those books yet. 19. Did you buy some pears yesterday? 20. No, I didn't buy any, because I didn't have any money. 21. Didn't we sell you any tickets? 22. I bought the four pictures you saw, and my old aunt gave me the others. 23. Were there many boys in the country when you went there? 24. No, there were not many. 25. What were you doing when I entered? 26. When I told him who I was and what I wanted, he came at once. 27. How long has the king been reigning?

XII. The Future

1. When you come I will introduce you to them. 2. Come when you please and I will help you. 3. When we come to see you we shall tell you about it. 4. When I am in the country I shall have him work for me. 5. I shall wear my dress coat when I go to the theatre. 6. When I have no more money, I shall go and tell (it to) my father. 7. As soon as you have read the book tell me how you liked (= found) it. 8. Give it him when next (= the next

time) you see him. 9. After we have dined we shall go back to the town. 10. Will you go away when your brother arrives? 11. There are many interesting things which you will see when you go to Paris. 12. When you enter the church you will see your friend in front of the window. 13. I will give it to him when I see him this evening. 14. When they have seen all the pictures in the museum they are going to leave the town. 15. When you come to Toronto, come and see me. 16. As long as I live I shall not forget you. 17. When you have been there a year or two, you will know better what you should do. 18. As long as iron lasts civilization will last. 19. I shall go when my father comes. 20. Come when you will.

XIII. The Conditional

A. 1. If I had met him I should have spoken to him. 2. Would you not have sold it to them if they had offered you more money? 3. If I go, who will remain? if I remain, who will go? 4. That (young) girl could write if she wished. 5. If I should say so, would you believe me? 6. If I had been you (*say: in (a) your place*) I would not have given him anything. 7. We shall take a long walk to-morrow if it is pleasant (= fine). 8. He would speak to me if he were here. 9. He would have spoken to me ten days ago if he had been here. 10. If they worked they would not be poor. 11. If you need money, will you not work for me? 12. If the door opens, shut your book at once. 13. If that house were larger and (if it) had more rooms I would buy it. 14. He would lend it me if I asked him for it. 15. If he spoke more slowly I could understand him. 16. A friend of mine told me that he would come to see me at five o'clock, if it was not raining. 17. If he comes, I shall go for a walk with him after dinner. 18. If they should give you some white roses would you give them to your sister? 19. Perhaps that man will give you some milk, if you ask him for it. 20. If he had gone home with me, I should have given him his dinner.

B. 1. If you had called me, I should have got up at six o'clock. 2. If you have no money, how can you buy anything to eat? 3. If I were he (*see XIII, A, 6*), I should tell them what I think of them. 4. I should be very much obliged to you if you would tell me what you are thinking of. 5. You could have come earlier if you had wanted to. 6. If people tried to learn that language they would

not find it difficult. 7. Should you have been able to see us if we had come here on Thursday? 8. If we had a great deal of money we should not be much happier. 9. If he had seen his friend he would have told us so. 10. If you will kindly lend me your pencil I shall write all the words. 11. I asked him if he would come to-day, but he would not answer. 12. If you give men what they desire they are happy. 13. These children would have gone to school if it had not rained. 14. Would his brother give him the money if he were to ask for it? 15. The other could have done so, if she had tried. 16. If I had spoken to him he would have fallen. 17. Come if you wish. 18. Come if you please. 19. I should have been very thankful to them if they had prevented me from doing that. 20. If he should be there tell him to come at once.

XIV. The Imperative

1. Ask him whether he has bought them.
2. Do not be afraid.
3. Don't talk to me about it.
4. Help yourself (*2d sing.*) and Heaven will help you.
5. Sit down here, you must be tired.
6. Let us not go there at once.
7. Don't go there, John, you will hurt yourself.
8. Don't send it to me yet.
9. My brother is not here yet, but don't wait for him.
10. Permit me to thank you for it (*en*).
11. Let him not go away, we need him.
12. Tell them to come.
13. It is ten o'clock, let us write our letters.
14. Will you kindly lend me your pen?
15. Lend me your pen, but do not lend it to her.
16. Let them stay with us.
17. Let them not do what you have forbidden.
18. Go away, dog, you are disturbing us.
19. You have bread; give me some.
20. I have some, don't give me any.

XV. The Subjunctive

- A.
1. Before you go I should like to see you.
 2. I am sorry you could not come.
 3. I took care that she did not fall.
 4. Unless they come I shall be at home until five o'clock.
 5. I am glad you are here.
 6. They fear that you may believe it.
 7. I am glad he has read this book.
 8. Do you wish me to return without seeing him?
 9. I was astonished that he did not get up earlier.
 10. It would be a pity that that should happen.
 11. I am anxious that (*à ce que*) he should read this book.
 12. The doctor is at home; shall I send for him?
 13. I am afraid they do not know the difference between him and me.
 14. You must return before my

father goes away. 15. I am afraid he is ill. 16. I did not think it would rain. 17. I am sorry that she did not come early. 18. I wish you would bring what I asked you to bring. 19. Whether the weather is good (= fine) or bad we accept it. 20. You must bring your books with you to-morrow.

B. 1. I am very much afraid your father is ill. 2. I am glad you will be able to come. 3. Do you think it will rain? 4. I think it will not rain to-day. 5. I do not know any one who is truly happy. 6. Whatever his reasons were, he has been obliged to change them. 7. Would you like me to speak to him or to write to him? 8. When did he come here? I want him to return home. 9. I don't want you to be unhappy. 10. Do you think he will come? 11. I think he will come. 12. He is looking for some one who may know him. 13. Take care that he does not see you. 14. He is very sorry that you have a grudge against him. 15. It is necessary that you should not do it. 16. There is nothing in these books which can interest you. 17. Do they want us to stay in the country till the autumn? 18. I should like you to show me the house which you have had built. 19. Your young friend has painted a large picture, but I don't think he has succeeded well this time. 20. He does not want you to tell him everything (*tout ce que*) you know.

C. 1. My brother said that he wished me to write to him often. 2. I am glad that you were so well during my absence. 3. I wish you to stay here until my return. I am not going far. 4. It is necessary that you put out this lamp. It does not burn well. 5. I am sorry that you did not both go away before he came. 6. I am not sure that I know what has become of him. 7. It is possible that we may see him when he comes. 8. He is the richest man I know. 9. Could you show me a grammar which has all the rules? 10. I am looking for a house which is large enough for seven people. 11. Do you know a man who can build a better wall than he? 12. Whatever the conditions are I cannot accept them without reflecting. 13. Whoever he is, I am sure that he is no gentleman. 14. Whenever we saw them they were always very busy. 15. Wherever one may be, one will always find that politeness is useful. 16. I am glad that you have found your blue necktie. 17. My brothers must go to Europe next summer. 18. I am afraid he will come before noon. 19. Wherever you go, remember that I shall be thinking of you. 20. You must not waste your money.

XVI. Reflexives and Passives

A. 1. His mother has hurt her arm. 2. He is well to-day. 3. Did you go for a drive yesterday morning? No, I took a ride in the park. 4. Don't be mistaken. What we say is true. 5. My mother did not hurt herself. 6. What is your name? 7. My name is Henry. 8. The French were very brave, they let themselves be killed (*se faire tuer*) by thousands. 9. He never complains of the weather. 10. We will go for a walk and we shall have a good time all afternoon. 11. At what time did you get up this morning? 12. He was followed by a small yellow dog. 13. He is not at all well this morning; he ought to take a walk. 14. She has cut her finger. 15. It is late; get up quickly if you want to see the sun rise. 16. Go with them and you will enjoy yourself a great deal. 17. What is the name of the lake which he has discovered? 18. Don't be angry with me. 19. This was the question which people were asking of one another almost every day. 20. My two sisters have always written each other long letters.

B. 1. I think they are going to be married next week. 2. Which amusement do you like best, to go riding on horseback or on (a) [a] bicycle? 3. I went to the play last night, but I did not enjoy myself. 4. The two little girls bade each other good morning and shook hands. 5. It is never hard to amuse oneself if one is well. 6. Come, make haste; it is half past nine and we are late. 7. When they get up they wash their hands and face[s]. 8. These ladies bowed to each other and shook hands. 9. Have you not washed your face yet? I cannot wait for you. 10. How many letters have these young men written to each other? 11. They have written letters to each other, but they have not seen each other yet. 12. Let us all sit down around this large table. 13. The two armies fought well. 14. I do not like your conduct. Such things are not done in (the) good society. 15. Men who build houses and barns are called carpenters. 16. A robbery was committed in the bank, but the thief was caught. 17. I remember all that he said. 18. They will get up early to go to the station. 19. Have these two (young) girls promised to write to each other? Yes, every week. 20. Here are the two letters which they have written to each other during ten months.

XVII. Impersonals

1. When the weather is bad, we remain at home.
2. If it is warm to-morrow we shall go into the forest.
3. It is very hot, but not so hot as yesterday.
4. I think it will be fine to-morrow. We are going for a drive.
5. It is impossible for you to know what I am thinking of.
6. How warm it is! I think it will rain.
7. It is very cold; it will snow perhaps before long.
8. Although it is windy, it is warmer than yesterday.
9. It was easy to shut the gate when there was no wind.
10. What kind of weather is it now?
11. It was fine a moment ago, but now it is raining.
12. In winter it is dark at half past four.
13. It is not easy to read when people are chatting about you.
14. It will be fine weather to-morrow, and our celebration will take place.
15. When it is warm, horses and men are thirsty.
16. There has fallen much snow.
17. It froze last night; it is fine now.
18. There were many people at the ball.
19. You must not go away.
20. You must do what I tell you.

XVIII. Adverbs

1. I do not wish to read or write.
2. Perhaps he will remain at home to-day.
3. There are some pencils in the box and a few books under it.
4. Where do you live? I live opposite you.
5. In Paris there are many children who have never seen anything but poor people.
6. They have never been in France and they now say they will not go there.
7. It was only a small thing.
8. I have never seen such a fine picture.
9. It often happens that we promise to do what we can never do.
10. Neither you nor I sing.
11. We have no more paper, we cannot write any more.
12. I speak neither English nor German, but I understand both a little.
13. How tired I am! I have been working hard.
14. He has neither friends nor money.
15. She had only a few francs in her pocket.
16. Have you ever read that play by Labiche?
17. Does that woman sing as well as your sister?
18. He does not like the languages at all, nor I either.
19. The books are not on the table now.
20. Perhaps you are right, but one must go somewhere.

XIX. Conjunctions

1. Take him there yourself, that he may see what you are doing for him.
2. Although he is not very strong, he has travelled everywhere.
3. Although we get up rather late we never miss the train.
4. Tell it to him before you forget it.
5. Unless one is ill one

ought always to work. 6. I shall miss the train unless you arrive on time. 7. Some of his pupils came to see him before he went away. 8. It is a long time since I have seen you. 9. You should not have done that without asking my permission. 10. He missed his train because he would not get up early enough. 11. I shall not give it to her unless she asks for it. 12. In order to make grain grow, the farmer must plough the land. 13. The grandfather died six months before John was born. 14. Remain here until your brother returns. 15. I was wondering yesterday whether I should be able to speak to you. 16. He spoke in such a way that one could not understand him. 17. It is a long time since I spoke to him. 18. We shall not leave until our father comes. 19. They will not go away without speaking to you. 20. He went home for fear of catching cold.

XX. Miscellaneous

A. 1. He had not seen him for three years. 2. After looking at the two books I asked him which one he wanted. 3. I think he is right. 4. The more he works the more I will give him. 5. That poor little child must have been ill; he ought not to remain there any longer. 6. I am not going to Canada unless I can make more money there than at home. 7. I have a grudge against all those who do not like French. 8. How long have you been reading those old newspapers? For fifteen or twenty minutes. 9. Have you been in Paris long? No, we have been here only two weeks. 10. You ought to know how that is done. 11. Where is my sister? She has gone downstairs to get her books. 12. Although those children can't read yet, they can play a little on the piano. 13. That gentleman must have been in Paris, for he speaks French like a Parisian. 14. What is the matter with you? I have a terrible toothache. 15. These are the poems I heard read when I was in France. 16. He was sitting in front of the fire, thinking of all he had suffered. 17. Do not say that you do not remember it, for I told you about it two hours ago. 18. Have your friends come? Oh, yes! They have been here several weeks. 19. Nearly all Parisians are fond of the country and each Sunday every family is eager to go and spend the whole day in the woods and fields. 20. He is the best pupil in the school, because he works better than all the rest.

B. 1. One should sometimes read French newspapers to learn the language. 2. I hope you will accept the sixteen francs I offer

you. 3. I think you are right; he is far too lazy. 4. Your sister is older than you, but she is not so tall. 5. We are Americans, but we have been living in France for ten years. 6. We came here in the spring, having brought with us only three trunks and little money. 7. Are we not to meet our friends here? 8. We are going to meet them to-morrow in London. 9. They must have been very stupid; they never saw us. 10. Most of the students are unhappy now. 11. It is the largest town in America. 12. She ought not to have taken them so far from home. 13. Can you tell me how long that man has been ill? 14. We enjoyed ourselves there; the songs we heard sung were excellent. 15. When I used to know Henry, he did not know how to write. 16. The poor fellow had not eaten for two days; he was weak and hungry. 17. What do you say when you ask for anything in French? 18. I like reading very much. Do you wish me to read as many books as you do? 19. It was last Saturday that I went to the theatre. 20. What a pity that it is so late!

C. 1. They say that he died a few days ago, but few people believe it. 2. This is the oldest tree in the whole country. 3. That gentleman had lived two years in France before he came to the United States. 4. We had been living for two years in that house at the time (*moment*, m.) of his arrival. 5. That boy is lazy; he will often sleep (*pres.*) till ten o'clock. 6. I have been working hard all day and I am tired. 7. The master tells the pupils that they should not be so idle. 8. We ought not to have gone away before the others arrived. 9. When do you begin? We begin as soon as my brother has finished. 10. Send for the doctor; my cousin has hurt himself. 11. Do not get angry, but pardon your enemies. 12. The doctor has gone out; he will return at a quarter to eleven. 13. We had to sell our house cheap. 14. Never mind, bring your sister if she wishes to come. 15. Take off your gloves and sit down. 16. I did not answer because I was afraid. 17. I like to go sleighing when the weather is fine. 18. Do you know where Mr. T. lives? I know his father very well. 19. He is in the country and will remain there. 20. My brother is rich and is very fond of me. 21. There is a window which is open; tell John to close it. 22. One ought not to sit down here; it is too cold. 23. She ought to have come yesterday; I was expecting her. 24. The train must have been two hours late. 25. I have been ill for a week and I wish them to stay until I am better.

APPENDIX

A. GENDER OF NOUNS

1. **Gender by Derivation.** — French nouns from Latin are regularly derived from the accusative form, and their gender may usually be determined thus: —

(a) Latin masculines and neuters give French masculines:

L. murum, <i>m.</i>	mur, <i>m.</i>	L. librum, <i>m.</i>	livre, <i>m.</i>
L. corpus, <i>n.</i>	corps, <i>m.</i>	L. ferrum, <i>n.</i>	fer, <i>m.</i>

EXCEPTIONS: Latin abstracts in -or, *m.* (acc. -orem) are all *f.* in French, except honneur, labeur, amour; many neuter plurals in -a give a French feminine singular, e.g. L. folia = feuille, L. opera = œuvre, etc.

(b) Latin feminines give French feminines:

L. libram, <i>f.</i>	livre, <i>f.</i>	L. mansionem, <i>f.</i>	maison, <i>f.</i>
----------------------	------------------	-------------------------	-------------------

2. **Gender by Endings.** — The following general rules apply to nouns denoting inanimate objects: —

Masculine endings are:

(a) Vowels (not -e or abstracts in -té, -tié).

(b) Consonants (not -son, -ion or abstracts in -eur).

(c) -acle, -age, -asme, -ège, -ème, -isme, -tère.

EXCEPTIONS: Numerous, especially for masculine rules (a) and (b); six nouns in -age are feminine: cage, image, nage, page (book), plage, rage.

Feminine endings are:

(a) -e following a vowel or double consonant; abstracts in -té, -tié.

(b) -son, -ion and most abstracts in -eur.

(c) -ace, -ade, -ance, -ence, -euse, -ière, -oire, -ude, -ure.

3. **Double Gender.** — In some words the gender is determined by the sense; in others the sense by the gender, thus: —

(a) Most nouns in -e (and adjectives so used) denoting persons may be masculine or feminine:

un or une artiste un or une malade un or une enfant

(b) The meaning varies according to the gender:

un livre, *book* un voile, *veil* un manche, *handle*

une livre, *pound* une voile, *sail* une manche, *sleeve*

4. Formation of Feminine. — Most nouns denoting living beings distinguish the gender thus: —

- (a) By means of a different word: *oncle*, *tante*; *bœuf*, *vache*, etc.
- (b) By adding *-esse* to the last consonant: *abbé*, *abbesse*, *prince*, *princesse*, etc.
- (c) A few by *-ine*: *héros*, *héroïne*, etc.
- (d) Most nouns of professions, and a few others, lack a feminine form: *docteur*, *ange*, etc.
- (e) Some nouns are feminine, whether denoting males or females: *une personne*, *a person*, etc.
- (f) Some names of lower animals are masculine only, and some feminine only: *un éléphant*, *une fourmi*, etc.; *mâle* or *femelle* is added to avoid ambiguity: *un éléphant mâle*, *un éléphant femelle*.
- (g) Most other nouns follow the analogy of adjectives.

B. PLURAL OF NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES

The following rules are given for reference; see also the general rules, §§ 2, 32: —

1. Seven nouns in *-ou* take *-x*: *bijou(x)*, *caillou(x)*, *chou(x)*, *genou(x)*, *hibou(x)*, *joujou(x)*, *pou(x)*; other nouns in *-ou* are regular: *clou(s)*, *sou(s)*, etc.
2. Regular are: *bal(s)*, *carnaval(s)*, *chacal(s)* and rarer words.
3. The ending *-ail* becomes *-aux* in *bail*, *baux*, *corail*, *coraux*, *travail*, *travaux* and in rarer words; but *détail(s)*, etc., are regular.
4. Most common adjectives in *-al* have a plural in *-aux*; for doubtful cases consult dictionary.
5. Adjectives in *-eu* have the plural in *-s*, but observe *hébreu*, *hébreux*.
6. Some nouns have two plurals, mostly with varying meaning; examples are: *œuf*, *pl. œufs*, *ancestors*, *œufs*, *grandfathers*; *ciel*, *pl. cieux*, *skies*, *heavens*, *climates*, but *ciels*, *bed-canopies*, etc.; *œil*, *pl. yeux* but *œils* in compounds, e.g. *œils-de-bœuf*, *oval windows*; *travail*, *pl. travaux*, *works*, but *travails*, *reports*, etc.; *ail*, *pl. ails* or *aux*, *garlic*.
7. In compound nouns, only a component which is a noun or an adjective may take the plural sign.
8. Compounds without hyphen follow the general rules: *portemanteau(x)*, *grand'mère(s)*; but exceptionally: *bon(s)homme(s)*, *gentil(s)-homme(s)* and compounds of *mon-*, *ma-*: *monsieur*, *messieurs*, *madame*, *mesdames*, etc.

9. In compounds with hyphen, both components usually vary: *grand(s)-père(s)*, *chou(x)-fleur(s)*.

10. In compounds with preposition and hyphen, the first component is variable when the plural force belongs to it: *chef(s)-d'œuvre*, etc.; but *tête-à-tête*, singular or plural, where the plural idea belongs to the expression as a whole.

11. When the first component is invariable, the compound follows the general rule, but only when the plural idea belongs to the variable component: *vice-roi(s)*; but *abat-jour*, singular or plural, where the plural idea belongs to the expression as a whole.

12. The word *garde* in compounds is variable only when denoting persons: *garde(s)-malades*, *sick-nurse(s)*, but *garde-robés*, *wardrobes*.

13. Names of persons are regularly invariable: *les deux Racine*, *les Duval*; but a few historic family names take a plural sign: *les Césars*, etc.; usage varies for names denoting 'persons like': *les Corneilles*, *les Goethe*, *sont rares*.

14. Invariable words used as nouns take no plural sign: *les on dit*, etc.; so also foreign nouns, unless fully naturalized: *les post-scriptum*, etc.; but: *les biftecks*, etc.

15. A few Italian words retain their plural in *-i*: *dilettante*, *pl. dilettanti*, etc.

C. VERB PARADIGMS

1. THE REGULAR CONJUGATIONS

I

PRESENT

donner, give

II

Infinitive Mood

PRESENT

finir, finish

III

PRESENT

rompre, break**Participles**

PRESENT

donnant, giving

PRESENT

finissant, finishing

PRESENT

rompant, breaking

PAST

donné, given

PAST

fini, finished

PAST

rompu, broken

Indicative Mood

PRESENT	PRESENT	PRESENT
<i>I give, am giving, etc.</i>	<i>I finish, am finishing, etc.</i>	<i>I break, am breaking, etc.</i>
je donne	je finis	je romps
tu donnes	tu finis	tu romps
il donne	il finit	il rompt
nous donnons	nous finissons	nous rompons
vous donnez	vous finissez	vous rompez
ils donnent	ils finissent	ils rompent
IMPERFECT	IMPERFECT	IMPERFECT
<i>I was giving, used to give, etc.</i>	<i>I was finishing, used to finish, etc.</i>	<i>I was breaking, used to break, etc.</i>
je donnais	je finissais	je rompais
tu donnais	tu finissais	tu rompais
il donnait	il finissait	il rompait
nous donnions	nous finissions	nous rompions
vous donniez	vous finissiez	vous rompiez
ils donnaient	ils finissaient	ils rompaient
PAST DEFINITE	PAST DEFINITE	PAST DEFINITE
<i>I gave, etc.</i>	<i>I finished, etc.</i>	<i>I broke, etc.</i>
je donnai	je finis	je rompis
tu donnas	tu finis	tu rompis
il donna	il finit	il rompit
nous donnâmes	nous finimes	nous rompimes
vous donnâtes	vous finites	vous rompîtes
ils donnèrent	ils finirent	ils rompirent
FUTURE	FUTURE	FUTURE
<i>I shall give, etc.</i>	<i>I shall finish, etc.</i>	<i>I shall break, etc.</i>
je donnerai	je finirai	je romprai
tu donneras	tu finiras	tu rompras
il donnera	il finira	il rompra
nous donnerons	nous finirons	nous romprons
vous donnerez	vous finirez	vous romprez
ils donneront	ils finiront	ils rompront

CONDITIONAL*I should give, etc.*

je donnerais
tu donnerais
il donnerait
nous donnerions
vous donneriez
ils donnaient

CONDITIONAL*I should finish, etc.*

je finirais
tu finirais
il finirait
nous finirions
vous finiriez
ils finiraient

CONDITIONAL*I should break, etc.*

je romprais
tu romprais
il romprait
nous romprions
vous rompriez
ils rompraient

PRESENT*(That) I (may) give, etc.*

(que) je donne
(que) tu donnes
(qu') il donne
(que) nous donnions
(que) vous donniez
(qu') ils donnent

PRESENT*(That) I (may) finish, etc.*

(que) je finisse
(que) tu finisses
(qu') il finisse
(que) nous finissions
(que) vous finissiez
(qu') ils finissent

PRESENT*(That) I (may) break, etc.*

(que) je rompe
(que) tu rompes
(qu') il rompe
(que) nous rompions
(que) vous rompiez
(qu') ils rompent

IMPERFECT*(That) I (might) give, etc.*

(que) je donnasse
(que) tu donnasses
(qu') il donnât
(que) nous donnassions
(que) vous donnassiez
(qu') ils donnassent

IMPERFECT*(That) I (might) finish, etc.*

(que) je finisse
(que) tu finisses
(qu') il finit
(que) nous finissions
(que) vous finissiez
(qu') ils finissent

IMPERFECT*(That) I (might) break, etc.*

(que) je rompissois
(que) tu rompissies
(qu') il rompit
(que) nous rompissions
(que) vous rompissiez
(qu') ils rompissent

Imperative Mood**PRESENT***Give, etc.*

donne¹
qu'il donne
donnons
donnez
qu'ils donnent

PRESENT*Finish, etc.*

finis
qu'il finisse
finissons
finissez
qu'ils finissent

PRESENT*Break, etc.*

romps
qu'il rompe
rompons
rompez
qu'ils rompent

¹ This form becomes 'donnes' when followed by -y or -en.

2. THE AUXILIARY VERBS

Infinitive

✓ PRES. avoir, have

PRES. être, be

ParticiplesPRES. ayant, having
PAST, eu, hadPRES. étant, being
PAST, été, been**Indicative****PRESENT***I have, am having, etc.*

j'ai	nous avons
tu as	vous avez
il a	ils ont

IMPERFECT*I had, was having, etc.*

j'avais	nous avions
tu avais	vous aviez
il avait	ils avaient

PAST DEFINITE*I had, etc.*

j'eus	nous eûmes
tu eus	vous eûtes
il eut	ils eurent

FUTURE*I shall have, etc.*

j'aurai	nous aurons
tu auras	vous aurez
il aura	ils auront

CONDITIONAL*I should have, etc.*

j'aurais	nous aurions
tu auras	vous auriez
il aurait	ils auraient

PRESENT*I am, am being, etc.*

je suis	nous sommes
tu es	vous êtes
il est	ils sont

IMPERFECT*I was, was being, etc.*

j'étais	nous étions
tu étais	vous étiez
il était	ils étaient

PAST DEFINITE*I was, etc.*

je fus	nous fûmes
tu fus	vous fûtes
il fut	ils furent

FUTURE*I shall be, etc.*

je serai	nous serons
tu seras	vous serez
il sera	ils seront

CONDITIONAL*I should be, etc.*

je serais	nous serions
tu serais	vous seriez
il serait	ils seraient

Subjunctive**PRESENT**

(That) <i>I (may) have, etc.</i>		(That) <i>I (may) be, etc.</i>	
(que) j'aie	(que) nous ayons	(que) je sois	(que) nous soyons
(que) tu aies	(que) vous ayez	(que) tu sois	(que) vous soyez
(qu')il ait	(qu')ils aient	(qu')il soit	(qu')ils soient

IMPERFECT

(That) <i>I (might) have, etc.</i>		(That) <i>I (might) be, etc.</i>	
(que) j'eusse	(que) nous eussions	(que) je fusse	(que) nous fussions
(que) tu eusses	(que) vous eussiez	(que) tu fusses	(que) vous fussiez
(qu')il eût	(qu')ils eussent	(qu')il fût	(qu')ils fussent

Imperative**PRESENT***Have, etc.*

aie	ayons	sois	soyons
qu'il ait	ayez	soyez	soyez
	qu'ils aient	qu'il soit	qu'ils soient

PRESENT*Be, etc.***3. THE COMPOUND TENSES****Infinitive****PERFECT***To have given*
avoir donné**PERFECT***To have arrived*
être arrivé(e)(s)**Participle****PERFECT***Having given*
ayant donné**PERFECT***Having arrived*
étant arrivé(e)(s)**Indicative****PAST INDEFINITE***I have given, etc.*
j'ai donné
tu as donné
etc.**PAST INDEFINITE***I have arrived, etc.*
je suis arrivé(e)
tu es arrivé(e)
etc.

PLUPERFECT	PLUPERFECT
<i>I had given, etc.</i>	<i>I had arrived, etc.</i>
j'avais donné, etc.	j'étais arrivé(e), etc.
PAST ANTERIOR	PAST ANTERIOR
<i>I had given, etc.</i>	<i>I had arrived, etc.</i>
j'eus donné, etc.	je fus arrivé(e), etc.
FUTURE ANTERIOR	FUTURE ANTERIOR
<i>I shall have given, etc.</i>	<i>I shall have arrived, etc.</i>
j'aurai donné, etc.	je serai arrivé(e), etc.
CONDITIONAL ANTERIOR	CONDITIONAL ANTERIOR
<i>I should have given, etc.</i>	<i>I should have arrived, etc.</i>
j'aurais donné, etc.	je serais arrivé(e), etc.

Subjunctive

PERFECT	PERFECT
<i>(That) I (may) have given, etc.</i>	<i>(That) I (may) have arrived, etc.</i>
(que) j'aie donné, etc.	que je sois arrivé(e), etc.
PLUPERFECT	PLUPERFECT
<i>(That) I (might) have given, etc.</i>	<i>(That) I (might) have arrived, etc.</i>
(que) j'eusse donné, etc.	(que) je fusse arrivé(e), etc.

4. THE PASSIVE VOICE**Infinitive**

PRESENT	PERFECT
être aimé(e)(s), <i>to be loved</i>	avoir été aimé(e)(s), <i>to have been loved</i>

Participle

PRESENT	PERFECT
étant aimé(e)(s), <i>being loved</i>	ayant été aimé(e)(s), <i>having been loved</i>

Indicative**PRESENT***I am (being) loved, etc.*

je suis	aimé(e)
tu es	aimé(e)
il (elle) est	aimé(e)
nous sommes	aimé(e)s
vous êtes	aimé(e)s
ils (elles) sont	aimé(e)s

IMPERFECT*I was (being) loved, etc.*

j'étais aimé(e), etc.

PAST DEFINITE*I was loved, etc.*

je fus aimé(e), etc.

FUTURE*I shall be loved, etc.*

je serai aimé(e), etc.

CONDITIONAL*I should be loved, etc.*

je serais aimé(e), etc.

PAST INDEFINITE*I have been (was) loved, etc.*

j'ai	été aimé(e)
tu as	été aimé(e)
il (elle) a	été aimé(e)
nous avons	été aimé(e)s
vous avez	été aimé(e)s
ils (elles) ont	été aimé(e)s

PLUPERFECT*I had been loved, etc.*

j'avais été aimé(e), etc.

PAST ANTERIOR*I had been loved, etc.*

j'eus été aimé(e), etc.

FUTURE PERFECT*I shall have been loved, etc.*

j'aurai été aimé(e), etc.

CONDITIONAL ANTERIOR*I should have been loved, etc.*

j'aurais été aimé(e), etc.

Subjunctive**PRESENT***(That) I may be loved, etc.*

(que) je sois aimé(e), etc.

PERFECT*(That) I may have been loved, etc.*

(que) j'aie été aimé(e), etc.

IMPERFECT*(That) I might be loved, etc.*

(que) je fusse aimé(e), etc.

PLUPERFECT*(That) I might have been loved, etc.*

(que) j'eusse été aimé(e), etc.

Imperative*Be loved, etc.*sois aimé(e)
qu'il (elle) soit aimé(e)soyons aimé(e)s
soyez aimé(e)s
qu'ils (elles) soient aimé(e)s

5. THE REFLEXIVE VERB

Infinitive

PRESENT

se couper, *to cut oneself*

PERFECT

s'être coupé(e)s, *to have cut oneself*Participle

PRESENT

se coupant, *cutting oneself*

PERFECT

s'étant coupé(e)s, *having cut oneself*Indicative

PRESENT

I cut (am cutting) myself, etc.

je me coupe
 tu te coupes
 il se coupe
 nous nous coupons
 vous vous coupez
 ils se coupent

PAST INDEFINITE

I have cut (cut) myself, etc.

je me suis coupé(e)
 tu t'es coupé(e)
 il (elle) s'est coupé(e)
 nous nous sommes coupé(e)s
 vous vous êtes coupé(e)s
 ils (elles) se sont coupé(e)s

IMPERFECT

I was cutting (cut) myself, etc.

je me coupais, etc.

PLUPERFECT

I had cut myself, etc.

je m'étais coupé(e), etc.

PAST DEFINITE

I cut myself, etc.
 je me coupai, etc.

PAST ANTERIOR

I had cut myself, etc.
 je me fus coupé(e), etc.

FUTURE

I shall cut myself, etc.
 je me couperai, etc.

FUTURE PERFECT

I shall have cut myself, etc.
 je me serai coupé(e)

CONDITIONAL

I should cut myself, etc.
 je me couperais, etc.

CONDITIONAL ANTERIOR

I should have cut myself, etc.
 je me serais coupé(e), etc.

Subjunctive

PRESENT

(*That*) *I may cut myself, etc.*
 (que) je me coupe, etc.

PERFECT

(*That*) *I may have cut myself, etc.*
 (que) je me sois coupé(e), etc.

IMPERFECT

(That) *I might cut myself, etc.*
(que) je me coupasse, etc.

PLUPERFECT

(That) *I might have cut myself, etc.*
(que) je me fusse coupé(e), etc.

Imperative

Cut thyself (yourself), etc.

coupe-toi	coupons-nous
qu'il se coupe	coupez-vous
qu'ils se coupent	

NOTE. — The reflexive verb *s'en aller*, *go away*, presents special difficulty in the arrangement of the prounoun objects as seen in the following examples; in practice, *partir* often takes its place.

Present Indicative**AFFIRMATIVE**

<i>I go away, etc.</i>	
je m'en vais	
tu t'en vas	
il s'en va	
nous nous en allons	
vous vous en allez	
ils s'en vont	

NEGATIVE

<i>I do not go away, etc.</i>	
je ne m'en vais pas	
tu ne t'en vas pas	
il ne s'en va pas	
nous ne nous en allons pas	
vous ne vous en allez pas	
ils ne s'en vont pas	

INTERROGATIVE

<i>Do I go away? etc.</i>	
m'en vais-je?	
t'en vas-tu?	
s'en va-t-il?	
nous en allons-nous?	
vous en allez-vous?	
s'en vont-ils?	

INTERROGATIVE NEGATIVE

<i>Do I not go away? etc.</i>	
ne m'en vais-je pas?	
ne t'en vas-tu pas?	
ne s'en va-t-il pas?	
ne nous en allons-nous pas?	
ne vous en allez-vous pas?	
ne s'en vont-ils pas?	

Past Indefinite**NEGATIVE**

I have not gone away, etc.

je ne m'en suis pas	allé(e)
tu ne t'en es pas	allé(e)
il (elle) ne s'en est pas	allé(e)
nous ne nous en sommes pas	allé(e)s
vous ne vous en êtes pas	allé(e)s
ils (elles) ne s'en sont pas	allé(e)s

INTERROGATIVE NEGATIVE

Have I not gone away? etc.

ne m'en suis-je pas	allé(e)?
ne t'en es-tu pas	allé(e)?
ne s'en est-il (elle) pas	allé(e)?
ne nous en sommes-nous pas	allé(e)s?
ne vous en êtes-vous pas	allé(e)s?
ne s'en sont-ils (elles) pas	allé(e)s?

Imperative

AFFIRMATIVE

Go away, etc.

va-t'en	
qu'il s'en aille	
allons-nous-en	
allez-vous-en	
qu'ils s'en aillent	

NEGATIVE

Do not go away, etc.

ne t'en va pas	
qu'il ne s'en aille pas	
ne nous en allons pas	
ne vous en allez pas	
qu'ils ne s'en aillent pas	

D. ORTHOGRAPHICAL PECULIARITIES — FIRST CONJUGATION

1. Verbs ending in -cer, e.g. *avancer* [avãsə], *advance*, must preserve the [s] sound of c throughout their conjugation, and hence c becomes ç when it precedes a or o of an ending, but not elsewhere; for the sounds of c and ç, see Introduction, p. xviii.

PRES. PART.	PRES. INDIC.	IMPF. INDIC.	PAST DPF.	IMPF. SUBJ.
avançant	avance	avançais	avançai	avançasse
	avances	avançais	avanças.	avançasses
	avance	avançait	avança	avançat
	avançons	avançions	avançâmes	avançassions
	avancez	avançiez	avançâtes	avançassiez
	avancent	avançaient	avançèrent	avançassent

NOTE.— Pronoun subjects are omitted to save space.

2. Verbs ending in -ger, e.g. *manger* [mãʒe], *eat*, must preserve the [ʒ] sound of g throughout their conjugation, and hence g becomes ge when it precedes a or o of an ending, but not elsewhere; for the sounds of g and ge, see Introduction, p. xviii.

PRES. PART.	PRES. INDIC.	IMPF. INDIC.	PAST DEF.	IMPF. SUBJ.
mangeant	mange	mangeais	mangeai	mangeasse
	manges	mangeais	mangeas	mangeasses
	mange	mangeait	mangea	mangeât
	mangeons	mangions	mangeâmes	mangeassions
	mangez	mangiez	mangeâtes	mangeassiez
	mangent	mangeaient	mangèrent	mangeassent

3. Verbs ending in -oyer and -uyer, e.g. *nettoyer*, *clean*, *essuyer*, *wipe*, change y to i whenever it comes before e mute in conjugation, but not elsewhere; verbs in -ayer, e.g. *payer*, *pay*, may retain y throughout, or change y to i before e mute; for e mute, see Introduction, p. xiii.

PRES. INDIC.	PRES. SUBJ.	FUTURE	CONDITIONAL
nettoie	nettoie	nettoierai	nettoierais
nettoies	nettoies	nettoieras	nettoierais
nettoie	nettoie	nettoiera	nettoierait
nettoyons	nettoyions	nettoierons	nettoierions
nettoyez	nettoyez	nettoierez	nettoieriez
nettoient	nettoient	nettoieront	nettoieraient
essuie	essuie	essuierai	essuierais
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.
paie } etc.	paie } etc.	paierai } etc.	paierais } etc.
paye }	paye }	payerais }	payerais }

4. Verbs having the stem vowel e, e.g. *mener*, *lead*, change this e to è wherever in conjugating the verb it is followed by a syllable containing e mute (but for verbs in -eler, -eter, see below).

PRES. INDIC.	PRES. SUBJ.	FUTURE	CONDITIONAL
mène	mène	mènerai	mènerais
mènes	mènes	mèneras	mènerais
mène	mène	mènera	mènerait
menons	menions	mènerons	mènerions
menez	meniez	mènerez	mèneriez
mènent	mènent	mèneront	mèneraient

NOTE. — The principle involved here is that if e mute occurs in two successive syllables, the first e takes the sound [ɛ], indicated above by è.

5. Verbs having the stem vowel *é* followed by a consonant, e.g. *céder*, *yield*, change *é* to *è* in the present indicative and subjunctive, but retain *é* in the future and conditional when followed by a syllable containing *e* mute, *é* in the future and conditional having exceptionally the [e] sound.

PRES. INDIC.	PRES. SUBJ.	FUTURE	CONDITIONAL
cède, etc.	cède, etc.	céderai, etc.	céderais, etc.

NOTE. — Verbs with stem vowel *é* + vowel are regular, e.g. *créer*.

6. Verbs in *-eler*, *-eter*, e.g. *appeler*, *call*, *jeter*, *throw*, usually double l or t before an *e* mute syllable in conjugation (but with some important exceptions, see below).

PRES. INDIC.	PRES. SUBJ.	FUTURE	CONDITIONAL
appelle	appelle	appellerai	appellerais
appelles	appelles	appelleras	appellerais
appelle	appelle	appellera	appelleraït
appelons	appelions	appellerons	appellerions
appelez	appeliez	appellerez	appelleriez
appellent	appellent	appelleront	appelleraient

So also *jeter*:

jette, etc.	jette, etc.	jetterai, etc.	jetterais, etc.
-------------	-------------	----------------	-----------------

NOTE. — The same principle is involved as that explained in the Note to 4, above, but here the [e] sound of *e* is indicated by a doubled consonant.

7. A few verbs in *-eler*, *-eter* (the commonest being *acheter*, *buy*, *geler*, *freeze*) take the grave accent like *mener*, see 4, above.

PRES. INDIC.	PRES. SUBJ.	FUTURE	CONDITIONAL
achète, etc.	achète, etc.	achèterai, etc.	achèterais, etc.
gèle, etc.	gèle, etc.	gèlerai, etc.	gèlerais, etc.

E. LIST OF PRINCIPAL IRREGULAR VERBS

- The rules for inferring the various moods and tenses from the principal parts are given in §§ 157, 158.
- The pronoun subjects are omitted for brevity, but should be supplied in learning or reciting the verbs.
- The future and conditional are combined for brevity, e.g. *j'acquerrai(s)* = *j'acquerrais* and *j'acquerrais*.
- Compounds are usually to be found under the principal verb.
- The more difficult tenses are given in full.
- The auxiliaries *avoir* and *être* are not included.
- For key to the list, see p. 259.

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Acquérir (acquire) acquerrai(s)	acquérant acquérais acquière	acquis	acquires	acquis acquise
PRES. IND.: acquiers, acquiers, acquiert, acquérons, acquérez, acquièrent.				
PRES. SUBJ.: acquière, acquières, acquière, acquérons, acquérez, acquièrent.	conquérir, conquer		reconquérir, reconquer	
Aller (go) irai(s) ¹	allant allais aille	allé	vais ²	allai allasse
PRES. IND.: vais, ² vas, ² va, ² allons, allez, vont. ²				
PRES. SUBJ.: aille, ailles, aille, allions, alliez, aillent.				
	¹ From Lat. ire.		² From Lat. vadere.	
Assaillir (assail) assaillirai(s)	assaillant assaillaïs assaille	assailli	assaille	assaillis assaillisse
PRES. IND.: assaille, assailles, assaille, assaillons, assaillez, assaillent.	tressaillir, start		saillir, jut out	
Asseoir (seat) assierai(s) ¹	asseyant ³ asseyais ³ asseye	assis	{ assieds assois	assis assissee
PRES. IND.: { assieds, assieds, assied, asseyons, asseyez, asseyent. { assois, assois, assoit, assoyons, assoyez, assoient.				
PRES. SUBJ.: { asseye, asseyes, asseye, asseyions, asseyiez, asseyent. { assoie, assoies, assoie, assoyions, assoyiez, assoient.				
IMPVE.: { assieds, asseyons, asseyez. { assois, assoyons, assoyez.				
	¹ or asseyerai(s) or assoirai(s). ² or assoyant. ³ or assoyais			
s'asseoir, sit down	rasseroir, reseat, calm		se rasseroir, sit down again	
Battre (beat) battrai(s)	battant battaïs batte	battu	bats	battis battisse
PRES. IND.: bats, bats, bat, battons, battez, battent.				
abattre, fell combattre, fight	débattre, debate se débattre, struggle		rabattre, beat down	

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Boire (drink)	buvant buvais boirai(s)	bu boive	bois	bus busse

PRES. IND.: bois, bois, boit, buvons, buvez, boivent.

PRES. SUBJ.: boive, boives, boive, buvions, buviez, boivent.

reboire, *drink again*

Bouillir (boil)	bouillant bouillais bouillirai(s)	bouilli	bous	bouillis bouillisse

PRES. IND.: bous, bous, bout, bouillons, bouillez, bouillent.

ébouillir, *boil away*

rebouillir, *boil again*

Conclure (conclude)	concluant concluavis conclurai(s)	conclu	conclus	conclus conclusse

PRES. IND.: conclus, conclus, conclut, concluons, concluez, concluent.

exclure, *exclude*

inclure,¹ *include*

¹ Past part. inclus.

Conduire (conduct)	conduisant conduisais conduirai(s)	conduit	conduis	conduisis conduisisse

PRES. IND.: conduis, conduis, conduit, conduisons, conduisez, conduisent.

éconduire, *show out*

reconduire, *lead back*

déduire, *deduct*

enduire, *plaster*

induire, *induce*

introduire, *introduce*

produire, *produce*

réduire, *reduce*

reproduire, *reproduce*

séduire, *mislead*

traduire, *translate*

Confire (preserve)	confisant confisais confirai(s)	confit	confis	confis confisse

PRES. IND.: confis, confis, confit, confisons, confisez, confisent.

suffire (p. part. suffi), *suffice*

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Connaitre (know)	connaissant	connu	connais	connus
connaidrai(s)	connaissais			connusse
	connaisse			
PRES. IND.: connais, connais, connaît, connaissons, connaissez, connaissent.				
méconnaitre, <i>not to know</i>	comparaître, <i>appear</i>		pâtre, ¹ <i>graze</i>	
reconnaitre, <i>recognize</i>	disparaître, <i>disappear</i>		repâtre, <i>feed, feast</i>	
paraître, <i>appear</i>	réparaître, <i>reappear</i>		se repâtre, <i>feed, feast</i>	
apparaître, <i>appear</i>				
	1 Lacks the past part., past def., and impf. subj.			
Construire (construct)	construisant	construit	construis	construisis
construirai(s)	construisais			construisisse
	construise			
PRES. IND.: construis, construis, construit, construisons, construisez, construisent.				
déconstruire, <i>take apart</i>			reconstruire, <i>reconstruct</i>	
instruire, <i>instruct</i>			détruire, <i>destroy</i>	
Coudre (sew)	cousant	couzu	couds	cousis
coudrai(s)	cousais			cousisse
	couse			
PRES. IND.: couds, couds, coud, cousons, cosez, cousent.				
découdre, <i>rip, unsew</i>			recoudre, <i>sew again</i>	
Courir (run)	courant	couru	cours	courus
courrai(s)	courais		cours	courusse
	coure			
PRES. IND.: cours, cours, court, courons, courez, courent.				
accourir, <i>run up</i>			secourir, <i>help</i>	
concourir, <i>concur</i>	encourir, <i>incur</i>			
discourir, <i>discourse</i>	parcourir, <i>run over</i>			
	recourir, <i>apply</i>			
Craindre (fear)	craignant	crain	crains	craignis
craindrai(s)	craignais			craignisse
	craigne			
PRES. IND.: crains, crains, craint, craignons, craignez, craignent.				
contraindre, <i>constraint</i>	plaintre, <i>pity</i>		se plaintre, <i>complain</i>	

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Croire (believe)	croyant	cru	crois	crus
	croyais			crusse
croirai(s)	croie			

PRES. IND.: crois, crois, croit, croyons, croyez, croient.

PRES. SUBJ.: croie, croies, croie, croyions, croyiez, croient.

Croître <i>(grow)</i>	croissant croissais croîtrai(s)	crû (f. crue)	crois	crûs crûsse
---------------------------------	---------------------------------------	------------------	-------	----------------

PRES. IND.: crois, crois, crois, croissons, croissez, croissent.

Cueillir <i>(gather)</i>	cueillant	cueilli	cueille	cueillis
	cueillais			cueillisse
cueillerai(s)	cueille			

PRES. IND.: cueille, cueilles, cueille, cueillons, cueillez, cueillent.

accueillir, welcome

recueillir, gather, collect

Cuire <i>(cook)</i>	cuisant	cuit	cuis	cuisis
	cuisais			cuisisse
cuirai(s)	cuise			

PRES. IND.: *cuis, cuis, cuit, cuisons, cuisez, cuisent.*

recuire, cook again

reliure,² *glisten*

nuire,³ injure

Juice,¹ shiny

¹ Past part. lui.

² Past part. relui.

^a Past part. n.

Devoir <i>(owe, must)</i>	devant	dû	dois	dus
	devais	(f. due,		dusse
devrai(s)	doive	pl. du(e)s)		

PRES. IND.: **dois, dois, doit, devons, devez, doivent.**

PRES. SUBJ.: *doive, doives, doive, devions, deviez, doivent.*

redevoir, still owe

Dire <i>(say)</i>	disant	dit	dis	dis
	disais			diisse
dirai(s)	dise			

PRES. IND.: dis, dis, dit, disons, dites, disent.

contredire,¹ *contradict*

interdire,¹ interdict

prédir,¹ predict

dédire,¹ retract

médire,¹ slander

redire, say again

¹ The 2d pl. pres. indic. and impv. is -disez.

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Dormir (sleep) dormirai(s)	dormant dormais dorme	dormi	dors	dormis dormisse
PRES. IND.: dors, dors, dort, dormons, dormez, dorment.				
' endormir, <i>put to sleep</i> s'endormir, <i>fall asleep</i>		redormir, <i>sleep again</i>	rendormir, <i>put to sleep again</i> se rendormir, <i>go to sleep again</i>	
Ecrire (write) écrirai(s)	écrivant écrivais écrive	écrit	écris	écrivis écrivisse
PRES. IND.: écris, écris, écrit, écrivons, écrivez, écrivent.				
circonscrire, <i>circumscribe</i> décrire, <i>describe</i> inscrire, <i>inscribe</i>		prescrire, <i>prescribe</i> proscire, <i>proscribe</i> récrire, <i>rewrite</i>		souscrire, <i>subscribe</i> transcrire, <i>transcribe</i>
Envoyer (send) enverrai(s)	envoyant envoyais envoie	envoyé	envoie	envoyai envoyasse
PRES. IND.: envoie, envoies, envoie, envoyons, envoyez, envoient.				
PRES. SUBJ.: envoie, envoies, envoie, envoyions, envoyiez, envoient. renvoyer, <i>send away</i>				
Faire (do, make) ferai(s)	faisant faisais fasse	fait	fais	fis fisse
PRES. IND.: fais, fais, fait, faisons, faites, font.				
PRES. SUBJ.: fasse, fasses, fasse, fassions, fassiez, fassent.				
contrefaire, <i>imitate</i> défaire, <i>undo</i> méfaire, <i>harm</i>		parfaire, <i>complete</i> rédfaire, <i>undo again</i> refaire, <i>do again</i>		satisfaire, <i>satisfy</i> surfaire, <i>overcharge</i>
Falloir (<i>impers.</i>) (must) il faudra(it)	— il fallait il faille	fallu	il faut	il fallut il fallût
Fleurir (flourish)	florissant ¹ florissais ¹	—	—	—

¹ Has these irreg. forms when used of persons or collections of persons; impf. fleurissais, etc., is used of things; literally = blossom, bloom, it is regular throughout.

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Fuir (<i>fly, flee</i>)	fuyant fuyais	fui fuyais	fuis	fuis fuisse
fuirai(s)	fuie			

PRES. IND.: fuis, fuis, fuit, fuyons, fuyez, fuient.

PRES. SUBJ.: fuie, fuies, fuie, fuyions, fuyiez, fuient.

s'enfuir, escape

Gésir (<i>lie buried</i>)	gisant gisais	—	il git	—
—	—	—	—	—

PRES. IND.: —, —, git, gisons, gisez, gisent.

Hair (<i>hate</i>)	haïssant haïssais	hai	hais	hais haisse
hairai(s)	haïsse			

PRES. IND.: hais, hais, hait, haïssons, haïssez, haïssent.

PAST DEF.: hais, hais, hait, haïmes, haïtes, haïrent.

IMPF. SUBJ.: haïsse, haïsses, hait, haïssions, haïssiez, haïssent.

Joindre (<i>join</i>)	joignant joignais	joint	joins	joignis
joindrai(s)	joigne			joignisse

PRES. IND.: joins, joins, joint, joignons, joignez, joignent.

adjoindre, <i>adjoin</i>	disjoindre, <i>disjoin</i>	oindre, <i>anoint</i>
conjoindre, <i>conjoin</i>	enjoindre, <i>enjoin</i>	poindre, <i>dawn</i>
déjoindre, <i>disjoin</i>	rejoindre, <i>rejoin</i>	

Lire (<i>read</i>)	lisant lisais	lu	lis	lus
lirai(s)	lise			lusse

PRES. IND.: lis, lis, lit, lisons, lisez, lisent.

élire, <i>elect</i>	réélire, <i>reelect</i>	relire, <i>read again</i>
---------------------	-------------------------	---------------------------

Maudire (<i>curse</i>)	maudissant maudissais	maudit	maudis	maudis
maudirai(s)	maudisse			maudisse

PRES. IND.: maudis, maudis, maudit, maudissons, maudissez, maudissent.

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Mettre (<i>put</i>)	mettant mettais mettrai(s)	mis	mets	mis misse
PRES. IND.: mets, mets, met, mettons, mettez, mettent.				
se mettre, <i>bégin</i>	émettre, <i>emît</i>		remettre, <i>put back, hand to</i>	
admettre, <i>admit</i>	s'entremettre, <i>interpose</i>		repromettre, <i>promise again</i>	
commettre, <i>commît</i>	omettre, <i>omit</i>		soumettre, <i>submit</i>	
compromettre, <i>compromise</i>	permettre, <i>permît</i>		transmettre, <i>transmit</i>	
démettre, <i>dismiss</i>	promettre, <i>promise</i>			

Moudre (<i>grind</i>)	moulant moulais moudrai(s)	moulu	mouds	moulus moulusse
PRES. IND.: mouds, mouds, moud, moulons, moulez, moulent.				
émoudre, <i>whet</i>	remoudre, <i>grind again</i>		rémoudre, <i>sharpen</i>	
Mourir (<i>die</i>)	mourant mourais mourrai(s)	mort	meurs	mourus mourusse
PRES. IND.: meurs, meurs, meurt, mourons, mourez, meurent.				
PRES. SUBJ.: meure, meures, meure, mourions, mouriez, meurent.				
se mourir, <i>be dying</i> (usually pres. indic. and impf. only)				

Mouvoir (<i>move</i>)	mouvant mouvais mouvrai(s)	mû (<i>f. mue,</i> <i>pl. mu(e)s</i>)	meus	mus musse
PRES. IND.: meus, meus, meut, mouvons, mouvez, meuvent.				
PRES. SUBJ.: meuve, meuvès, meuve, mouvions, mouviez, meuvent.				
émuvoir, <i>arouse</i> (past part. ému)			promouvoir, <i>promote</i> (past part. promu)	
se mouvoir, <i>move</i> (intr.)				

Naitre (<i>be born</i>)	naissant naissais naîtrai(s)	né	nais	naquis naquisse
PRES. IND.: nais, nais, naît, naissions, naissèz, naissent.				
		renaître, <i>revive</i>		

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Offrir <i>(offer)</i>	offrant offrais offrirai(s)	offert	offre	offris offrisse
	offre			

PRES. IND.: offre, offres, offre, offrons, offrez, offrent.

souffrir, suffer

Ouvrir <i>(open)</i>	ouvrant ouvrais ouvrirai(s)	ouvert	ouvre	ouvris ouvrissé
	ouvre			

PRES. IND.: ouvre, ouvres, ouvre, ouvrons, ouvrez, ouvrent.

couvrir, <i>cover</i> découvrir, <i>discover</i>	entr'ouvrir, <i>open slightly</i> recouvrir, <i>cover again</i>	rouvrir, <i>open again</i>
---	--	----------------------------

Partir <i>(set out)</i>	partant partais partirai(s)	parti	pars	partis partisse
	parte			

PRES. IND.: pars, pars, part, partons, partez, partent.

départir, <i>distribute</i> se départir, <i>desist</i>	repartir, <i>set out again</i> ressortir, <i>go out again</i>	sortir, <i>go out</i>
---	--	-----------------------

Peindre <i>(paint)</i>	peignant peignais peindrai(s)	peint	peins	peignis peignisse
	peigne			

PRES. IND.: peins, peins, peint, peignons, peignez, peignent.

astreindre, <i>subject</i> atteindre, <i>attain</i> ceindre, <i>enclose, gird, gird</i> <i>on (a sword, etc.)</i> dépeindre, <i>depict</i> empreindre, <i>imprint</i>	enceindre, <i>gird</i> enfreindre, <i>infringe</i> éteindre, <i>extinguish</i> étreindre, <i>draw tight</i> feindre, <i>feign</i> geindre, <i>groan</i>	repeindre, <i>paint again</i> restreindre, <i>restrain</i> teindre, <i>dye</i> déteindre, <i>fade</i> reteindre, <i>dye again</i>
--	--	---

Plaire <i>(please)</i>	plaisant plaisais plairai(s)	plu	plais	plus plusse
	plaise			

PRES. IND.: plais, plais, plait, plaisons, plaisez, plaisent.

complaire, <i>humour</i>	déplaire, <i>displease</i>
--------------------------	----------------------------

Pleuvoir (<i>impers.</i>) <i>(rain)</i>	pleuvant il pleuvait il pleuvra(it)	plu	il pleut	il pluît il plût
	il pleuve			

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Pourvoir (provide)	pourvoyant pourvoyais	pourvu	pourvois	pourvus
pourvoirai(s)	pourvoie			pourvusse
PRES. IND.:	pourvois, pourvois, pourvoit, pourvoyons, pourvoyez, pourvoient.			
PRES. SUBJ.:	pourvoie, pourvoies, pourvoie, pourvoyions, pourvoyiez, pourvoient.			

dépourvoir, strip, leave destitute

Pouvoir (be able)	pouvant pouvais	pu	peux or puis	pus
pourrai(s)	puisse			pusse
PRES. IND.:	peux or puis, peux, peut, pouvons, pouvez, peuvent.			
PRES. SUBJ.:	puisse, puisses, puisse, puissions, puissiez, puissent.			

Prendre (take)	prenant prenais	pris	prends	pris
prendrai(s)	prenne			prise
PRES. IND.:	prends, prends, prend, prenons, prenez, prennent.			
PRES. SUBJ.:	prenne, prennes, prenne, prenions, preniez, prennent.			
apprendre, learn désapprendre, unlearn comprendre, understand	entreprendre, undertake s'prendre, be taken with se méprendre, be mistaken		rapprendre, learn again reprendre, take back surprendre, surprise	

Recevoir (receive)	recevant recevais	reçu	reçois	reçus
recevrai(s)	reçoive			reçusse
PRES. IND.:	reçois, reçois, reçoit, recevons, recevez, reçoivent.			
PRES. SUBJ.:	reçoive, reçoives, reçoive, recevions, receviez, reçoivent.			
apercevoir, perceive concevoir, conceive	décevoir, deceive		percevoir, perceive, levy	

Résoudre (resolve)	résolvant résolvais	résolu or résous	résous	résolus
résoudrai(s)	résolve			résolusse
PRES. IND.:	résous, résous, résout, résolvons, résolvez, résolvent.			
absoudre, ¹ absolve (p. part. absous)	dissoudre, dissolve (p. part. dissous)			

¹ Lacks past def. and impf. subj.

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Rire (laugh)	riant riais	ri	ris	ris risee
rirai(s)	rie			

PRES. IND.: ris, ris, rit, rions, riez, rient.

PRES. SUBJ.: rie, ries, rie, riions, riiez, rient.

sourire, smile

Savoir (know)	sachant savais	su	sais	sus susse
saurai(s)	sache			

PRES. IND.: sais, sais, sait, savons, savez, savent.

PRES. SUBJ.: sache, saches, sache, sachions, sachiez, sachent.

IMPVE.: sache, sachons, sachez.

Sentir (feel)	sentant sentais	sendi	sens	sentis sentisse
sentirai(s)	sente			

PRES. IND.: sens, sens, sent, sentons, sentez, sentent.

consentir, consent pressentir, forebode	ressentir, resent mentir, lie	démentir, contradict se repentir, repent
--	----------------------------------	---

Servir (serve)	servant servais	servi	sers	servis servisse
servirai(s)	serve			

PRES. IND.: sers, sers, sert, servons, servez, servent.

se servir, make use of desservir, clear the table

Suivre (follow)	suivant suivais	suivi	suis	suivis suivisse
suivrai(s)	suive			

PRES. IND.: suis, suis, suit, suivons, suivez, suivent.

s'ensuivre, it follows (impers.) poursuivre, pursue

Taire (be silent)	taisant taisais	tu	tais	tus tusse
tairai(s)	taise			

PRES. IND.: tais, tais, tait, taisons, taisez, taisent.

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Tenir <i>(hold)</i>	tenant tenais	tenu	tiens	tins tinsse
tiendrai(s)	tienne			

PRES. IND.: tiens, tiens, tient, tenons, tenez, tiennent.

PRES. SUBJ.: tienne, tiennes, tienne, tenions, teniez, tiennent.

PAST DEF.: tins, tins, tint, tinmes, tintes, tinrent.

IMPF. SUBJ.: tinsse, tinsses, tint, tinssions, tinssiez, tinssent.

NOTE.— Compare conjugation of venir.

s'abstenir, abstain	détenir, detain	obtenir, obtain
appartenir, belong	entretenir, entertain	retenir, retain
contenir, contain	maintenir, maintain	soutenir, sustain

Traire <i>(milk)</i>	trayant trayais	trait	trais	—
trairai(s)	trai			—

PRES. IND.: traïs, traïs, trait, trayons, trayez, traient.

PRES. SUBJ.: traie, traies, traie, trayions, trayiez, traient.

abstraire, abstract attraire, attract	distraire, distract extraire, extract	soustraire, subtract
--	--	----------------------

Vaincre <i>(conquer)</i>	vainquant vainquais	vaincu	vaines	vainquis
vaincrai(s)	vainque			vainquisse

PRES. IND.: vaincs, vaincs, vainc, vainquons, vainquez, vainquent.

NOTE.— The stem *c* becomes *qu* before any vowel except *u*.

convaincre, convince

Valoir <i>(be worth)</i>	valant valais	valu	vaux	valus
vaudrai(s)	vaille			valusse

PRES. IND.: vaux, vaux, vaut, valons, valez, valent.

PRES. SUBJ.: vaille, vailles, vaille, valions, valiez, vaillent.

équivaloir, be equal to revaloir, pay back
prévaloir, prevail (pres. subj. prévale, etc.)

Vendre <i>(sell)</i>	vendant vendais	vendu	vends	vendis
vendrai(s)	vende			vendisse

PRES. IND.: vends, vends, vend, vendons, vendez, vendent.

revendre, sell again

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Venir (come)	venant venais	venu	viens	vins vinsse
viendrai(s)	vienne			

PRES. IND.: viens, viens, vient, venons, venez, viennent.

PRES. SUBJ.: vienne, viennes, vienne, venions, veniez, viennent.

PAST DEF.: vins, vins, vint, vinmes, vîntes, vinrent.

IMPF. SUBJ.: vinsse, vinsses, vînt, vinssions, vinssiez, vinssent.

NOTE.— Compare conjugation of tenir.

advenir, happen	intervenir, intervene	se souvenir, recollect
convenir, agree, suit	parvenir, attain	subvenir, aid
contrevenir, violate	prévenir, prevent	survenir, occur
circonvenir, circumvent	provenir, proceed (from, de)	se ressouvenir, recollect
devenir, become	revenir, come back	
disconvenir, be discordant	redevenir, become again	

Vêtir (clothe)	vêtant vêtais	vêtu	vêts	vêtis vêtisse
vêtirai(s)	vête			

PRES. IND.: vêts, vêts, vêt, vêtons, vêtez, vêtent.

dévêtir, divest revêtir, invest se revêtir, dress
se dévêtir, undress

NOTE.— Instead of vêtir use generally habiller.

Vivre (live)	vivant vivais	vécu	vis	vécus vécusse
vivrai(s)	vive			

PRES. IND.: vis, vis, vit, vivons, vivez, vivent.

revivre, revive survivre, survive

Voir (see)	voyant voyais	vu	vois	vis
verrai(s)	voie			visse

PRES. IND.: vois, vois, voit, voyons, voyez, voient.

PRES. SUBJ.: voie, voies, voie, voyions, voyiez, voient.

entrevoir, catch sight of revoir, see again prévoir, foresee (fut. prévoira)

INFIN.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRES. INDIC.	PAST DEF.
Vouloir (will)	voulant voulais	voulu	veux	voulus voulusse
voudrai(s)	veuille			

PRES. IND.: veux, veux, veut, voulons, voulez, veulent.

PRES. SUBJ.: veuille, veuilles, veuille, voulions, vouliez, veuillent.

NOTE.—The regular impve. veux, voulons, voulez is rare; veuillez, *have the kindness to*, generally serves as 2d plur. impve.

F. KEY TO LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

[The references are to the pages of the Alphabetical List. For the orthographical irregularities of verbs of the first conjugation, see pp. 244-246.]

A	C	D			
abattre	247	ceindre	254	coudre	249
absoudre	255	circconscrire . . .	251	courir	249
abstenir	257	circonvenir	258	couvrir	254
abstraire	257	combattre	247	craindre	249
accourir	249	commettre	253	croire	250
accueillir	250	comparaître	249	croître	250
acquérir	247	complaire	254	cueillir	250
adjoindre	252	comprendre	255	cuire	250
admettre	253	compromettre	253		
advenir	258	concevoir	255	débattre	247
aller	247	conclure	248	décevoir	255
apercevoir	255	concourir	249	déconstruire . . .	249
apparaître	249	conduire	248	découdre	249
appartenir	257	confire	248	découvrir	254
apprendre	255	conjoindre	252	décrire	251
assaillir	247	connaitre	249	dédire	250
asseoir	247	conquérir	247	déduire	248
astreindre	254	consentir	256	défaire	251
atteindre	254	construire	249	déjoindre	252
attraire	257	contenir	257	démentir	256
		contraindre	249	démentir	253
B	contredire	250	départir	254	
battre	247	contrefaire	251	dépeindre	254
boire	248	contresvir	258	déplaire	254
bouillir	248	convaincre	257	dépourvoir	255
		convenir	258	désapprendre . . .	255

desservir	256	éteindre	254	médire	250
déteindre	254	étreindre	254	méfaire	251
détenir	257	exclure	248	mentir	256
détruire	249	extraire	257	méprendre	255
devenir	258			mettre	253
dévêtir	258			moudre	253
devoir	250	F		mourir	253
dire	250	faire	251	mouvoir	253
disconvenir	258	falloir	251		
discourir	249	feindre	254	N	
disjoindre	252	fleurir	251	naître	253
disparaître	249	fuir	252	nuire	250
dissoudre	255				
distraire	257	G		O	
dormir	251	geindre	254	obtenir	257
		gésir	252	offrir	254
E		H		oindre	252
ébouillir	248	hair	252	omettre	253
éconduire	248			ouvrir	254
écrire	251	I			
élire	252	inclure	248	P	
émettre	253	induire	248	pâtre	249
émoudre	253	inscrire	251	parâitre	249
émouvoir	253	instruire	249	parcourir	249
empreindre	254	interdire	250	parfaire	251
enceindre	254	intervenir	258	partir	254
encourir	249	introduire	248	parvenir	258
endormir	251			peindre	254
enduire	248	J		percevoir	255
enfreindre	254	joindre	252	permettre	253
enfuir	252			plaindre	249
enjoindre	252	L		plaire	254
ensuivre	256	lire	252	pleuvoir	254
entremettre	253	luire	250	poindre	252
entreprendre	255	M		poursuivre	256
entretenir	257	maintenir	257	pourvoir	255
entrevoir	258	maudire	252	pouvoir	255
entr'ouvrir	254	méconnaître	249	prédire	250
envoyer	251			prendre	255
éprendre	255			prescrire	251
équivaloir	257				

pressentir . . .	256	reluire	250	sentir	256		
prévaloir . . .	257	remettre	253	servir	256		
prévenir . . .	258	remoudre	253	sortir	254		
prévoir . . .	258	rémoudre	253	souffrir	254		
produire . . .	248	renaître	253	soumettre	253		
promettre . . .	253	rendormir	251	sourire	256		
promouvoir . . .	253	renvoyer	251	sousérire	251		
proscire . . .	251	repâtre	249	soustraire	257		
provenir . . .	258	reparaître	249	soutenir	257		
		repartir	254	souvenir	258		
		repeindre	254	subvenir	258		
R							
rabattre . . .	247	repentir	256	suffire	248		
rapprendre . . .	255	reprendre	255	suivre	256		
rassoir . . .	247	reproduire	248	surfaire	251		
reboire . . .	248	repromettre	253	surprendre	255		
rebouillir . . .	248	résoudre	255	survenir	258		
recevoir . . .	255	ressentir	256	survivre	258		
reconduire . . .	248	ressortir	254				
reconnaitre . . .	249	ressouvenir	258	T			
reconquérir . . .	247	restreindre	254	taire	256		
reconstruire . . .	249	reteindre	254	teindre	254		
recoudre . . .	249	retenir	257	tenir	257		
recouvrir . . .	254	revaloir	257	traduire	248		
recourir . . .	249	revendre	257	traire	257		
récrire . . .	251	revenir	258	transcrire	251		
recueillir . . .	250	revêtir	258	transmettre	253		
recuire . . .	250	revivre	258	tressaillir	247		
redéfaire . . .	251	revoir	258				
redevenir . . .	258	rire	256	V			
redevoir . . .	250	rouvrir	254	vaincre	257		
redire . . .	250			valoir	257		
redormir . . .	251	S					
réduire . . .	248	saillir	247	venir	258		
réélire . . .	252	satisfaire	251	vêtir	258		
refaire . . .	251	savoir	256	vivre	258		
rejoindre . . .	252	secourir	249	voir	258		
relire . . .	252	séduire	248	vouloir	259		



FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

A

à, at, to, in; — moi, mine; — demain, good-bye (till to-morrow).
 a, *see* avoir.
 abeille, *f.*, bee.
 abondant, abundant, plentiful.
 abord, *m.*, approach; d'—, at first, firstly.
 abri, *m.*, shelter; à l'— de, sheltered from.
 acajou, *m.*, mahogany.
 accident, *m.*, accident.
 accepter, accept.
 accompagner, accompany, go with, come with.
 achat, *m.*, purchase.
 acheter, buy.
 acier, *m.*, steel; gravure sur —, steel engraving.
 adieu, adieu, good-bye.
 admirer, admire.
 adresser, address; s'—, apply.
 affaire, *f.*, affair, thing, business; faire des —s, do business.
 afin, in order; — de, — que, in order to, in order that.
 âge, *m.*, age.
 âgé, aged, old.
 agent, *m.*, agent, policeman.
 agir, act; il s'agit de, it is about, it is a question of.
 agréable, agreeable, pleasant.
 agréablement, agreeably, comfortably.
 agricole, agricultural.
 ai, *see* avoir.
 aide-maçon, *m.*, mason's helper, hodman.

aider, aid, help.
 aigre, sharp, sour.
 aiguille, *f.*, needle.
 aille, *see* aller.
 aimable, amiable, kind, nice.
 aimer, love, like, be fond of; — mieux, prefer; — autant, like as well.
 ainsi, thus, so; et — de suite, and so forth.
 air, *m.*, air, look; avoir l'—, look, seem; en plein —, in the open air.
 aisément, easy; at ease, well-to-do.
 algèbre, *f.*, algebra.
 aller, go, go on, fit; be; comment allez-vous? how are you? s'en —, go away; y — de, be at stake.
 allumer, light, kindle.
 alors, then, so.
 amener, take, bring.
 américain, American.
 Amérique, *f.*, America; — du Nord, North America.
 ami, —e, *m.*, *f.*, friend.
 amusement, *m.*, amusement.
 amuser, amuse, interest, entertain; s'—, amuse (enjoy) oneself, have a good time.
 an, *m.*, year.
 ancêtre, *m. or f.*, ancestor.
 ancien, ancient, old, former.
 anglais, English.
 Angleterre, *f.*, England.
 animal, *m.*, animal.
 animé, animated, lively.
 année, *f.*, year.
 août [u], *m.*, August.

- apercevoir, perceive; *s'*— de (que), perceive, notice.
- appartement, *m.*, suite of rooms, flat.
- appartenir, belong.
- appeler, call; *s'*—, be called, be named.
- appétit, *m.*, appetite; *l'*— vient en mangeant, desire comes with success, etc.
- apporter, carry to, bring.
- apprendre, learn.
- approcher, bring near; come near; *s'*— de, draw near, approach.
- approuver, approve.
- après, after, later; — que, after.
- après-demain, the day after tomorrow.
- après-midi, *m. or f.*, afternoon.
- arbre, *m.*, tree.
- architecte [arʒitekt], *m.*, architect.
- ardent, burning.
- ardeur, *f.*, ardour, warmth.
- argent, *m.*, silver; money.
- argenterie, *f.*, silverware.
- armoire, *f.*, cupboard.
- arracher, tear (out), tear off.
- arranger, arrange, place.
- arrêter, arrest, stop; *s'*—, stop.
- arrivée, *f.*, arrival.
- arriver, arrive, come; happen.
- article, *m.*, article.
- artiste, *m. or f.*, artist.
- as, see avoir.
- asperges, *f. pl.*, asparagus.
- asseoir, seat; *s'*—, sit down.
- assez, enough; rather, quite.
- assiette, *f.*, plate.
- assis, *p. part. of asseoir*, seated, sitting.
- assister, be present (at = à).
- Atlantique, *m. or f.*, Atlantic.
- attacher, tie, tie up.
- attendre, wait, wait for; faire —, keep waiting.
- attention, *f.*, attention; appeler *l'*— sur, call attention to.
- attirer, attract, call.
- attraper, catch.
- augmenter, increase.
- aujourd'hui, to-day.
- auparavant, before, formerly.
- au près de, with, as regards.
- aurai, see avoir.
- aussi, also, too; — . . . que, as . . . as.
- aussitôt que, as soon as.
- autant, as much, as many.
- auteur, *m.*, author.
- automne [ɔtɔn], *m. or f.*, autumn.
- automobile [ɔtəməbill], *m. or f.*, motor-car, automobile.
- autre, other; l'un et *l'*—, both.
- autrefois, formerly, once.
- autrui, others.
- avance, *f.*, advance; *d'*—, beforehand, too soon.
- avancer, advance, go on; be too fast.
- avant, before; — de, — que, before.
- avant-hier [avā(t)jeɪ̯], the day before yesterday.
- avec [avek], with.
- avenir, *m.*, future.
- avidement, eagerly, greedily.
- avoine, *f.*, oats.
- avoir, have, get; *y* —, be; il y a, there is, there are; qu'avez-vous? what is the matter with you?
- avouer, confess.
- avril [avri(l)], *m.*, April.
- ayons, ayez, see avoir.

B

- bagages, *m. pl.*, luggage, baggage.
- baie, *f.*, bay.
- baigner, bathe; se —, bathe.
- bain, *m.*, bath.
- bal, *m.*, ball, dance.
- balnéaire, bathing.

- baratte, *f.*, churn.
 bas, low; — âge, early age.
 basse-cour, *f.*, farmyard, poultry-yard.
 Bastille, *f.*, Bastille (taken July 14, 1789).
 bateau, *m.*, boat.
 bâtiment, *m.*, building.
 bâtir, build.
 bâton, *m.*, stick.
 battant, *m.*, leaf (*of door*); porte à deux —s, folding door.
 battre, beat, thresh, churn; — des mains, clap (their) hands.
 beau, bel, fine, beautiful, handsome; il fait —, it is fine (weather).
 beaucoup, much, very much, a great deal; many, very many.
 beau-frère, *m.*, brother-in-law.
 beauté, *f.*, beauty, fine sight, beautiful thing.
 Beauvais, *m.*, Beauvais, a town some 50 miles n. w. of Paris, where there is a government tapestry manufactory.
 bénéfices, *m. pl.*, profit.
 besoin, *m.*, need; avoir —, have need, need.
 bête, *f.*, beast, animal.
 beurre, *m.*, butter.
 Bible, *f.*, Bible.
 bibliothèque, *f.*, library, bookcase.
 bicyclette, *f.*, bicycle.
 bicycliste, *m. or f.*, bicyclist.
 bien [bjɛ], well, very well; very; much, many; really, indeed; comfortable; — que, although; as *n. m.*, good.
 bientôt [bjětɔ], soon.
 bijou, *m.*, jewel.
 bille, *f.*, marble (*plaything*).
 billet, *m.*, ticket.
 biscuit, *m.*, biscuit.
 blanc, white.
 blanchir, whiten; wash (*linen*).
 blé, *m. s. and pl.*, wheat.
 bleu, blue.
 bœuf [boef], *m.*, ox; beef; *pl.* bœufs [bo].
 boire, drink.
 bois [bwɑ], *m.*, wood.
 boiserie, *f.*, wainscoting.
 boîte, *f.*, box.
 boiter, limp.
 bon, good, gentle; kind (*to = pour*); right, suitable; sentir —, smell sweet.
 bonbons, *m. pl.*, sweets, candy.
 bonheur, *m.*, good fortune, happiness.
 bonjour, *m.*, good day, good morning.
 bonne, *f.*, servant, maid.
 bonsoir, good evening.
 bonté, *f.*, kindness.
 bord, *m.*, bank, shore, edge, side.
 botte, *f.*, bunch.
 boue, *f.*, mud.
 bougie, *f.*, wax candle.
 boulanger, *m.*, baker.
 bouquet, *m.*, bouquet.
 bouquetière, *f.*, flower girl.
 bout, *m.*, end; au — de, at the end of, after (*of time*).
 boutique, *f.*, shop (*small*).
 bouton, *m.*, button, stud.
 boutonnière, *f.*, buttonhole.
 branche, *f.*, branch.
 branle, *m.*, swinging, moving, movement, going.
 bras, *m.*, arm.
 brave, brave; good, worthy.
 brique, *f.*, brick.
 brosse, *f.*, brush; — à dents, tooth-brush.
 brosser, brush.
 brouter, browse, crop, eat.
 bruit, *m.*, noise.
 brûler, burn.
 bûcheron, *m.*, woodcutter.
 buffet, *m.*, sideboard.

bulletin, *m.*, list; — *de vote*, ballot(paper).
bureau, *m.*, office.

C

ça [sa], *see cela*.

cabine, *f.*, cabin (*on ship*).
cacher, hide.

cadeau, *m.*, present, gift.
café, *m.*, coffee, (first) breakfast;
 'café'; — **aulait**, coffee with milk.
 — **restaurant**, restaurant.

cahier, *m.*, exercise book, copy-book.

calculer, calculate.

cale, *f.*, hold (*of ship*).

camarade, *m. or f.*, comrade, companion.

campagne, *f.*, country.

Canada, *m.*, Canada.

canadien [kanadjɛ], Canadian.

canard, *m.*, duck.

candidat, *m.*, candidate.

canne, *f.*, cane, walking-stick.

capitaine, *m.*, captain.

capitale, *f.*, capital.

car, *conj.*, for.

carotte, *f.*, carrot.

carré, square.

carte, *f.*, card, map.

carton, *m.*, cardboard, cardboard box, box.

cas, *m.*, case.

cascade, *f.*, cascade, waterfall.

caser, put in place, settle.

casino, *m.*, casino.

casser, break.

castor, *m.*, beaver.

cause, *f.*, cause; à — de, on account of.

causer, chat.

cave, *f.*, cellar.

caviar, *m.*, caviar(e)..

ce, it, this, that, he, she, they, these, those.

ce, **cet**, **cette**, **ces**, this, that, these, those; — . . . -ci, — . . . -là, this, that.

ceci, this.

cela, that, this; **avec** —? what next? **comment** ça va-t-il? how are you? 'how goes it'?

célèbre, celebrated, famous.

celui, **celle**, **ceux**, **celles**, this (one), that (one), these, those; — -ci . . . — -là, this one . . . that one, the latter . . . the former.

cent, (a) hundred.

centième, *m.*, one one-hundredth.

centime, *m.*, centime ($\frac{1}{100}$ of a franc, about $\frac{1}{2}$ of a cent or half-penny).

centimètre, *m.*, centimetre ($\frac{1}{100}$ of a metre, about $\frac{1}{4}$ of an inch).

cependant, however, still, yet.

cerise, *f.*, cherry.

certain, certain.

chaise, *f.*, chair.

chaleur, *f.*, heat.

chambre, *f.*, room; — à coucher, bedroom.

chameau, *m.*, camel.

champ, *m.*, field.

chandelle, *f.*, candle.

changer, change; — d'air, change air, take a change of air.

chant, *m.*, singing, song.

chanter, sing.

chanteuse, *f.*, singer.

chapeau, *m.*, hat.

chapitre, *m.*, chapter.

chaque, each, every.

charbon, *m.*, coal.

chargé, loaded, laden.

charmant, charming.

charmé, charmed, delighted.

charrue, *f.*, plough.

chasser, chase, hunt.

chat, *m.*, cat.

château, *m.*, castle, mansion.

chaud, *adj.*, warm; *n. m.*, warmth;

avoir —, be warm; faire —, be warm (<i>of weather</i>).	cœur, <i>m.</i> , heart.
chauffage, <i>m.</i> , heating.	coffret, <i>m.</i> , casket.
chauffer, warm, heat; se —, warm oneself.	coiffer, dress the head (hair).
chemin, <i>m.</i> , road; — de fer, railway.	coiffeur, <i>m.</i> , hairdresser, barber.
chêne, <i>m.</i> , oak.	col, <i>m.</i> , collar; pass (<i>in mountains</i>).
cher, <i>adj.</i> , <i>adv.</i> , dear; le moins —, the cheapest.	collège, <i>m.</i> , college, school.
Cherbourg [ʃərbuʁ], <i>m.</i> , Cherbourg.	collier, <i>m.</i> , necklace.
chercher, look for, seek, search; venir —, come for; aller —, go for, go and get, go to meet.	collision, <i>f.</i> , collision.
chèvre, <i>f.</i> , living, cheer.	Colomb [kɔlɔ̃], <i>m.</i> , Columbus.
cheval, <i>m.</i> , horse; chevaux de bois, merry-go-round; à —, on horseback.	colonel, <i>m.</i> , colonel.
cheveu, <i>m.</i> , (a) hair; <i>pl.</i> , hair.	combien [kɔbjɛ̃], how much, how many.
chez, at the house (shop, etc.) of; — lui, at his house, with him.	commander, order.
chien [ʃjɛ̃], <i>m.</i> , dog.	comme, like, as.
choisir, choose, select.	commencer, commence, begin; — par, begin by, firstly.
chose, <i>f.</i> , thing.	comment, how.
chou, <i>m.</i> , cabbage.	commode, convenient, comfortable.
chute, <i>f.</i> , fall.	commode, <i>f.</i> , bureau, chest of drawers.
cinq [sɛ̃k], five.	commune, <i>f.</i> , municipality.
cinquante, fifty.	comparaison, <i>f.</i> , comparison.
cinquième, <i>m.</i> , fifth.	compartiment, <i>m.</i> , compartment.
ciseaux, <i>m. pl.</i> , scissors.	complet, <i>m.</i> , suit (of clothes).
citadin, <i>m.</i> , townsman.	complètement, completely.
citoyen [sitwajɛ̃], <i>m.</i> , citizen.	compliment, <i>m.</i> , compliment.
civilisation, <i>f.</i> , civilization.	composition, <i>f.</i> , composition.
clair, clear.	comprendre, understand.
Claire, <i>f.</i> , Claire, Clara.	compter [kɔt̪e], count; expect, hope.
classe, <i>f.</i> , class, classroom.	comtesse, <i>f.</i> , countess.
clef [kle], <i>f.</i> , key.	concert, <i>m.</i> , concert.
Clemence, <i>f.</i> , Clementina.	concours, <i>m.</i> , competition; — agricole, agricultural show.
client [klid̪], <i>m.</i> , client, customer, patient.	conduire, conduct; se —, conduct oneself, behave.
clientèle, <i>f.</i> , customers; practice.	conduite, <i>f.</i> , conduct.
climat, <i>m.</i> , climate.	confort, <i>m.</i> , comfort.
clou, <i>m.</i> , nail.	confortable, comfortable.
cocher, <i>m.</i> , coachman, driver.	congé, <i>m.</i> , leave, holiday.
cocon, <i>m.</i> , cocoon.	connaissance, <i>f.</i> , acquaintance.
	connaitre, know.
	conquête, <i>f.</i> , conquest.
	conseiller, <i>m.</i> , councillor.
	conseiller, counsel, advise.

- conséquent, par —, consequently.
 considérable, considerable.
 consommation, *f.*, consumption.
 constamment [kɔ̃stamã], constantly,
 ly, often.
 construction, *f.*, construction,
 building.
 construire, construct, build.
 contenir, contain.
 content, satisfied, pleased, glad.
 contenu, *p. part. of contenir.*
 continuer, continue.
 cordonnier, *m.*, shoemaker.
 corps, *m.*, body.
 corridor, *m.*, corridor, hall, pas-
 sage.
 corriger, correct.
 corsage, *m.*, waist, bodice.
 côté, *m.*, side; à — de, beside.
 coucher, put to bed; sleep; se —,
 lie down, go to bed, retire.
 coudre, sew.
 couler, flow, run.
 coup, *m.*, blow; — d'œil, glance,
 view, sight.
 coupe, *f.*, cutting, cut.
 couper, cut, cut down.
 cour, *f.*, yard, court(yard).
 courir, run.
 courrier, *m.*, courier; mail.
 cours, *m.*, course (of lectures), lec-
 ture; faire son —, (deliver) his
 lecture; — d'eau, stream.
 court, short.
 cousin, —e, *m., f.*, cousin.
 coussin, *m.*, cushion.
 cousu, see couture.
 couteau, *m.*, knife.
 coûter, cost.
 couture, *f.*, sewing.
 couturière, *f.*, dressmaker.
 couvert, *m.*, cover (*dishes, etc., for*
one person); tablecloth; mettre
 le —, lay (set) the table.
 couvrir, cover.
 craie, *f.*, chalk.
- craindre, fear.
 cravate, *f.*, necktie.
 crayon, *m.*, pencil.
 crier [krie], cry (out), shout, yell.
 croire, believe, think.
 cruel, cruel.
 cueillir, gather, pluck, pick.
 cuiller [kɥijɛʁ], *f.*, spoon.
 cuire, cook, bake; faire —, cook,
 bake.
 cuisine, *f.*, kitchen.
 cuisinière, *f.*, cook.
 cuisson, *f.*, cooking, baking.
 cuivre, *m.*, copper; gravure sur —,
 copperplate (engraving).
 cultivateur, *m.*, farmer.
 curé, *m.*, parish priest, 'curé.'

D

- dame, *f.*, lady.
 dans, in, into. .
 danser, dance.
 date, *f.*, date.
 davantage, more.
 de, of, from.
 dé, *m.*, thimble.
 débarquer, disembark, land.
 débarrasser, rid of.
 debout, upright, standing.
 décembre, *m.*, December.
 décoration, *f.*, decoration.
 décorer, decorate.
 découvrir, discover.
 décrire, describe.
 défendre, defend, forbid; il est
 défendu, it is forbidden, it is
 against the law.
 défricher, clear (*land*).
 dégeler, thaw.
 dehors [dəɔʁ], outside.
 déjà, already, yet.
 déjeuner, *m.*, breakfast, lunch.
 déjeuner, breakfast, lunch, take
 lunch.
 demain, to-morrow.

- demander, ask, ask for; *se —*, ask oneself, wonder.
- demeurer, live, dwell.
- demi, half.
- demi-kilo, *m.*, pound, half-kilogram.
- dent, *f.*, tooth.
- dépasser, exceed.
- dépêcher, dispatch; *se —*, hasten, make haste.
- dépendre, depend.
- dépenser, spend.
- déposer, deposit; cast.
- depuis, since; — que, since.
- dérailler, go off the track.
- déranger, disturb; *se —*, disturb oneself.
- déréglé, irregular.
- dernier, last.
- derrière, behind.
- descendre [desū:drl], descend, go down; get down, alight, get out; take down, put down.
- désirer, desire, wish; *laisser à —*, not be satisfactory.
- désolé, sorry.
- dessert, *m.*, dessert.
- dessous [dèsu], underneath.
- détacher, detach, unfasten; *se —*, detach oneself, come loose.
- deux, two; tous les —, both.
- deuxième, second.
- deuxièmement, secondly.
- devant, before, in front of.
- devanture, *f.*, front (shop) window.
- devenir, become.
- devoir, owe; be to; ought, be one's duty.
- devoir, *m.*, duty; exercise (*school*).
- dictionnaire, *m.*, dictionary.
- différent, different.
- difficile, difficult.
- difficulté, *f.*, difficulty.
- diligent, diligent, industrious.
- dimanche, *m.*, Sunday.
- dîner, *m.*, dinner.
- dîner, dine.
- dire, say, tell; *se —*, say to oneself (one another); be said; vouloir —, mean.
- disposer, arrange; *se —*, get ready.
- dix [dis], ten.
- docteur, *m.*, doctor; femme —, woman doctor, lady physician.
- dois, *see* devoir.
- dollar, *m.*, dollar.
- domestique, *m. or f.*, servant.
- dommage, *m.*, pity; c'est — que, it's a pity that.
- donc, then.
- donner, give, give away; yield; *se — la main*, shake hands.
- dont, of which, of whom, whose, with which, etc.
- dormir, sleep.
- dos, *m.*, back.
- doubler, line (*clothing*).
- douleur, *f.*, pain.
- douter, doubt.
- doux, sweet; soft, gentle, mild.
- douzaine, *f.*, dozen.
- droit [drwl], right; à —e, to the right.
- dû, *see* devoir.
- dur, *adj. or adv.*, hard.
- durer, last.

E

- eau, *f.*, water.
- eau-forte, *f.*, aquafortis, etching; gravure à l'—, etching.
- ébéniste, *m.*, cabinet-maker.
- échafaudage, *m.*, scaffolding.
- échapper (à), escape.
- échelle, *f.*, ladder.
- éclairage, *m.*, lighting.
- éclairer, light, illuminate, enlighten.
- école, *f.*, school.
- écolier, —ère *m., f.*, schoolboy, schoolgirl.

- économiser**, save.
écouter, listen (to).
écraser, crush; **se faire —**, get run over.
écrier (s') [ekrie], exclaim.
écrire, write.
écureuil, *m.*, squirrel.
écurie, *f.*, stable (*for horses*).
effet, *m.*, effect; **en —**, in fact, indeed.
égal, equal; **cela m'est —**, that's (all) the same to me, I don't care.
égaler, equal.
église, *f.*, church.
eh [e], — **bien!** well! well then!
électeur, *m.*, elector.
élection, *f.*, election.
électricité, *f.*, electricity.
électrique, electric.
éléphant, *m.*, elephant.
élève, *m. or f.*, pupil.
élevé, high.
élever, raise, bring up; **s'—**, rise, stand; **mal élevé**, rude, impolite, ill-mannered.
élire, elect.
elle, she, it, her.
elles, they.
embarquer, put on board; **s'—**, go (get) on board, take ship.
embrasser, embrace, kiss.
empêcher, hinder, prevent.
emplette, *f.*, purchase; **faire des —s**, buy things, go shopping.
employé, *m.*, employee, clerk.
employer, employ, use.
emporter, carry off, take away; **l'** — sur, win the day over.
emprunter, borrow.
en, of it, of them, some; from it, from them.
en, in, at; — même temps, at the same time; **de . . . —**, from . . . to.
enchanté, delighted.
enclume, *f.*, anvil.
encore, yet, still, again, more.
encre, *f.*, ink.
endormir, put to sleep; **s'—**, go to sleep.
endroit, *m.*, place.
enfant, *m. or f.*, child, boy, girl.
enfin, at last, finally; in short.
ennui [ānqi], *m.*, weariness, loneliness, tedium, sorrow.
ennuyer [ānqije], weary, annoy; **s'—**, grow weary, feel lonely, be bored, be sad.
enrumer (s'), catch (a) cold.
enseigner, teach.
ensemble, together.
ensuite, then, next, afterwards.
entendre, hear; — **parler de**, hear of; — **dire**, hear said; — **chanter**, hear sing (*or sung*).
entourer, surround.
entrée, *f.*, entrance, admission; 'entrée'.
entrer, go in, come in, enter; **faire —**, show in.
environ, around, about; *n. pl.*, surrounding parts, neighbourhood.
envoyer, send; — **chercher**, send for.
épais, thick.
épi, *m.*, ear (*of grain*), head.
épicier, *m.*, grocer.
équestre [ekwestr or ekestr], equestrian.
es, *see* être.
escalier, *m.*, stairway.
escorter, escort.
espèce, *f.*, kind, sort, species.
espérer, hope.
essayer, try, try on.
et, and.
étable, *f.*, stable (*for cattle*).
établir, establish.
étage, *m.*, story, floor.
étais, *see* être.

état, *m.*, state, condition.
États-Unis [etaz yni], *m. pl.*, United States.
été, *m.*, summer.
être, *see* être.
éternuer, sneeze.
êtes, *see* être.
étoffe, *f.*, cloth, material.
étrange, strange.
être, be; *en — de*, the stage one is at; *y —*, be in, be at home.
étroit, narrow.
étudier, study.
eu, eus, eusse, *see* avoir.
Europe, *f.*, Europe.
eux, them, they.
Évangile, *m.*, Gospel.
éviter, avoid.
exact [egzakt], exact; *à l'heure —e*, on time.
exagérer, exaggerate.
examen [egzamē], *m.*, examination.
excellent, excellent.
excursion, *f.*, excursion.
excuser, excuse; *s'*—, excuse oneself, offer excuses.
exécuter, execute.
exemple, *m.*, example.
existence, *f.*, existence.
exister, exist, live.
expliquer, explain.
exploiter, work.
exposition, *f.*, exhibition.
exquis, exquisite, delicious.

F

fâché, sorry, angry, annoyed.
facile, easy.
facilement, easily.
façon, *f.*, way, manner.
facteur, *m.*, postman; porter.
faible, weak.
faillir, fail; be near(ly).
faim, *f.*, hunger; *avoir —*, be hungry.

faine, *f.*, beechnut.
faire, do, make, take, cause; *se —*, be made, happen; *se — —*, cause to be made for oneself; *il fait beau*, it is fine; *cela ne fait rien*, that makes no difference.
fait, *p. part. of faire*; *en être — de*, be all over with.
falloir, be necessary, must, have to; *il faut*, it is necessary, we (you, etc.) must; *il ne faut pas*, we (you, etc.) must not; *s'en —*, be near.
famille, *f.*, family.
farine, *f.*, flour.
fasse, *see faire*.
fatigué, tired, weary.
fatiguer, fatigue, tire.
faucille, *f.*, sickle.
faut, *see falloir*.
faute, *f.*, fault, mistake.
fauteuil, *m.*, arm-chair.
faux col, *m.*, collar (*detachable*).
femme [fam], *f.*, woman, wife; — *de chambre*, housemaid.
fenêtre, *f.*, window.
fer, *m.*, iron.
ferai, *see faire*.
ferme, *f.*, farmhouse, farm.
fermer, close, shut.
fête, *f.*, holiday, festivity.
feu, *m.*, fire.
feuillage, *m.*, foliage, leaves.
feuille, *f.*, leaf.
février, *m.*, February.
figure, *f.*, figure; face.
figurer (*se*), imagine.
fil [fil], *m.*; thread.
fille [fi:ij], *f.*, daughter, girl; *jeune —*, young girl, young lady.
fils [fis], *m.*, son.
fin, *f.*, end.
finir, finish, end; — *par*, finish by, lastly.
fis, fisse, *see faire*.

fleur, *f.*, flower, blossom, bloom.
fleurir, flower, bloom, blossom.
fleuve, *m.*, river (*falling into the sea*).
flocon, *m.*, flake.
fluide, *m.*, fluid.
foin, *m.*, hay.
fois, *f.*, time; une —, once; toutes les — que, whenever.
fond, *m.*, bottom, back part.
fonder, found, establish.
font, *see faire*.
fonte, *f.*, cast iron.
forêt, *f.*, forest.
forgé, wrought.
forgeron, *m.*, blacksmith.
former, form.
fort, *adj., adv.*, strong; hard, sharp.
fosse [fo:s], *f.*, ditch; grave; pit; — aux ours, bear pit.
four, *m.*, oven.
fourchette, *f.*, fork.
fournir, furnish, supply; se —, get one's supplies, buy (provisions).
fraîche, fresh, cool; unsoiled.
fraise, *f.*, strawberry.
franc, *m.*, franc (*about 20 cents or ten pence*).
français, French.
France, *f.*, France.
frapper, knock, strike.
frère, *m.*, brother.
froid [frwa], cold; faire —, be cold (*of temperature*); avoir —, be (feel) cold.
fromage, *m.*, cheese.
fruit, *m.*, fruit.
fumer, smoke.
fus, *see être*.

G

gages, *m. pl.*, wages.
gagner, earn, gain.
gai [ge], gay, merry, cheerful.
gant, *m.*, glove.

garçon, *m.*, boy, waiter, journeyman.
garde, *f.*, care; prendre —, take care.
garder, keep.
gardien [gardjē], *m.*, keeper, caretaker.
gare, *f.*, station (*railway*).
garnir, trim, decorate, adorn; fill, cover.
garniture, *f.*, trimming.
gâteau, *m.*, cake.
gauche, left.
gaz [guiz], *m.*, gas.
geler, freeze.
gêner, embarrass; restrain; se —, restrain oneself.
généralement, generally.
Geneviève, *f.*, Genevieve.
gens, *m. or f.*, people; jeunes —, young men.
gentil [ʒāti], nice.
géographie, *f.*, geography.
George(s), *m.*, George.
gilet, *m.*, waistcoat, vest.
glace, *f.*, ice.
glacier, *m.*, glacier.
glissant, slippery.
Gobelins, *m. pl.*, Gobelins, government tapestry works in Paris.
gorge, *f.*, throat; gorge.
goût, *m.*, taste.
goûter (à), taste.
grammaire, *f.*, grammar.
grand, tall, large, great; de — matin, early in the morning.
grand'mère, *f.*, grandmother.
grand-père, *m.*, grandfather.
grange, *f.*, barn.
grands-parents, *m. pl.*, grandparents.
grave, grave, serious.
gravement, gravely.
gravure, *f.*, engraving.
grippe, *f.*, 'grippe,' influenza.

gros, big, large.

grossir [grosiir], grow larger.

groupe, *m.*, group.

guère, *ne . . . —*, hardly, scarcely.

guérir, get well, recover.

Guignol, *m.*, Punch and Judy.

Guillaume, *m.*, William.

H

h aspirate is indicated thus: 'h.

habile, clever.

habilement, cleverly.

habiller, dress, clothe; *s'—*, dress (oneself).

habit, *m.*, coat; dress coat; *pl.*, clothes.

habitation, *f.*, habitation, dwelling.

habiter, inhabit, live in.

habituer, accustom.

'**hache**, *f.*, axe.

'**hâte**, *f.*, haste.

'**haut**, high.

'**Havre**, *m.*, Havre.

hectare, *m.*, hectare (*about 2½ acres*).

Hélène, *f.*, Helen.

herbe, *f.*, grass.

heure, *f.*, hour; o'clock; time; *de bonne —*, early.

heureusement, fortunately.

heureux, happy, fortunate.

hier [jeir], yesterday.

histoire, *f.*, history; story.

hiver, *m.*, winter.

homme, *m.*, man.

hôpital, *m.*, hospital.

'**hors de**, out of.

'**hors-d'œuvre**, *m.*, side dish, relish.

horticole, horticultural.

huile, *f.*, oil.

'**huit** [quit], eight.

humain, human.

humide, damp.

I

ici, here; **d'**— **là**, till then.

il, **he**, **it**; (*with impers. verbs*), there.

illustrer, illustrate.

ils, they.

image, *f.*, image, picture.

imaginer, imagine, conceive.

impatiemment [épasjamā], impatiently.

important, important.

importer, import; be important; **n'importe quel**, no matter what, any . . . (whatever).

industrie, *f.*, industry.

infiniment, infinitely, very much.

inflammable, inflammable.

informer (*s'*), enquire about (*de*).

instituteur, *m.*, teacher (*primary*).

institutrice, *f.*, teacher.

instruire, instruct, teach.

intelligence, *f.*, intelligence; understanding.

intelligent, intelligent.

intention, *f.*, intention.

intéressant, interesting.

intéresser, interest.

intérieur, *adj.*, *n. m.*, interior.

inventer, invent.

invitation, *f.*, invitation.

inviter, invite.

irai, see *aller*.

italien, Italian.

ivoire, *m.*, ivory.

J

jamais, ever; *ne . . . —*, never.

jambe, *f.*, leg.

janvier, *m.*, January.

Japon, *m.*, Japan.

jaquette, *f.*, morning coat.

jardin, *m.*, garden, gardens; — des plantes, Botanical Gardens.

jaune, yellow.

- jaunir, become yellow.
 je, j', I.
 Jean [ʒã], *m.*, John.
 Jeanne [ʒa:n], *f.*, Jane, Joan(na).
 jeter, throw, throw away.
 jeu, *m.*, game, play.
 jeudi, *m.*, Thursday.
 jeune, young.
 joie, *f.*, joy, gladness, happiness.
 joindre, join; — les deux bouts,
 make (both) ends meet.
 joli, pretty.
 jouer, [ʒwe] play.
 jour, *m.*, day; de nos —s, in our
 day(s).
 journal, *m.*, newspaper.
 journée, *f.*, day.
 joyeux, joyous, merry.
 juillet [ʒɥijɛ], *m.*, July.
 juin [ʒɥɛ], *m.*, June.
 Julie, *f.*, Julia.
 Julien, *m.*, Julian.
 jupe, *f.*, skirt.
 jusqu'à, as far as, to, up to; — à
 ce que, until.

K

- kilogramme, *m.*, kilogram (about
 2 lbs.).
 kilomètre, *m.*, kilometre (about $\frac{5}{8}$
 of a mile).

L

- là, there.
 là-bas, yonder, over there.
 labour, *m.*, ploughing.
 labourer, plough.
 laboureur, *m.*, ploughman, hus-
 bandman.
 lac [lak], *m.*, lake.
 lainage, *m.*, woollen goods.
 laisser, leave, let; se — aller,
 yield.
 lait, *m.*, milk.
 laiterie, *f.*, dairy.

- lampe, *f.*, lamp.
 lancer, throw, cast, toss.
 langue, *f.*, tongue, language.
 large, wide, broad.
 latin, Latin.
 laver, wash; se —, wash oneself.
 le, la, l', les, the.
 le, la, l', les, him, her, it, them.
 leçon, *f.*, lesson.
 lecture, *f.*, reading.
 légume, *m.*, vegetable.
 lendemain, *m.*, day after, next
 day.
 lentement, slowly.
 lequel, laquelle, etc., who, which
 (one), what (one).
 lettre, *f.*, letter.
 leur, leurs, their; le —, theirs.
 leur, to them, of them, them.
 levain, *m.*, leaven, yeast.
 lever, raise, lift up; rise; se —,
 rise.
 libre, free.
 lilas [lila], *m.*, lilac; adj., purple.
 linge, *m.*, linen.
 lion, *m.*, lion.
 lire, read.
 lit, *m.*, bed.
 livre, *m.*, book.
 livre, *f.*, pound.
 locomotive, *f.*, locomotive.
 loge, *f.*, box (*theatre*).
 loi, *f.*, law.
 loin, far.
 lointain, distant.
 Loire, *f.*, Loire.
 Londres, *m.*, London.
 long, long.
 longtemps, long, a long time, a
 long while.
 lorsque, when.
 Louis, *m.*, Louis, Lewis.
 Louise, *f.*, Louise, Louisa.
 lourd, heavy.
 loutre, *f.*, otter.
 Luc [lyk], *m.*, Luke.

Lucie, f., Lucy.
lui, to him, to her, of him, of her,
 him, her, he.
lumière, f., light.
lundi, m., Monday.
lunettes, f. pl., spectacles, glasses.
Luxembourg [lyksübür], *m.*, Luxembourg, a palace and park in Paris.
Lyon, m., Lyons.

M**M. contr. of Monsieur.**

maçon, m., mason.
madame, f., madam, Mrs.
mademoiselle, f., Miss.
magasin, m., shop, store; *courir les —s*, go shopping, shop.
magnifique, magnificent.
mai [me], *m.*, May.
main, f., hand.
maintenant, now.
mais, but; — non, no, no; not at all.
maison, f., house; à la —, at home, home.
maître, m., master.
majorité, f., majority.
mal, adv., badly; *n. m.*, evil, pain, sickness; — de mer, seasickness; faire —, hurt; se faire —, hurt oneself; — à la tête, — de tête, headache.
malade, sick, ill; sick person, patient.
malheur, m., misfortune.
malheureux, unhappy, unfortunate.
malle, f., trunk.
maman, f., mamma.
manche, f., sleeve; *la Manche*, the English Channel.
manchette, f., cuff.
manger, eat; donner à — à, feed.
manière, f., manner, way.

manquer, miss, be lacking, fail; be near.
marbre, m., marble.
Marc-Aurèle [mark oreil], *m.*, Marcus Aurelius, Roman emperor (A.D. 121–181).
Marcel, m., Marcellus.
marchand, m., merchant, dealer.
marche, f., march.
marché, m., market; (à) bon —, cheap, cheaply.
marcher, march, go, run; faire —, drive, work.
mardi, m., Tuesday.
Marguerite, f., Margaret.
mari, m., husband.
Marie, f., Mary, Marie, Maria.
marier, marry (*of parents, clergy-man, etc.*); se —, get married.
marronnier, m., chestnut.
mars [mars], *m.*, March.
Marseille, f., Marseilles.
marteau, m., hammer.
matériaux, m. pl., materials.
matin, m., morning.
mauvais [mœve], bad.
me, m', me, to me.
méchant, bad, naughty, cross.
médecin, m., doctor.
médecine, f., medicine; *école de —*, medical school.
Médicis (de) [medisis], de' Medici, famous Florentine family, of which two members, Catherine (1519–1589) and Marie (1573–1642), were queens of France.
meilleur, adj., better, best.
même, adj., same, self; lui —, himself; *as adv.*, even; *tout de —*, all the same; *quand —*, even if.
ménage, m., household, housekeeping; *pain de —*, homemade bread.
ménagère, f., housewife.
mener, lead, take, bring.

- menu, *m.*, menu, bill of fare.
 menuiserie, *f.*, woodwork.
 menuisier, *m.*, joiner, carpenter.
 mer, *f.*, sea; port de —, seaport;
 bord de la —, seaside.
 merci, thanks; no, thanks.
 mercredi, *m.*, Wednesday.
 mère, *f.*, mother.
 mérite, *m.*, merit.
 merveille, *f.*, wonder; à —, mar-
 vellously, wonderfully.
 mesdames, *f. pl.*, ladies (*only in
address*).
 messe, *f.*, mass (*religious*).
 mesure, *f.*, measure; à — que, in
 proportion as.
 mètre, *m.*, metre (*about 40 in.*).
 mettre, put, place; se — en
 branle, begin to move; se — à
 table, sit down to dinner (*etc.*);
 se —, dress; mis, dressed; se
 — en habit, put on dress coat.
 meuble, *m.*, piece of furniture; *pl.*,
 furniture.
 meubler, furnish.
 meunier, *m.*, miller.
 midi, *m.*, noon; South.
 miel, *m.*, honey.
 mien (le), mienne (la), etc.,
 mine.
 mieux, *adv.*, better, best; être —,
 be better (*more comfortable*).
 mil, thousand (*in dates*).
 mille [mil], (a) thousand.
 millier [milje], *m.*, (a) thousand (*ap-
proximately*).
 million [miljõ], *m.*, million.
 mince, thin.
 minuit, *m.*, midnight.
 minute, *f.*, minute.
 miroir, *m.*, mirror.
 mis, misse, *see* mettre.
 mise, *f.*, dress.
 Mississipi, *m.*, Mississippi.
 M^{me}, *contr.* of madame.
 mobilier, *m.*, furniture.
- mode, *f.*, fashion; à la —, in fashion,
 fashionable.
 modérer, moderate.
 moderne, modern.
 moi, me, to me, I.
 moins, less, least; — bon, worse;
 à — que . . . ne, unless; à — de,
 unless, except; au (du) —, at
 least.
 mois [mwa], *m.*, month.
 moisson, *f.*, harvest.
 moissonner, harvest.
 moissonneur, *m.*, harvester.
 moissonneuse, *f.*, reaping-ma-
 chine.
 moitié, *f.*, half.
 moment, *m.*, moment, time; au —
 où, when; en ce —, now; du —
 que, as soon as.
 mon, ma, mes, my.
 monde, *m.*, world; people, com-
 pany; tout le —, everybody.
 mont, *m.*, mount; le — Blanc,
 Mt. Blanc.
 monsieur [mesje], *m.*, sir, gentle-
 man, Mr.
 montagne, *f.*, mountain.
 monter, mount, ascend, go up; get
 in; put up.
 montre, *f.*, watch.
 montrer, show.
 morceau, *m.*, bit, piece.
 mort, *f.*, death.
 mort, *see* mourir.
 mot, *m.*, word; note.
 mouche, *f.*, fly.
 mouchoir, *m.*, handkerchief.
 moudre, grind (*mill*).
 mourir, die.
 mouton, *m.*, sheep.
 mouvoir, move, drive.
 moyen [mwajõ], *m.*, means, way;
 il n'y a pas —, there is no way.
 municipal, municipal.
 mur, *m.*, wall.
 mûr, ripe, mature.

mûrir, ripen.
 musique, *f.*, music.
 musée, *m.*, museum.
 mystérieux, mysterious.

N

nacre, *f.*, mother-of-pearl.
 nager, swim.
 naître, be born.
 Napoléon, Napoleon.
 nappe, *f.*, tablecloth (*white*); mettre la —, lay the cloth, set the table.
 navire, *m.*, ship.
 ne, *n'*, no, not; — . . . pas, no, not;
n'est-ce pas? aren't you? etc.
 né, *see* naître.
 nécessaire, necessary.
 négligence, *f.*, negligence.
 neige, *f.*, snow.
 neiger, snow.
 nettoyer, clean.
 neuf, new.
 neuf, nine.
 neurasthénie, *f.*, nervous exhaustion.
 neveu, *m.*, nephew.
 ni, neither, nor; ne . . . — . . . —,
 neither . . . nor.
 nid, *m.*, nest.
 nièce, *f.*, niece.
 noir, black.
 noix, *f.*, walnut.
 nombre, *m.*, number.
 nombreux, numerous.
 nommer, name, call; appoint.
 non, no, not.
 nord, *m.*, north.
 normand, Norman.
 Normandie, *f.*, Normandy.
 notre, nos, our.
 Notre-Dame, *f.*, Notre Dame.
 nôtre (*le*), nôtre (*la*), etc., ours;
pl., our party, etc.
 nous, we, us, to us.

nouveau, —el, new.
 nouvelle, *f.*, news; *also pl.*; j'ai reçu
 de ses —s, I have heard from
 him.
 Nouvelle-Orléans, *f.*, New Orleans.
 novembre, *m.*, November.
 noyer, *m.*, walnut.
 nu, naked, bare.
 nuance, [nuãs] *f.*, shade, colour.
 nuit, *f.*, night.

O

obéir (à), obey.
 objet, *m.*, object.
 obligeance, *f.*, kindness.
 obscurité [ɔpskyrite], *f.*, darkness.
 observation [ɔpservasjõ], *f.*, observation.
 observer [ɔpserve], observe, notice.
 obtener [ɔptənir], obtain.
 occupation, *f.*, occupation.
 occupé, busy.
 occuper, occupy, make busy; s'—
 de, be busy with, see about, attend to.
 octobre, *m.*, October.
 œil [œ:j], *m.*, eye; *pl.*, yeux [jø].
 œuf [œf], *m.*, egg; *pl.*, œufs [ø].
 offrir, offer.
 oh [o], O, oh.
 oiseau, *m.*, bird.
 oisif, idle.
 oisiveté, *f.*, idleness.
 ombre, *f.*, shade.
 omelette, *f.*, omelet.
 on, one, people, they, we, you,
 some one, etc.
 oncle, *m.*, uncle.
 ont, *see* avoir.
 onze, eleven.
 or, *m.*, gold.
 ordinaire, ordinary.
 ordinairement, generally.
 ordonnance, *f.*, prescription.
 ordonner, order, prescribe.

orge, <i>f.</i> , barley.	paresse, <i>f.</i> , laziness.
orner, decorate, adorn.	paresseux, lazy.
orthographe, <i>f.</i> , orthography, spelling.	Paris, <i>m.</i> , Paris.
oser, dare.	parler, speak, talk.
ou, or.	parmi, among, amongst.
où, where, in which; d'—, whence, from where.	parquet, <i>m.</i> , floor.
oublier, forget.	part, <i>f.</i> , share; de ma —, from me.
ouest [west], <i>m.</i> , west.	parterre, <i>m.</i> , flower garden.
oui, yes.	parti, <i>m.</i> , party (<i>political, etc.</i>).
ours [urs], <i>m.</i> , bear.	partie, <i>f.</i> , part; faire — de, be part of.
outil [util], <i>m.</i> , tool.	partir, depart, leave, go, go away, start; à — de, from . . . on (up).
outre, beyond, in addition to; en —, also, moreover.	partout, everywhere; — où, wherever.
ouvert, <i>see ouvrir</i> .	parure, <i>f.</i> , adornment, ornament.
ouvrage, <i>m.</i> , work.	pas, <i>m.</i> , step.
ouvrier, <i>m.</i> , workman.	pas, not; ne . . . —, no, not, not any, none.
ouvrir, open; s'—, open.	passage, <i>m.</i> , passage.

P

paille, <i>f.</i> , straw.	passé, past, last; l'année —, last year.
pain, <i>m.</i> , bread; loaf; petit —, roll.	passer, pass, go, run; spend (<i>time</i>); go by, disappear; se —, take place, go on.
paire, <i>f.</i> , pair.	pastel, <i>m.</i> , pastel.
paix, <i>f.</i> , peace.	pâte, <i>f.</i> , dough.
palais, <i>m.</i> , palace; large (public) building; — des singes, monkey house.	patin, <i>m.</i> , skate.
panier, <i>m.</i> , basket.	patiner, skate.
papa, <i>m.</i> , papa.	pâtisserie, <i>f.</i> , pastry.
papier, <i>m.</i> , paper.	Paul [pol], <i>m.</i> , Paul.
paquebot [pakbo], <i>m.</i> , packet, steamer.	pauvre, poor.
par, by, for, through, throughout, per, in.	payer, pay, pay for; faire —, charge.
paraître, appear, seem.	pays [pei], <i>m.</i> , country.
parc [park], <i>m.</i> , park.	paysage [peiza:g], <i>m.</i> , landscape.
parce que, because.	paysan [peizð], <i>m.</i> , peasant.
pardessus [pardøsy], <i>m.</i> , overcoat.	pêche, <i>f.</i> , fishing.
pardon, <i>m.</i> , pardon; je vous demande —, I beg your pardon.	peigne, <i>m.</i> , comb.
pardonner, pardon, excuse.	peindre, paint.
pareillement, equally, also.	peine, <i>f.</i> , trouble; valoir (<i>être</i>) la —, be worth while.
parent, <i>m.</i> , relation, relative, parent.	peintre, <i>m.</i> , painter.
	peinture, <i>f.</i> , painting.
	pendant, during, for; — que, while.

- penser, think; be near.
 perdre, lose.
 perdrix, *f.*, partridge.
 père, *m.*, father; — de famille, father (of a family), citizen.
 perfectionnement, *m.*, improvement.
 perle, *f.*, pearl.
 permettre, permit, allow.
 permission, *f.*, permission.
 personne, *f.*, person; *pl.*, people.
 personne, anybody; ne . . . —, nobody.
 perte, *f.*, loss.
 petit, little, small, short; young.
 pétrin, *m.*, kneading trough.
 pétrir, knead.
 pétrole, *m.*, petroleum.
 peu, little, few; un —, a little.
 peur, *f.*, fear; avoir —, be afraid, fear; faire — à, frighten; de — que, for fear that; de — de, for fear of.
 peut-être, perhaps.
 peut, peux [pø], see pouvoir.
 pharmacien, *m.*, druggist, chemist.
 pianiste, *m. or f.*, pianist.
 piano, *m.*, piano.
 pièce, *f.*, piece, room; play; la —, apiece.
 pied, *m.*, foot; à —, on foot.
 pierre, *f.*, stone.
 Pierre, *m.*, Peter.
 pin, *m.*, pine.
 pipe, *f.*, pipe.
 place, *f.*, room, seat, place, position, berth.
 plage, *f.*, beach.
 plaindre, pity; se —, complain.
 plaisir à, please; se —, be pleased, enjoy oneself, like it; s'il vous plaît, if you please, please; plaît-il? I beg your pardon.
 plaisir, *m.*, pleasure.
 plan, *m.*, plan.
 planche, *f.*, plank, board.
 plante, *f.*, plant.
 plein, full; en — e mer, in the open sea.
 pleuvoir, rain.
 plonger, dive.
 pluie, *f.*, rain.
 plume, *f.*, pen.
 plupart, *f.*, majority, (the) most, the most part.
 plus, more; ne . . . —, no more, no longer, not now.
 plusieurs [plyzjœr], several, a good many.
 poche, *f.*, pocket.
 poème, *m.*, poem.
 poète, *m.*, poet.
 poire, *f.*, pear.
 poirier, *m.*, pear tree.
 pois [pwa], *m.*, pea; petits —, green peas.
 poisson, *m.*, fish.
 police, *f.*, police.
 pomme, *f.*, apple; — de terre, potato.
 pommier, *m.*, apple tree.
 pont, *m.*, bridge.
 porcelaine, *f.*, porcelain.
 pore, *m.*, pore.
 port, *m.*, port; wharf.
 porte, *f.*, door.
 porte-monnaie, *m.*, purse.
 porter, bear, carry, wear; se —, be (of health).
 portrait, *m.*, portrait.
 poser [poze], place; ask (*questions*).
 poste, *f.*, post, post office.
 potage, *m.*, soup.
 pouce, *m.*, thumb; inch.
 poule, *f.*, hen.
 pouls [pu], *m.*, pulse.
 pour, *prep.*, for, in order to, to; en avoir —, have so much worth of; — que, in order to, so that.
 pourboire, *m.*, gratuity, 'tip'.
 pourquoi, why.

- pourrai, *see* pouvoir.
 pourrir, rot, decay.
 pourtant, however.
 pousser, grow.
 poutre, *f.*, beam.
 pouvoir, be able, can, may.
 pré, *m.*, meadow.
 précédent, preceding.
 précipiter, hurl; se —, rush.
 précis, precise, exact.
 préférer, prefer.
 premier, first.
 premièrement, firstly.
 prendre, take, take away, catch,
 get, buy.
 préparatifs, *m. pl.*, preparation(s).
 préparer, prepare; se —, prepare
 (oneself), get ready.
 près (*de*), near, close by; à peu —,
 nearly, almost.
 présent, present; à —, at present,
 now.
 presque, almost, nearly; — pas,
 hardly any.
 pressé, in haste.
 prêt, ready.
 prêter, lend.
 prier [prie], pray, ask, beg (of).
 princesse, *f.*, princess.
 printemps, *m.*, spring.
 pris, *see* prendre.
 prise, *f.*, taking.
 prix, *m.*, price.
 probable, probable.
 probablement, probably.
 problème, *m.*, problem.
 procédé, *m.*, process.
 prochain, next; l'année —e, next
 year.
 produit, *m.*, product.
 professeur, *m.*, professor, teacher.
 promenade, *f.*, walk, drive, etc.
 promener, lead about; se —, take
 a walk (drive, etc.).
 prononcer, pronounce.
 prononciation, *f.*, pronunciation.
 propos, *m.*, remark; à — de , with
 regard to; à —, by the way.
 propre, clean.
 propreté, *f.*, cleanliness.
 propriétaire, *m.*, landlord.
 propriété, *f.*, property, estate.
 prospérité, *f.*, prosperity.
 protéger, protect.
 proverbe, *m.*, proverb.
 public [pyblɪk], public; *n. m..*
 public.
 puis, then, next, afterward.
 puis, puisse, *see* pouvoir.
 puisque [puiskə], since.
 pus, pusse, *see* pouvoir.

Q

- qualité, *f.*, quality.
 quand, when, whenever.
 quant à, as to, as for.
 quarante, forty.
 quart, *m.*, quarter.
 quatre, four.
 que, qu', *pron.*, what, which, that,
 whom; qu'est-ce — c'est —
 cela? what is that?
 que, qu', *conj.*, that, than, as; how!
 ne . . . —, only; ne . . . pas —, not
 only; je crois — oui, I think so.
 quel, quelle, quels, quelles, which,
 what; — que, whatever.
 quelconque, some, some or other.
 quelque, some, any; — . . . que,
 however, whatever.
 quelqu'un, some one, any one.
 quelquefois, sometimes.
 question, *f.*, question.
 qui, who, which, that, whom; de
 —? whose? ce —, whieh, what;
 — que, whoever.
 quinze, fifteen; — jours, a fort-
 night; d'aujourd'hui en —, a
 fortnight from to-day.
 quoi, what; — que, whatever.
 quoique, although, though.

R

- raconter, relate, tell.
- radis**, *m.*, radish.
- raison, *f.*, reason; avoir —, be (in the) right.
- ramasser, gather, pick up.
- rappelear, recall; se —, remember.
- rarement, rarely.
- rassis, stale (*of bread*).
- ravissant, charming, delightful.
- rayon, *m.*, shelf; department, counter.
- réaliser, realize, effect.
- récemment [resamā], recently.
- réception, *f.*, reception.
- recevoir, receive; être reçu, pass (*at examinations*).
- récolte, *f.*, crop, harvest.
- reconnaitre, recognize.
- redingote, *f.*, frock coat.
- refuser, refuse; être refusé, fail (*at examinations*).
- regarder, look (at).
- régime, *m.*, regimen, diet; mettre au —, put on diet.
- règne, *m.*, reign.
- reine, *f.*, queen.
- remarquable [rəmarkabl], remarkable.
- remarquer, remark, notice, observe.
- remède, *m.*, remedy, medicine.
- remercier, thank.
- remettre, restore; se —, recover (*from illness*); remis, recovered.
- remplacer, take the place of.
- rencontrer, meet.
- rendre, render, make.
- rentrer, go back, go (come) in again, return home.
- réparer, repair.
- répondre, reply, answer.
- représenter, represent.
- reprochér, reproach, tax.
- républicain, *m.*, republican.
- réputation, *f.*, reputation.
- réoudre, resolve, solve.
- respecter, respect.
- ressembler [rəsble], resemble.
- restaurant, *m.*, restaurant.
- restaurer, restore.
- rester, stay, remain.
- rétablissement, restore.
- retard, *m.*, delay; en —, late.
- retarder, be too slow.
- retraite, *f.*, retreat.
- réussir, succeed; pass (*examination*).
- réveiller, waken; se —, waken.
- revendre, sell again.
- revoir, see again; au —, good-bye.
- rez-de-chaussée [retjose], *m.*, ground floor.
- rhinocéros [rinoseros], *m.*, rhinoceros.
- Rhône, *m.*, Rhone.
- rhume, *m.*, cold.
- riche, rich; — d'un million, worth a million.
- richement, richly.
- richesse, *f.*, wealth.
- rideau, *m.*, curtain.
- rien [rjē], anything; ne . . . —, nothing, not anything.
- rire, laugh.
- rivière, *f.*, river.
- robe, *f.*, dress, gown; — de chambre, dressing-gown.
- roi [rwa], *m.*, king.
- rôle, *m.*, rôle, part.
- roman, *m.*, novel.
- rose, *f.*, rose.
- rôti [roti], *m.*, roast.
- rôtir [rotir], roast.
- rouge, red.
- rouler, roll.
- roulis, *m.*, rolling (*of ship*).
- route, *f.*, road; en —, on the way.
- rude, harsh, severe.
- rue, *f.*, street.
- rugissement, *m.*, roar.
- ruisseau, *m.*, brook, stream.

S

- sac [sak], *m.*, sack, bag.
 sache, *see* savoir.
 sage, well-behaved, good.
 sain, healthy, sound.
 saint, *m.*, Saint.
 Saint-Laurent, *m.*, St. Lawrence.
 sais [se], *see* savoir.
 saisir, seize.
 saison, *f.*, season.
 salade, *f.*, salad.
 salle, *f.*, hall, room; — de classe, classroom; — à manger, dining-room; — de bains, bathroom.
 salon, *m.*, drawing-room, parlour; — (salle) de lecture, reading room.
 saluer, salute, bow to, take one's hat off to.
 sans, without.
 santé, *f.*, health.
 sapin, *m.*, fir, spruce.
 sardine, *f.*, sardine.
 sauf [so:f], safe.
 saurai, *see* savoir.
 sauter, jump, leap.
 sauvage, wild.
 savoir, know, know how to; faire —, let one know; on ne saurait, one cannot.
 savon, *m.*, soap.
 scène, *f.*, scene.
 scierie [siri], *f.*, saw mill.
 sculpter [skylte], carve.
 se, s', oneself, himself, herself, themselves.
 seau [so], *m.*, pail
 sec [sek], dry.
 secouer, shake.
 Seine, *f.*, Seine.
 séjour, *m.*, stay.
 selon, according to.
 semaine, *f.*, week.
 semblable, similar, alike, like.
- sembler, seem, appear.
 semer, sow.
 sénat, *m.*, senate.
 sentier, *m.*, path.
 sentir, feel, smell; se —, feel (health).
 séparer, separate.
 sept [set], seven.
 septembre [septə:br], *m.*, September.
 serai, *see* être.
 sérieux, serious.
 serrer, press; put away; se — la main, shake hands.
 servante, *f.*, servant.
 service, *m.*, service.
 serviette, *f.*, towel, napkin.
 servir, serve; — à, be of use for; se — de, make use of.
 seul, alone, only.
 seulement, only.
 Sèvres, *m.*, Sèvres, a town some five miles w. of Paris where there is a government porcelain manufactory.
 si, if, whether.
 si, so, such; however; yes (*emphatic*); mais —, yes, it would.
 siècle, *m.*, century.
 siège, *m.*, seat, chair.
 sien (le), sienne (la), etc., his, hers, its.
 siffler, whistle.
 signe, *m.*, sign.
 simple, simple, plain.
 singe, *m.*, monkey.
 sinon, if not, otherwise.
 situé, situated.
 six [sis], six.
 sœur, *f.*, sister.
 soie, *f.*, silk.
 soieries, *f. pl.*, silks.
 soif [swaf], *f.*, thirst; avoir —, be thirsty; mourir de —, be very thirsty.
 soigner, take care of.

soigneusement, carefully.
soir, *m.*, evening, afternoon.
soirée, *f.*, evening, evening party;
 — *dansante*, dancing party.
sois, *see être*.
soit que, whether.
soixante [swasõ:t], sixty.
soleil, *m.*, sun.
sommes, *see être*.
son, *sa*, *ses*, his, her, its, one's.
sonner, ring.
sont, *see être*.
Sorbonne, *f.*, Sorbonne (founded A.D. 1257), now part of the University of Paris.
sorte, *f.*, sort, kind; *de — que*, so that, in order that.
sortie, *f.*, going out, leaving.
sortir, go out, come out; bring out, take out.
sou, *m.*, cent, halfpenny.
souffler, blow.
souffrant, ailing, not very well.
souffrir, suffer, endure.
soulier, *m.*, shoe.
source, *f.*, spring.
souvenir (*se*), remember.
sous, under, beneath, below, in.
souvent, often.
soyons, *see être*.
sport [*spɔɪr*], *m.*, sport.
station, *f.*, station, stand; resort; — *d'été*, summer resort.
statue, *f.*, statue.
store, *m.*, (window) blind.
succès, *m.*, success.
sucré, *m.*, sugar.
sud [syd], *m.*, south.
suffire, suffice.
suffisant, conceited.
suis, *see être*.
suite, *f.*, sequel, what follows, continuation; *tout de —*, immediately, at once.
suivant, following.
 suivre, follow.

sujet, *m.*, subject.
superbe, superb, very fine.
supérieur, upper.
sur, on, upon.
surface, *f.*, surface.
surtout, above all, particularly, especially.
surveiller, oversee.

T

table, *f.*, table.
tableau, *m.*, picture; — *noir*, blackboard.
tâche, *f.*, task.
tâcher, try.
taille, *f.*, cutting; *pierre de —*, free-stone.
tailleur, *m.*, tailor.
tambour, *m.*, drum.
Tamise, *f.*, Thames.
tandis que [tādi or tādis kə], whilst.
tant, so much, so many; — *que*, as long as; — *mieux*, so much the better, I am glad to hear it.
tante, *f.*, aunt.
tapis, *m.*, carpet; tablecloth (*coloured*).
tapisserie, *f.*, tapestry.
taquiner, tease.
tard, late; plus —, later, afterwards.
tartine, *f.*, slice; — *de beurre*, slice of bread and butter.
tasse, *f.*, cup.
tâter, feel.
te, *t'*, thee, to thee, you, to you.
télégraphier, telegraph.
téléphoner, telephone.
tel, *nelle*, *tels*, *telles*, such (a).
tellement, so, so much.
température, *f.*, temperature.
temps, *m.*, time; weather; à — pour, in time to; *de — en —*, now and then.
tendre, tender.

- tenir, hold, keep; — *de*, take after.
 tente, *f.*, tent.
 terminer, end, finish, complete.
 terrain, *m.*, ground, lot.
 terre, *f.*, earth, land.
 terrible, terrible.
 tête, *f.*, head.
 thé, *m.*, tea.
 théâtre, *m.*, theatre.
 thermomètre, *m.*, thermometer.
 tien (*le*), tienne (*la*), etc., thine,
 yours.
 timide, timid.
 tirer, draw, derive; milk (*cows*);
 put out (*of tongue*).
 tiroir, *m.*, drawer.
 toi, thee, to thee, thou, you, to
 you.
 toilette, *f.*, toilet; dressing table;
 faire sa —, dress; — *de bal*, —
 de soirée, evening dress (*ladies*).
 toit, *m.*, roof.
 tomber, fall.
 ton, ta, tes, thy, your.
 torrent, *m.*, torrent, stream.
 tort, *m.*, wrong; avoir —, be (in the)
 wrong.
 tôt, soon.
 toucher, touch; — *à*, come close
 to, meddle with.
 toujours, always, still, yet.
 toupie, *f.*, top (*plaything*).
 tousser, cough.
 tout, all, every(*thing*), every one;
 tous les ans, every year; — *ce*
 que, whatever; pas du —, not at
 all; *adv.*, quite; however.
 traduire, translate.
 train, *m.*, train; en — *de*, busy
 at.
 traire, milk.
 traîneau, *m.*, sleigh.
 tramway [tramwe], *m.*, tramway,
 tram(car).
 tranquille [trākil], tranquil, quiet,
 peaceful.
 transpirer, perspire.
 transporter, transport, carry,
 bring.
 travail, *m.*, work; table de —,
 study table.
 travailler, work.
 travers (à), through.
 traversée, *f.*, crossing; passage,
 voyage.
 traverser, cross, run across
 (through).
 trentaine, *f.*, about thirty.
 trente, thirty.
 très, very.
 tressaillir, start, jump, tremble.
 trois [trwa], three.
 troisièmement, thirdly.
 tromper, deceive, cheat, beguile;
 se —, make a mistake, be mis-
 taken; si je ne me trompe, if I
 am not mistaken.
 trop [tro or tro], too, too much,
 too many.
 trottoir, *m.*, sidewalk, pavement.
 trou, *m.*, hole.
 trouver, find, have; think; com-
 ment trouvez-vous cela? what do
 you think of that? se —, be.
 truite, *f.*, trout.
 tu, thou, you.
 tuer [tue], kill; se —, kill oneself,
 be killed.
 tuile, *f.*, tile (*for roof*).
 Tuileries, *f. pl.*, Tuileries (lit.
 'tile-field'), a royal palace in
 Paris, destroyed in 1871, of
 which the gardens still exist.

U

- un, une, a, an, one.
 université, *f.*, university. —
 urne, *f.*, urn, ballot box.
 ustensile, *m.*, utensil.
 utile, useful.
 utiliser, utilize.

V

- va, vas, see aller.**
- vache, f., cow.**
- vais, see aller.**
- vaisseau, m., vessel, ship.**
- vaisselle, f., dishes.**
- valise, f., valise.**
- valoir, be worth, be good; — mieux, be better; ne — rien, be no good.**
- vapeur, f., steam; bateau à —, steamer, steamboat.**
- vase, m., vase.**
- vaste, vast, large.**
- vaudrai, see valoir.**
- veau, m., calf; veal.**
- veille, f., day (evening) before.**
- vendre, sell; se —, sell, be sold.**
- vendredi, m., Friday.**
- venir, come; — à, happen to; — de, have just; faire —, send for.**
- vent, m., wind; il fait du —, it is windy.**
- venu, see venir.**
- Vénus [venys], f., Venus.**
- ver, m., worm; — à soie, silk-worm.**
- verger, m., orchard.**
- verre, m., glass.**
- verrerie, f., glassware.**
- vers, towards; about (of time).**
- vers, m., verse, line (of poetry).**
- verset, m., verse (of Bible).**
- vert, green.**
- veston, m., sack coat, sacque.**
- vêtement, m., garment; suit; pl., clothes.**
- veuillez (see vouloir), be so kind as to.**
- veux, veut, see vouloir.**
- viande, f., meat.**
- vice, m., vice.**
- vie, f., life; living.**
- vieillesse, f., old age.**
- viens [vjɛ̃], see venir.**
- vieux, vieil [vjø, vje;j], old.**
- village, [vilaʒ] m., village.**
- ville [vil], f., city, town; à la —, in (the) town.**
- vin, m., wine.**
- vingt [vɛ̃], twenty.**
- vingtaine, f., about twenty, score.**
- violent, violent.**
- visite, f., visit; en —, visiting; faire — à, visit.**
- visiter, visit, inspect, examine.**
- vite, quickly, fast.**
- vitesse, f., speed.**
- vivant, m., living person; bon —, 'jolly fellow.'**
- vivre, live, exist.**
- voici, see here, here is, here are, this is.**
- voilà, see there, there is, there are, here is, this is, that is; nous —, here we are.**
- voir, see; se —, be seen; faire —, show; venir —, come to see; aller —, go to see, visit.**
- voisin, -e, m., f., neighbour.**
- voiture, f., carriage.**
- voix, f., voice.**
- volaille, f., poultry.**
- voler, fly.**
- voler, steal.**
- voleur, m., thief.**
- volumie, m., volume.**
- vont, see aller.**
- vote, m., voting.**
- voter, vote.**
- votre, vos, your.**
- vôtre (le), vôtre (la), etc., yours.**
- vouloir, will, wish, want; je veux bien, very well, all right; je voudrais (bien), I should like; en — à, have a grudge against; que voulez-vous (que j'y fasse)? what can you expect? what can be done about it?**
- vous, you, to you.**
- voyage, m., journey, trip.**

voyager, travel.

vrai, *adj.*, *adv.*, true, truly.

vu, *see* voir.

W

wagon-lit, *m.*, sleeping car.

Y

y, there, in it, at it, in them, etc.;

il — a, there is, there are; ago;

il — en a, there is (are) some.

yeux [jø], *see* œil.

ENGLISH-FRENCH VOCABULARY

A aspirate is indicated thus: 'h.

A

a, an, un, *m.*, une, *f.*
able, be —, pouvoir.
about, environ, vers, à peu près
autour de; think —, penser à;
speak —, parler de.
absence, absence, *f.*.
abundant, abondant.
accept, accepter.
accident, accident, *m.*.
accompany, accompagner.
according to, selon.
account, on — of, à cause de.
accustomed, accoutumé, habitué.
ache, *n.*, mal, *m.*, douleur, *f.*.
ache, *v.*, faire mal, avoir mal; my
head aches, j'ai mal à la tête.
acquaintance, connaissance, *f.*.
acquainted, be — with, connaître.
addition, addition, *f.*; in — to,
outre.
admire, admirer.
admission, entrée, *f.*.
adorn, orner, décorer.
adornment, parure, *f.*.
advance, avancer.
advice, conseil(s), *m.*.
advise, conseiller.
affair, affaire, *f.*.
afraid, be —, avoir peur, craindre;
be much —, avoir grand'- (bien)
peur, craindre beaucoup.
after, après; après que; — some
time, au bout de quelque temps.
afternoon, après-midi, *m. or f.*.
afterwards, après, puis, ensuite.

again, encore (une fois).
age, âge, *m.*.
ago, il y a, voilà . . . que.
agreeable, agréable.
agreeably, agréablement.
agricultural, agricole.
ailing, be —, souffrir, être souffrant.
air, air, *m.*.
Alexander, Alexandre.
algebra, algèbre, *f.*.
Alice, Alice.
alike, semblable.
all, tout, tous, toute(s); — that,
tout ce qui (que).
allow, permettre.
almost, presque, environ, près de;
— fall, manquer de tomber.
alone, seul.
already, déjà.
also, aussi, pareillement.
although, bien que, quoique.
always, toujours.
America, Amérique, *f.*; North —,
l'Amérique du Nord; South —,
l'Amérique du Sud.
American, américain.
amiable, aimable.
among, parmi.
amuse, amuser; — oneself, s'amuser.
amusement, amusement, *m.*.
amusing, amusant.
ancestor, ancêtre, *m. or f.*.
ancient, ancien.
and, et.
angry, fâché, en colère; be (get)
— at, se fâcher contre.

- a**
- animal, animal, *m.*, bête, *f.*
animated, animé.
annoy, ennuyer.
another, un autre, encore un
(autre), un deuxième.
answer, répondre, répliquer.
anvil, enclume, *f.*
anxious, inquiet; be — to, tenir
beaucoup à; désirer beaucoup.
any, du, etc.; quelconque; en; — of
them, en.
anybody, quelqu'un; not . . . —,
ne . . . personne.
anything, quelque chose; not . . .
—, ne . . . rien.
apiece, la pièce.
appear, paraître.
appetite, appétit, *m.*
apple, pomme, *f.*; — tree, pom-
mier, *m.*
apply, s'adresser.
appoint, nommer.
approach, s'approcher (de).
approve, approuver.
architect, architecte, *m.*
ardour, ardeur, *f.*
are, see be.
arm, bras, *m.*
armchair, fauteuil, *m.*
army, armée, *f.*
around, autour de.
arrange, arranger.
arrival, arrivée, *f.*
arrive, arriver.
article, article, *m.*, objet, *m.*
artist, artiste, *m. or f.*
as, comme, puisque, aussi, si, que;
— well —, aussi bien que; —
for, quant à; — much —, autant
que.
ask, demander (à), prier; — a
question, poser (faire) une
question; he has only to —,
il n'a qu'à demander; — after,
s'informer de; — for, demander;
— of one another, se demander.
- asparagus, asperges, *f. pl.*
astonished, étonné, surpris.
at, à; chez; not — all, pas du tout.
Atlantic, Atlantique, *m. or f.*
attend, assister à.
attention, attention, *f.*; call — to,
appeler (attirer) l'attention sur.
attract, attirer.
August, août, *m.*
aunt, tante, *f.*
author, auteur, *m. or f.*
automobile, automobile, *m. or f.*
autumn, automne, *m. or f.*
avoid, éviter.
axe, hache, *f.*
- B**
- back, fond, *m.*; dos, *m.*; be —, être
de retour.
bad, mauvais; be — weather,
faire mauvais (temps).
badly, mal.
baggage, bagages, *m. pl.*
bake, cuire, faire cuire.
baker, boulanger, *m.*
baking, cuisson, *f.*
ball, bal, *m.*
ballot, — box, urne, *f.*; — paper,
bulletin (*m.*) de vote.
bank, banque, *f.*
barber, coiffeur, *m.*
bare, nu.
barley, orge, *f.*
barn, grange, *f.*; — yard, basse-
cour, *f.*
basket, panier, *m.*
Bastille, Bastille, *f.*
bath, bain, *m.*; — room, salle (*f.*)
de bains.
bathe, se baigner.
bay, baie, *f.*
be, sign of the progressive form
untranslated in French; être, se
porter, aller, y avoir, se trou-
ver, faire (of weather), devoir; we

are to stay, nous devons rester;	biscuit, biscuit, <i>m.</i>
— better, valoir mieux.	black, noir.
beach, plage, <i>f.</i>	blackboard, tableau (<i>m.</i>) noir.
beam, poutre, <i>f.</i>	blacksmith, forgeron, <i>m.</i>
bear, ours, <i>m.</i> ; — pit, fosse (<i>f.</i>) aux ours.	bloom, fleur, <i>f.</i> ; be in —, être en fleur(s).
beast, bête, <i>f.</i>	blossom, <i>n.</i> , fleur, <i>f.</i>
beat, battre.	blossom, <i>v.</i> , fleurir.
beautiful, beau.	blow, <i>n.</i> , coup, <i>m.</i>
beauty, beauté, <i>f.</i>	blow, <i>v.</i> , souffler.
beaver, castor, <i>m.</i>	blue, bleu.
because, parce que; — of that, à cause de cela.	board, planche, <i>f.</i> ; go on — (<i>ship</i>), s'embarquer; go on — (<i>train</i>), monter.
become, aller, convenir; devenir; what has — of her?, qu'est-elle devenue?	boat, bateau, <i>m.</i> ; go boating, se promener en bateau.
bed, lit, <i>m.</i> ; —room, chambre (<i>f.</i>) à coucher; go to —, se coucher.	codice, corsage, <i>m.</i>
bee, abeille, <i>f.</i>	body, corps, <i>m.</i>
beechnut, faîne, <i>f.</i>	book, livre, <i>m.</i>
beef, bœuf, <i>m.</i>	bookcase, bibliothèque, <i>f.</i>
before, devant (<i>of place</i>), avant (<i>of time</i>); auparavant; avant de, avant que.	bore, ennuyer.
beforehand, d'avance.	born, be —, naître; he was —, il est né, il naquit.
beg, prier, demander; I — of you, je vous (en) prie.	borrow, emprunter; — from, emprunter à.
begin, commencer.	Boston, Boston, <i>m.</i>
beguile, tromper.	Botanical, — Gardens, jardin (<i>m.</i>) des plantes.
behind, derrière.	both, (tous) les deux, l'un (et) l'autre.
believe, croire.	bouquet, bouquet, <i>m.</i>
belong, être à, appartenir à.	bow (to), saluer; — to each other, se saluer.
beside, près de, à côté de.	box, boîte, <i>f.</i> ; pasteboard —, carton, <i>m.</i> ; (<i>theatre</i>) loge, <i>f.</i>
best, <i>adj.</i> , le meilleur; <i>adv.</i> , le mieux.	boy, enfant, <i>m.</i> , garçon, <i>m.</i>
better, <i>adj.</i> , meilleur; <i>adv.</i> , mieux.	branch, branche, <i>f.</i>
between, entre.	brave, brave, courageux.
Bible, Bible, <i>f.</i>	bread, pain, <i>m.</i>
bicycle, bicyclette, <i>f.</i> ; on a —, à bicyclette.	break, casser.
bicyclist, bicycliste, <i>m. or f.</i>	breakfast, déjeuner, <i>m.</i>
bid, — good morning, dire bon- jour.	brick, brique, <i>f.</i>
big, gros.	bridge, pont, <i>m.</i>
bird, oiseau, <i>m.</i>	bring, apporter, amener, trans- porter.
	broad, large.

- brother, frère, *m.*; — in-law, beau-frère.
 brush, *n.*, brosse, *f.*
 brush, *v.*, brosser.
 build, bâtir, construire, faire.
 building, construction, *f.*, bâtiment, *m.*
 bunch, botte, *f.*
 bureau, commode, *f.*
 burn, brûler.
 burning, ardent.
 business, affaires, *f. pl.*; — man, homme d'affaires.
 busy, occupé; en train de.
 but, mais; que; ne . . . que.
 butter, beurre, *m.*
 button, bouton, *m.*; — hole, boutonnière, *f.*
 buy, acheter; — oneself, s'acheter.
 by, par, de; sur; en.

C

- cabbage, chou, *m.*
 cabinet-maker, ébéniste, *m.*
 café, café, *m.*
 cake, gâteau, *m.*
 calculate, calculer.
 call, appeler; attirer; be called, s'appeler; what do you — that? comment appelez-vous cela?
 camel, chameau, *m.*
 can, pouvoir, savoir.
 Canada, Canada, *m.*
 Canadian, canadien.
 candidate, candidat, *m.*
 candle, (*tallow*) chandelle, *f.*, (*wax*) bougie, *f.*
 candy, bonbons, *m. pl.*
 cane, canne, *f.*
 capital, capitale, *f.*
 captain, capitaine.
 capture, prise, *f.*
 care, soin, *m.*; — for, soigner; I don't —, cela m'est égal; take —, prendre garde; avoir soin.
 carefully, soigneusement.
 carelessness, négligence, *f.*
 carpenter, charpentier, *m.*, menuisier, *m.*
 carpet, tapis, *m.*
 carriage, voiture, *f.*
 carrot, carotte, *f.*
 carry, porter, transporter; — off, emporter; — the day, l'emporter.
 carve, sculpter.
 case, cas, *m.*
 casino, casino, *m.*
 casket, coffret, *m.*
 cast, jeter, déposer; (*of metals*) fondre.
 cast iron, fonte, *f.*
 castle, château, *m.*
 cat, chat, *m.*
 catch, attraper, prendre; get (be) caught, se laisser prendre, se faire prendre.
 cause, *n.*, cause, *f.*
 cause, *v.*, faire.
 caviare, caviar(e), *m.*
 celebrated, célèbre, fameux.
 celebration, fête, *f.*
 Celestine, Célestine.
 cellar, cave, *f.*
 cent, sou, *m.*, cinq centimes, *m.*
 centime, centime, *m.*
 centimetre, centimètre, *m.*
 century, siècle, *m.*
 certain, certain.
 certainly, certainement, sûrement.
 chair, chaise, *f.*, siège, *m.*, fauteuil, *m.*
 chalk, craie, *f.*
 change, changer (de).
 Channel, English —, la Manche.
 chapter, chapitre, *m.*
 charge, faire payer.
 Charles, Charles.
 charming, charmant, ravissant.
 chat, causer.

- cheap, (*à*) bon marché; cheaper,
 à meilleur marché.
- cheaply, (*à*) bon marché.
- cheese, fromage, *m.*
- chemist, pharmacien, *m.*
- Cherbourg, Cherbourg, *m.*
- cherry, cerise, *f.*
- chestnut, marronnier, *m.*
- Chicago, Chicago, *m.*
- child, enfant, *m. or f.*
- choose, choisir.
- Christmas, Noël, *m.*; — day, le
 jour de Noël.
- church, église, *f.*
- churn, *n.*, baratte, *f.*
- churn, *v.*, battre le beurre.
- citizen, citoyen, *m.*
- city, ville, *f.*
- civilization, civilisation, *f.*
- clap, battre; — hands, battre des
 mains.
- Clara, Claire, Clara.
- class, classe, *f.*; —room, classe,
 f., salle (*f.*) de classe.
- clean, *adj.*, propre.
- clean, *v.*, nettoyer.
- cleanliness, propreté, *f.*
- clear, *adj.*, clair.
- clear, *v.*, défricher.
- clerk, employé, *m.*, commis, *m.*
- clever, habile.
- cleverly, habilement.
- climate, climat, *m.*
- close, fermer.
- cloth, étoffe, *f.*, drap, *m.*
- clothes, habits, *m. pl.*, vêtements,
 m. pl.
- coachman, cocher, *m.*
- coal, charbon, *m.*
- coal-oil, pétrole, *m.*
- coat, habit, *m.*
- cocoon, cocon, *m.*
- coffee, café, *m.*; — and (with)
 milk, café au lait; — cup, tasse
 (*f.*) à café.
- cold, *adj.*, froid; *n.*, rhume, *m.*;
- catch —, s'enrhumer; be —, (*of*
weather) faire froid, (*of living*
beings) avoir froid.
- collar, col, *m.*; (*detachable*) faux
 col, *m.*
- college, collège, *m.*
- collision, collision, *f.*
- colonel, colonel, *m.*
- comb, peigne, *m.*
- come, venir, arriver; — out, sortir;
 — home, rentrer; — in, entrer; —
 and (to) see, venir voir; — near,
 approcher, s'approcher; come!
 voyons! — with, venir avec,
 accompagner.
- comfort, confort, *m.*
- comfortable, be —, être bien, être
 confortable.
- commit, commettre.
- comparison, comparaison, *f.*
- compartment, compartiment, *m.*
- complain, se plaindre.
- complete, terminer, achever.
- completely, complètement, tout à
 fait.
- composition, composition, *f.*
- comrade, camarade, *m. or f.*
- conceited, suffisant.
- conceive, imaginer.
- concert, concert, *m.*
- condition, état, *m.*, condition, *f.*
- conduct, *n.*, conduite, *f.*
- conduct oneself, se conduire.
- confess, avouer.
- conquest, conquête, *f.*
- consequently, par conséquent.
- considerable, considérable.
- constantly, constamment.
- consumption, consommation, *f.*
- contain, contenir.
- contented, content, satisfait.
- continue, continuer.
- cook, *n.*, cuisinière, *f.*
- cook, *v.*, cuire, faire cuire.
- cool, frais.
- copper, cuivre, *m.*

- coral, corail, *m.*
 correct, corriger.
 cost, coûter.
 cough, tousser.
 could, pouvais, pourrais; I — have, j'aurais pu.
 councillor, conseiller, *m.*
 count, compter.
 countess, comtesse.
 country, pays, *m.*, campagne, *f.*; — people, paysans; — man, paysan; — woman, paysanne.
 courage, courage, *m.*
 court, courtyard, cour, *f.*.
 cousin, cousin, *m.*, cousine, *f.*.
 'cover,' *n.*, couvert, *m.*
 cover, *v.*, couvrir.
 cow, vache.
 Crœsus, Crésus.
 crop, *n.*, récolte, *f.*, moisson, *f.*
 crop, *v.*, brouter.
 cross, *adj.*, méchant.
 cross, *v.*, traverser.
 cruel, cruel.
 cuff, manchette, *f.*.
 cup, tasse, *f.*.
 cupboard, armoire, *f.*.
 curtain, rideau, *m.*.
 customer, client, *m.*.
 cut, cutting, *n.*, coupe, *f.*, taille, *f.*
 cut, *v.*, couper, tailler; — down, couper.

D

- dairy, laiterie, *f.*.
 damp, humide.
 dance, danser; dancing party, soirée dansante.
 dare, oser.
 dark, obscur; it is —, il fait obscur.
 darkness, obscurité, *f.*.
 date, date, *f.*.
 daughter, fille, *f.*.
 day, jour, *m.*, journée, *f.*; every —, tous les jours; in our —, de nos jours; all —, toute la journée.

- deal, a great (good) —, beaucoup.
 dealer, marchand, *m.*.
 dear, *adj.*, *adv.*, cher.
 death, mort, *f.*.
 decay, pourrir.
 deceive, tromper.
 December, décembre, *m.*.
 decorate, décorer, orner.
 decoration, décoration, *f.*.
 delighted, enchanté.
 deliver (*a lecture*), faire.
 department, rayon, *m.*.
 depend, dépendre.
 deposit, déposer.
 derive, tirer.
 describe, décrire.
 desire, désirer.
 dessert, dessert, *m.*.
 dictionary, dictionnaire, *m.*.
 die, mourir; he died, il est mort, il mourut.
 diet, régime, *m.*; prescribe a —, mettre au régime.
 difference, différence, *f.*; that makes no —, cela ne fait rien.
 different, différent.
 difficult, difficile.
 difficulty, difficulté, *f.*.
 diligent, diligent.
 dine, dîner.
 dining room, salle (*f.*) à manger.
 dinner, dîner, *m.*.
 discover, découvrir.
 dish, plat, *m.*; dishes, vaisselle, *f.*.
 distant, lointain.
 disturb, déranger.
 dive, plonger.
 do, sign of emphatic form, untranslated in French; faire, rendre; be done, se faire.
 doctor, médecin, *m.*, docteur, *m.*.
 dog, chien, *m.*.
 dollar, dollar, *m.*, piastre, *f.*.
 door, porte, *f.*.
 doubt, douter (de).
 dough, pâte, *f.*.

downstairs, en bas; go —, descendre (*l'escalier*).
 dozen, douzaine, *f.*
 draw near, s'approcher (*de*).
 drawer, tiroir, *m.*
 drawing-room, salon, *m.*
 dress, *n.*, mise, *f.*; robe, *f.*
 dress, *v.*, faire sa toilette; s'habiller, se mettre.
 dressed, mis, habillé.
 dress coat, habit, *m.*
 dressing table, toilette, *f.*
 dressmaker, couturière, *f.*
 drink, boire.
 drive, *n.*, promenade (*f.*) en voiture; go for a —, (aller) se promener en voiture.
 drive, *v.*, se promener en voiture, aller en voiture.
 drop, laisser tomber.
 drum, tambour, *m.*
 dry, sec.
 duck, canard, *m.*
 during, pendant.
 duty, devoir, *m.*
 dwelling, habitation, *f.*

E

each, chaque, chacun, tout, tous les; — other, l'un (*à*) l'autre.
 eager, désirer beaucoup, tenir beaucoup à.
 early, de bonne heure; — in the morning, de grand matin; at an age, en bas âge; earlier, de meilleure heure, plus tôt.
 earn, gagner.
 earth, terre, *f.*
 easily, facilement.
 easy, facile.
 eat, manger.
 educated, instruit.
 Edward, Édouard.
 effect, *v.*, réaliser.
 egg, œuf, *m.*

eight, huit.
 eighteen, dix-huit.
 eighty, quatre-vingts.
 eighty-five, quatre-vingt-cinq.
 either, ou; — . . . or, ou . . . ou;
 not . . . — . . . or, ne . . . ni . . . ni; nor I —, ni moi non plus.
 elect, élire.
 election, élection, *f.*
 elector, électeur, *m.*
 electric, électrique.
 electricity, Électricité, *f.*
 elephant, éléphant, *m.*
 eleven, onze.
 embark, s'embarquer.
 employ, employer.
 end, *n.*, bout, *m.*, fin, *f.*
 end, *v.*, finir.
 endure, endurer, souffrir, supporter.
 enemy, ennemi, *m.*
 engine, locomotive, *f.*
 England, Angleterre, *f.*
 English, anglais; —man, Anglais; —woman, Anglaise.
 engraving, gravure, *f.*
 enjoy, — oneself, s'amuser; se plaire.
 enough, assez; time —, assez de temps.
 enter, entrer (*dans*).
 entrance, entrée, *f.*
 equal, *adj.*, égal.
 equal, *v.*, égaler.
 equestrian, équestre.
 escape, échapper (*à*).
 escort, escorter.
 especially, surtout.
 establish, établir, fonder.
 etching, (gravure (*f.*) à) l'eau-forte.
 Europe, Europe, *f.*
 even, même.
 evening, soir, *m.*; — dress, toilette (*f.*) de soirée (*bal*); the — before, la veille; good —, bonsoir.
 ever, jamais.

every , tout, chaque; — morning , tous les matins.	fashion, mode, <i>f.</i> ; in the Italian —, à l'italienne.
everybody , tout le monde.	fashionable, à la mode.
everything , tout.	fast, vite; be too —, avancer.
everywhere , partout.	father, père, <i>m.</i> ; père de famille.
exact(ly) , précis, exact.	fault, faute, <i>f.</i>
exaggerate , exagérer.	fear, <i>n.</i> , crainte, <i>f.</i> , peur, <i>f.</i> ; for — of (that) de crainte de (que).
examination , examen, <i>m.</i>	fear, <i>v.</i> , craindre, avoir peur.
example , exemple, <i>m.</i> ; for —, par exemple.	February , février, <i>m.</i>
exceed , dépasser.	feed, donner à manger à.
excellent , excellent.	feel, sentir, tâter; (<i>of health</i>) se sentir.
exclaim , s'écrier.	fellow, garçon.
excursion , excursion, <i>f.</i>	festivity, fête, <i>f.</i>
execute , exécuter.	few, peu, quelques.]
exercise , devoir, <i>m.</i>	field, champ, <i>m.</i>
exercise book , cahier, <i>m.</i>	fifteen, quinze.
exhibition , exposition, <i>f.</i>	fifty, cinquante.
exist , exister.	fight, se battre.
existence , existence, <i>f.</i>	figure, figure, <i>f.</i>
expect , espérer, compter, attendre, s'attendre à; what can you —? que voulez-vous qu'on (y) fasse?	finally, enfin, à la fin; finir par.
explain , expliquer.	find, trouver.
express , exprimer.	fine, beau, bel, belle; it is — (<i>of weather</i>), il fait beau; —-looking, beau.
exquisite , exquis.	finger, doigt, <i>m.</i>
eye , œil, <i>m.</i> ; <i>pl.</i> , yeux.	finish, finir, terminer, achever.

F

fable , fable, <i>f.</i>	fire, feu, <i>m.</i>
face , figure, <i>f.</i>	first, premier; (at) —, d'abord; I was the — to see it, je l'ai vu le premier.
fact , fait, <i>m.</i> ; in —, en effet.	fish , poisson, <i>m.</i>
fail , manquer; (<i>at examination</i>) ne pas être reçu, être refusé, échouer.	fishing , pêche, <i>f.</i> ; go —, aller à la pêche.
fall , <i>n.</i> , chute, <i>f.</i>	fit , aller.
fall , <i>v.</i> , tomber.	five , cinq.
family , famille, <i>f.</i>	flake , flocon, <i>m.</i>
famous , célèbre.	flat , étage, <i>m.</i> , appartement, <i>m.</i>
far , loin; as — as, aussi loin que; how — on is he? où en est-il?	floor , parquet, <i>m.</i> ; étage, <i>m.</i>
— too, beaucoup trop.	flour , farine, <i>f.</i>
farm , ferme, <i>f.</i> , propriété, <i>f.</i>	flow , couler.
farmer , cultivateur, <i>m.</i>	flower , fleur, <i>f.</i> ; — garden, par terre, <i>m.</i>
farmhouse , ferme, <i>f.</i>	flower girl , bouquetière.
	fluid , fluide, <i>m.</i>

fly , <i>n.</i> , mouche, <i>f.</i>	furniture, meubles, <i>m. pl.</i> , mobilier, <i>m. s.</i>
fly , <i>v.</i> , voler.	future, avenir, <i>m.</i>
folding door , porte (<i>f.</i>) à deux battants.	
foliage , feuillage, <i>m.</i>	
follow , suivre; following , suivant.	
fond , be — of, aimer.	
foot , pied, <i>m.</i> ; on —, à pied.	
for , <i>prep.</i> , pour, par, depuis, pendant.	
for , <i>conj.</i> , car.	
forbid , défendre.	
forest , forêt, <i>f.</i>	
forget , oublier.	
fork , fourchette, <i>f.</i>	
form , former, se former.	
former , ancien; celui-là.	
formerly , autrefois, anciennement.	
forth , and so —, et ainsi de suite.	
fortnight , quinze jours, une quinzaine.	
fortunate , heureux.	
fortunately , heureusement.	
forty , quarante.	
four , quatre.	
fourteen , quatorze.	
fourth , quatrième; a —, un quart.	
franc , franc, <i>m.</i>	
France , France, <i>f.</i>	
free , libre.	
freeze , geler.	
French , français; —man, Français.	
fresh , frais.	
Friday , vendredi, <i>m.</i>	
friend , ami, <i>m.</i> , amie, <i>f.</i>	
frighten , faire peur à.	
frock coat , redingote, <i>f.</i>	
from , de; — them, en; a week — to-day, d'aujourd'hui en huit.	
front , in — of, devant.	
fruit , fruit, <i>m.</i>	
full , plein.	
fun , make — of, se moquer de, rire de.	
furnish , meubler.	
	G
	game , jeu, <i>m.</i>
	garden , jardin, <i>m.</i>
	garment , vêtement, <i>m.</i>
	gas , gaz, <i>m.</i>
	gate , porte, <i>f.</i> , barrière, <i>f.</i>
	gather , cueillir; — up, ramasser.
	general , général, <i>m.</i>
	generally , généralement, ordinairement.
	gentle , bon, doux.
	gentleman , monsieur; homme (très) comme il faut; galant homme, homme de bonne société.
	geography , géographie, <i>f.</i>
	George , George(s).
	German , allemand.
	Germany , Allemagne, <i>f.</i>
	get , avoir, prendre, recevoir, obtenir, faire; — himself . . . made, se faire faire; — them to come, faites-les venir; go to (and) —, aller chercher; come to (and) —, venir chercher (trouver, prendre); — out, sortir; — up, se lever.
	gift , cadeau, <i>m.</i>
	girl , fille, jeune fille.
	give (away) , donner; (<i>offer</i>) offrir; — back, rendre.
	glacier , glacier, <i>m.</i>
	glad , heureux, content.
	glass , verre, <i>m.</i> ; glasses , lunettes, <i>f. pl.</i>
	glassware , verrerie, <i>f.</i>
	glee , joie, <i>f.</i>
	glove , gant, <i>m.</i>
	go , aller, passer, marcher, partir; — away, s'en aller, partir; — with, accompagner; — out, sortir; — in (into), entrer (dans); — home, rentrer, aller

- chez soi; — on, avancer; —
 down, descendre; — up, monter;
 — near, s'approcher (de); — to
 (and) see, aller voir; — on, se
 passer; — for, aller chercher; —
 back, retourner.
Gobelins, Gobelins, *m. pl.*
 going out, sortie, *f.*, sortir, *m.*
 gold, or, *m.*; golden, d'or.
 good, *n.*, bien, *m.*
 good, *adj.*, bon, sage; be no —,
 ne valoir rien; will you be —
 enough, be — enough, veuillez,
 voulez-vous bien.
 good-bye, adieu, au revoir.
 gorge, gorge, *f.*.
 gospel, Évangile, *m.*
 grain, grain, *m.*
 grammar, grammaire, *f.*
 grandfather, grand-père.
 grandmother, grand'mère.
 grandparents, grands-parents.
 grass, herbe, *f.*.
 gratitude, reconnaissance, *f.*
 gravely, gravement.
 great, grand; a — deal, beaucoup.
 greedily, avidement.
 green, vert.
 grind, moudre.
 'grippe,' grippe, *f.*.
 grocer, épicer, *m.*
 ground, terre, *f.*.
 ground floor, rez-de-chaussée, *m.*
 group, groupe, *m.*
 grow, pousser, croître; — large(r),
 grossir.
 grudge, have a — against, en
 vouloir à.
- H**
- hair, cheveux, *m. pl.*; dress the
 —, (se) coiffer.
 half, demi; moitié, *f.*; — past one,
 une heure et demie.
 hall, salle, *f.*; corridor, *m.*
 hammer, marteau, *m.*
- hand, main, *f.*.
 handkerchief, mouchoir, *m.*;
 pocket, —, mouchoir de poche.
 handsome, beau.
 happen, arriver, se passer, avoir
 lieu.
 happiness, bonheur, *m.*
 happy, heureux, content.
 hard, dur; difficile; fort.
 harvest, *n.*, moisson, *f.*, récolte, *f.*
 harvest, *v.*, moissonner.
 harvester, moissonneur, *m.*
 haste, 'hâte, *f.*; make —, se dé-
 pêcher.
 hasten, se 'hâter, se dépêcher.
 hat, chapeau, *m.*
 hatter, chapelier, *m.*
 have, avoir, être, faire; — to,
 falloir, devoir; shall — to, il
 faudra; to — made, faire faire;
 you — only to, vous n'avez qu'à.
 Havre, le 'Havre.
 hay, foin, *m.*
 he, il, lui; celui.
 head, tête, *f.*; (*of grain*) épi, *m.*; —
 ache, mal (*m.*) de tête, mal à la
 tête.
 health, santé, *f.*
 hear, entendre; — say (tell),
 entendre dire; — from, re-
 cevoir des nouvelles de; — of,
 entendre parler de; we have
 heard, nous avons entendu dire
 or on nous a dit.
 heart, cœur, *m.*
 heat, *n.*, chaleur, *f.*
 heat, *v.*, chauffer.
 heating, *n.*, chauffage, *m.*
 heaven, ciel, *m.*
 heavily, fort.
 heavy, lourd; épais.
 Helen, Hélène.
 help, aider; — oneself, s'aider.
 hen, poule, *f.*
 hence, aussi, par conséquent.
 Henry, Henri.

her, son, sa, ses; la, lui, elle; hers, à elle, le sien (etc.).	hurt, faire mal à; — oneself, se faire mal.
here, ici; — is, voici, voilà; — he is, le voici, le voilà.	husband, mari.
hide, cacher; se cacher.	I
high, haut, élevé; cher.	I, je, moi.
him, le, lui.	ice, glace, f.
hinder, empêcher.	idle, oisif, paresseux.
his, son, sa, ses; à lui, le sien (etc.).	idleness, oisiveté, f.
historian, historien, m.	if, si; (<i>before il, ils</i>) s'.
history, histoire, f.	ill, malade.
hodman, aide-maçon, m.	ill-mannered, mal élevé.
hold, n., cale, f.	illustrate, illustrer.
hold, v., tenir.	imagine, se figurer.
hole, trou, m.	impatiently, impatiently.
holiday, fête, f., (jour de) congé, m.; holidays, vacances, f. pl.	import, importer.
home, maison, f.; (at) —, à la maison, chez lui (etc.); make yourself at —, ne vous gênez pas.	important, important; it is —, il importe, il est important.
homemade, — bread, pain (m.) de ménage.	impossible, impossible.
honey, miel, m.	improvement, perfectionnement, m.
hope, espérer, compter.	in, dans, en, à, de; — it (them), y; to be —, y être.
horse, cheval, m.; on —back, à cheval.	inch, pouce, m.
horticultural, horticole.	increase, augmenter; keeps in- creasing, va en augmentant.
hospital, hôpital, m.	indeed, bien, en effet.
hot, chaud.	industrious, diligent.
hour, heure, f.	inflammable, inflammable.
house, maison, f.; ménage, m.; at the — of, chez; — maid, femme de chambre; — wife, ménagère.	influenza, grippe, f.
household, ménage, m.	inform, informer, faire savoir.
how, comment? comme! que! — many, — much, combien?	inhabit, habiter.
however, cependant, pourtant; quelque . . . que; — it may be, quo qu'il en soit.	ink, encre, f.
human, humain.	inquire, s'informer.
hundred (a), cent; about a —, une centaine.	instruct, instruire.
hunger, faim, f.	intelligence, intelligence, f.
hungry, be —, avoir faim.	intelligent, intelligent.
hunt, chasser.	intend, avoir l'intention de.
	interest, intéresser.
	interesting, intéressant.
	interior, intérieur, m.
	into, dans, en.
	introduce, présenter.
	invent, inventer, imaginer.
	invitation, invitation, f.
	invite, inviter.

iron, fer, *m.*
 irregular, déréglé.
 is, *see be.*
 it, il, elle; le, la; cela; ce.
 Italian, italien.
 its, son, sa, ses.
 ivory, ivoire, *m.*

J

James, Jacques.
 Jane, Jeanne.
 January, janvier, *m.*)
 jewel, bijou, *m.*
 John, Jean.
 join, joindre.
 joiner, menuisier, *m.*
 'jolly fellow,' bon vivant, *m.*
 journey, voyage, *m.*
 joy, joie, *f.*
 Julian, Julien.
 July, juillet, *m.*
 jump, sauter.
 just, seulement; have —, venir
 de; have — come, venir d'ar-
 river.

K

keep, tenir, garder; — house,
 faire le ménage; — to the house,
 garder la maison.
 keeper, gardien, *m.*
 key, clef, *f.*
 kill, tuer.
 kilo, contr. of kilogramme (*about*
 2 lbs..)
 kilometre, kilomètre, *m.*
 kind, *n.*, espèce, *f.*, sorte, *f.*; what
 — of weather is it? quel temps
 fait-il?
 kind, *adj.*, aimable, bon; — to,
 bon pour.
 kindly, will you —, veuillez (bien),
 ayez la bonté de.
 kindness, bonté, obligeance, *f.*
 king, roi.

kiss, embrasser.
 kitchen, cuisine, *f.*
 knead, pétrir.
 kneading trough, pétrin, *m.*
 knife, couteau, *m.*
 knock, frapper.
 know, connaître, savoir; — how to,
 savoir.

L

ladder, échelle, *f.*
 laden, chargé.
 lady, dame; ladies, dames, mes-
 dames; young ladies, demoiselles, jeunes filles.
 lake, lac, *m.*
 lamp, lampe, *f.*
 land, *n.*, terre, *f.*
 land, *v.*, débarquer.
 landlord, propriétaire, *m. or f.*
 landscape, paysage, *m.*
 language, langue, *f.*
 large, grand, gros; grow —,
 grossir.
 last, *adj.*, dernier, passé; at —, à
 la fin, enfin; — year, l'année
 passée (dernière).
 last, *v.*, durer.
 late, tard, en retard; later, plus
 tard.
 Latin, latin, *m.*
 latter, dernier; celui-ci.
 laugh, rire.
 law, loi, *f.*; against the —, défendu.
 lay, placer, poser; — the cloth,
 mettre le couvert.
 laziness, paresse, *f.*
 lazy, paresseux.
 lead, mener.
 leaf, feuille, *f.*; leaves, feuilles, *pl.*,
 feuillage, *m.*
 leap-year, année (*f.*) bissextile.
 learn, apprendre.
 least, *adj.*, moindre; *adv.*, moins;
 at —, au (du) moins.
 leave, laisser; partir (de); quitter.

- lecture, cours, *m.*
 left, gauche; on the —, à (la) gauche.
 leg, jambe, *f.*
 lend, prêter.
 less, moins.
 lesson, leçon, *f.*, devoir, *m.*
 let, laisser, faire; (*with impv.*) que; — us go, partons; — him go, qu'il parte; — us sit down, asseyons-nous.
 letter, lettre, *f.*
 library, bibliothèque, *f.*
 lie, être couché; — down, se coucher.
 life, vie, *f.*
 light, *n.*, lumière, *f.*
 light, *adj.*, léger; lighter, plus léger, moins lourd.
 light, *v.*, éclairer; (*kindle*) allumer.
 lighting, *n.*, éclairage, *m.*
 like, *v.*, aimer; vouloir, trouver, se plaire; I should —, je voudrais (bien); — better (best), aimer mieux.
 like, *adv.*, comme.
 likewise, pareillement.
 limp, boiter.
 line, *n.*, ligne, *f.*; (*of poetry*) vers, *m.*
 line, *v.*, doubler.
 linen, linge, *m.*
 lion, lion, *m.*
 listen (to), écouter.
 little, *adj.*, petit; *adv.*, peu.
 live, vivre; demeurer; — (in), habiter; — on, vivre de.
 living, vie, *f.*; good —, bonne chère, *f.*
 loaf (of bread), pain, *m.*
 Loire, Loire, *f.*
 London, Londres, *m.*
 lonesome, be —, s'ennuyer.
 long, long, longtemps; a — time, longtemps; no longer, ne . . . plus; how —?, depuis quand? as — as, tant que; be —, tarder.
 look (at), regarder; — for, chercher; they (*f.*)—gentle, elles ont l'air douces.
 loose, détaché; become —, se détacher.
 lose, perdre.
 loss, perte, *f.*
 lot, terrain, *m.*
 Louis, Lewis, Louis.
 Louisa, Louise.
 Louvre, Louvre, *m.*
 love, aimer; — one another, s'aimer.
 low, bas.
 lower, *v. tr.*, descendre.
 Lucy, Lucie.
 luggage, bagages, *m. pl.*
 Luke, Luc.
 lunch, *n.*, déjeuner, *m.*
 lunch, *v.*, déjeuner.
 Luxembourg, Luxembourg, *m.*
 Lyons, Lyon, *m.*

M

- madam, madame.
 magnificent, magnifique.
 mahogany, acajou, *m.*
 maid, bonne, *f.*, servante, *f.*, domestique, *f.*
 mail, courrier, *m.*
 majority, majorité, *f.*
 make, faire, rendre; have made for oneself, se faire faire; is made of, fait de (en).
 mamma, maman.
 man, homme; young men, jeunes gens.
 manner, manière, *f.*; —of-living, vie, *f.*
 many, beaucoup; a great (good) —, beaucoup de; bien des; as — as, autant.
 map, carte, *f.*
 marble, marbre, *m.*; (*for playing*) bille, *f.*

- march, marche, *f.*
Marcus Aurelius, Marc-Aurèle.
Margaret, Marguerite.
 market, marché, *m.*
marriage, mariage, *m.*
marry, marier (*of parents and officials*), épouser (*of contracting parties*); be (get) married, se marier.
Marseilles, Marseille, *f.*
Mary, Marie.
 mason, maçon, *m.*
 mass, messe, *f.*
 master, maître, *m.*, professeur, *m.*
 material, étoffe, *f.*; matériaux, *m. pl.*
 matter, affaire, *f.*; it is a — of, il s'agit de; what is the — with you? qu'avez-vous? no — which, n'importe lequel.
 mature, mûr.
May, *n.* mai, *m.*
 may, *v.* pouvoir; it — be, il se peut.
 me, me, moi.
 meadow, pré, *m.*
 mean, vouloir dire.
 meaning, signification, *f.*
 means, moyen, *m.*
 measure, mesure, *f.*
 meat, viande, *f.*
 medicine, médecine, *f.*; remède, *m.*
 meet, rencontrer; — each other, se rencontrer; make (both) ends —, joindre les deux bouts.
 mention, mentionner, parler de; don't — it, il n'y a pas de quoi.
 menu, menu, *m.*
 merchant, marchand, *m.*
 merit, mérite, *m.*
 merry, gai, joyeux.
 merry-go-round, chevaux (*m. pl.*) de bois.
 metre, mètre, *m.*
 midnight, minuit, *m.*
 mild, doux.
 milk, *n.*, lait, *m.*
 milk, *v.*, tirer, traire.
 miller, meunier, *m.*
 mind, never —, n'importe.
 mine, à moi, le mien; a friend of —, un de mes amis.
 minute, minute, *f.*, moment, *m.*
 mirror, miroir, *m.*
 misfortune, malheur, *m.*
Miss, *n.*, mademoiselle.
 miss, *v.*, manquer.
Mississippi, Mississippi, *m.*
 mistake, erreur, *f.*; make —(s), se tromper.
 mistaken, be —, se tromper; if I am not —, si je ne me trompe.
 moderate, modérer.
 modern, moderne.
 moment, moment, *m.*
Monday, lundi, *m.*
 money, argent, *m.*
 monkey, singe, *m.*
 month, mois, *m.*
Montreal, Montréal, *m.*
 more, encore, plus, davantage; any —, encore; no —, ne . . . plus; some —, encore; the — . . . the — . . ., plus . . . plus.
 morning, matin, *m.*; — coat, jaquette, *f.*; good —, bonjour.
 most, le plus, la plupart de.
 mother, mère, *f.*
 mother-of-pearl, nacre, *f.*
 motor-car, automobile, *m. or f.*
 mountain, montagne, *f.*
 move, remuer, mouvoir; se mettre en branle.
Mr., Monsieur (*contr. M.*).
Mrs., Madame (*contr. M^{me}*).
Mt. Blanc, le mont Blanc.
 much, beaucoup; very —, beaucoup, bien; as — as, autant que; so —, tant, tellement.
 mud, boue, *f.*
 muddy, be —, faire de la boue.
 municipal, municipal.
 municipality, commune, *f.*

museum, musée, *m.*

music, musique, *f.*

must, falloir, devoir; **we** —, il nous faut, il faut que nous, nous devons; — **not**, il ne faut pas; — **have been**, a dû être.

my, mon, ma, mes.

myself, moi-même.

mysterious, mystérieux.

N

nail, clou, *m.*

name, *n.*, nom, *m.*; **what is his** —?, comment s'appelle-t-il? **my** — is, je m'appelle.

name, *v.*, nommer.

Napoleon, Napoléon.

narrow, étroit.

naughty, méchant.

near, près (de); **be (come)** —, manquer de, penser, faillir, s'en falloir de peu.

nearly, à peu près, près de, presque; I — fell, j'ai manqué de tomber.

necessary, nécessaire; **be** —, être nécessaire, falloir.

necklace, collier, *m.*

necktie, cravate, *f.*

need, avoir besoin de; il faut.

needle, aiguille, *f.*

neighbour, voisin, *m.*

neighbourhood, environs, *m. pl.*

neither, ni; — . . . nor, ne . . . ni . . . ni.

nephew, neveu.

nest, nid, *m.*

never, ne . . . jamais.

new, neuf, nouveau.

newly, récemment; — **married couple**, les nouveaux mariés.

New Orleans, la Nouvelle-Orléans.

news, nouvelle(s), *f.*

newspaper, journal, *m.*

New Year's Day, le jour de l'An.

New York, New-York.

next, ensuite, puis; prochain; what —? et avec ça? the — day, le lendemain.

nice, gentil, aimable.

niece, nièce.

night, nuit, *f.*; last —, hier au soir, cette nuit.

nine, neuf.

nineteen, dix-neuf.

ninety, quatre-vingt-dix.

no, non; mais non; ne . . . pas; — letter, pas de lettre; — one, personne.

nobody, ne . . . personne; personne.

noise, bruit, *m.*

none, ne . . . aucun (pas un); aucun; pas; there are — now, il n'y en a plus.

noon, midi, *m.*

nor, ni; — I either, ni moi non plus.

Norman, normand.

Normandy, Normandie, *f.*

north, nord, *m.*

not, ne . . . pas, non; is it —? n'est-ce pas? — one, pas un(e); — at all, pas du tout.

note, billet, *m.*, mot, *m.*

nothing, ne . . . rien, rien; — but, rien que.

notice, observer, remarquer.

Notre Dame, Notre-Dame.

novel, roman, *m.*

now, maintenant; à présent; — and then, de temps en temps; — adays, de nos jours; not —, ne . . . plus.

number, nombre, *m.*, numéro, *m.*

numerous, nombreux.

O

oak, chêne, *m.*

oats, avoine, *f. s.*

obey, obéir à.

- object, objet, *m.*
 obliged, obligé; he was —, il a dû.
 observation, observation, *f.*
 observe, observer, remarquer.
 obtain, obtenir.
 occupation, occupation, *f.*
 occur, arriver, se faire.
 o'clock, heure(s), *f.*
 of, de; — it (them), en; — the, du (etc.).
 offer, offrir.
 office, bureau, *m.*
 often, souvent.
 oil, huile, *f.*; — lamp, lampe (*f.*) à huile; — painting, peinture (*f.*) à l'huile.
 old, vieux, âgé; she is more than three years —, elle a plus de trois ans; how — is he? quel âge a-t-il? — age, vieillesse, *f.*
 omelet, omelette, *f.*
 on, sur, dans; de.
 once, une fois; at —, tout de suite.
 one, un, *m.*, une, *f.*; on; the —, celui (celle); this —, celui-ci; that —, celui-là; the white ones, les blancs.
 onion, oignon, *m.*
 only, ne . . . que, seulement; seul.
 open, ouvrir, s'ouvrir; — *p. part.* ouvert; in the — air, en plein air.
 opposite, en face de.
 or, ou.
 orchard, verger, *m.*
 order, in — that, pour que, de sorte que, afin que; in — to, pour, afin de.
 order, *v.*, commander, ordonner.
 ordinary, ordinaire.
 other, autre; others, les autres, d'autres.
 otter, loutre, *f.*
 ought, one —, on devrait; he — not to have, il n'aurait pas dû.
 our, notre, nos; ours, à nous, le nôtre (etc.)
 out of, hors de.
 outside (of it), dehors.
 oven, four, *m.*
 over, par; au-dessus de.
 overcoat, pardessus, *m.*
 overseer, surveiller.
 owe, devoir.
 own, propre, à lui; my —, le mien.
 ox, bœuf.

P

- page, page, *f.*
 pail, seau, *m.*
 pain, douleur, *f.*, mal, *m.*
 paint, peindre; — in oils, peindre à l'huile.
 painter, peintre.
 painting, peinture, *f.*, tableau, *m.*
 pair, paire, *f.*
 palace, palais, *m.*
 papa, papa.
 paper, papier, *m.*
 pardon, *n.*, pardon, *m.*; I beg your —, je vous demande pardon.
 pardon, *v.*, pardonner.
 parent, parent, *m.*
 Paris, Paris, *m.*
 Parisian, parisien.
 (parish) priest, curé.
 park, parc, *m.*, jardin, *m.*
 parlour, salon, *m.*
 part, rôle, *m.*, partie, *f.*; the most —, la plupart, la plus grande partie.
 partridge, perdrix, *f.*
 party, soirée, *f.*; parti, *m.*; our —, les nôtres.
 pass, *n.*, (*of mountains*) col, *m.*
 pass, *v.*, passer; (*at examination*) réussir, être reçu.
 passage, passage, *m.*; traversée, *f.*; corridor, *m.*
 past, passé.
 pastel, pastel, *m.*

- pastry, pâtisserie, *f.*
 path, sentier, *m.*
 patient, malade, *m. or f.*
 pay (for), payer; — a visit, faire une visite.
 pea, pois, *m.*; green peas, petits pois.
 peace, paix, *f.*
 pear, poire, *f.*; — tree, poirier, *m.*
 pearl, perle, *f.*
 peasant, paysan, *m.*
 pebble, caillou, *m.*
 pen, plume, *f.*
 pencil, crayon, *m.*
 people, peuple, *m.*; personnes, *f.*
 pl., gens, *m. or f.*; on, monde, *m.*
 perceive, apercevoir, s'apercevoir de.
 perhaps, peut-être (que).
 permission, permission, *f.*
 permit, permettre.
 person, personne, *f.*
 perspire, transpirer.
 Peter, Pierre.
 petroleum, pétrole, *m.*
 pianist, pianiste, *m. or f.*
 piano, piano, *m.*
 pick, cueillir; — up, ramasser.
 picture, image, *f.*, tableau, *m.*
 piece, morceau, *m.*; (of money)
 pièce, *f.*
 pine, pin, *m.*
 pipe, pipe, *f.*
 pit, fosse, *f.*
 pity, *n.*, dommage, *m.*; pitié, *f.*;
 what a —, quel dommage.
 pity, *v.*, plaindre.
 place, *n.*, endroit, *m.*, place, *f.*, lieu,
 m.; take — of, remplacer; take
 —, avoir lieu.
 place, *v.*, placer, poser, mettre.
 plain, simple.
 plan, plan, *m.*
 plank, planche, *f.*
 plant, planter.
 plate, assiette, *f.*
 play, *n.*, pièce, *f.*; go to the —, aller au théâtre.
 play, *v.*, jouer; — on the piano,
 jouer du piano.
 pleasant, agréable; (of weather)
 beau.
 please, plaire à; if you —, please,
 s'il vous plaît.
 pleased, content.
 pleasure, plaisir, *m.*
 plenty, assez de, beaucoup de.
 plough, *n.*, charrue, *f.*
 plough, *v.*, labourer.
 ploughing, *n.*, labour, *m.*
 ploughman, laboureur, *m.*
 p.m., du soir.
 pocket, poche, *f.*
 poem, poème, *m.*
 poet, poète, *m.*
 police, police, *f.*; —man, agent
 (de police).
 politeness, politesse, *f.*
 poor, pauvre.
 porcelain, porcelaine, *f.*
 pore, pore, *m.*
 port, port, *m.*
 porter, facteur.
 portrait, portrait, *m.*
 position, place, *f.*, poste, *m.*
 possible, possible.
 postman, facteur.
 post office, poste, *f.*
 potato, pomme (*f.*) de terre.
 poultry, volaille, *f.*
 pound, livre, *f.*
 practice, clientèle, *f.*
 preceding, précédent.
 precise(ly), précis.
 prefer, préférer, aimer mieux.
 preparation(s), préparatifs, *m. pl.*
 prepare, préparer; se préparer.
 prescribe, ordonner.
 prescription, ordonnance, *f.*
 present, cadeau, *m.*, présent, *m.*;
 at —, à présent; be —, assister,
 être présent.

- pretty, joli.
 prevent, empêcher.
 price, prix, *m.*
 priest, prêtre, curé.
 princess, princesse.
 prize, prix, *m.*
 probable, probable.
 probably, probablement.
 problem, problème, *m.*
 process, procédé, *m.*
 product, produit, *m.*
 professor, professeur, *m. or f.*
 profit(s), bénéfices, *m. pl.; make*
 —, tirer des bénéfices.
 promise, promettre.
 property, propriété, *f.*
 proportion, proportion, *f. ; in — as,*
 à mesure que.
 prosperity, prospérité, *f.*
 protect, protéger.
 proverb, proverbe, *m.*
 provisions, vivres, *m. pl. ; get —,*
 se fournir.
 public, *n., public, m.*
 public, *adj., public.*
 pulse, pouls, *m.*
 Punch and Judy, Guignol, *m.*
 pupil, élève, *m. or f.*
 purchase, achat, *m.*
 purple, lilas.
 purse, porte-monnaie, *m.*
 put, mettre, placer; — on, mettre;
 — away (in), serrer; — in
 place, caser; — in, y mettre;
 — out, éteindre.

Q

- quality, qualité, *f.*
 quarter, quart, *m. ; quinze minutes, f. ; at a — past one, à une heure (et) un quart; at a — to one, à une heure moins le (un) quart.*
 queen, reine, *f.*
 question, question, *f.*
- quickly, vite.
 quiet, tranquille; be, become —,
 se taire.
 quite, assez, tout à fait, très, bien.

R

- radish, radis, *m.*
 railroad, railway, chemin (*m.*) de fer.
 rain, *n., pluie, f.*
 rain, *v., pleuvoir.*
 rarely, rarement.
 rather, assez; I would —, j'aime-
 rais mieux.
 read, lire.
 reading, lecture, *f. ; — room (salle,*
 f.) or salon (m.) de lecture.
 ready, prêt; fait; get —, se dis-
 poser.
 reap, moissonner.
 reaping machine, moissonneuse, *f.*
 reason, raison, *f., motif, m.*
 receive, recevoir.
 recently, récemment.
 reception, réception, *f.*
 recognize, reconnaître.
 recover, se remettre, se rétablir,
 guérir.
 recovered, remis, rétabli.
 red, rouge.
 reflect, réfléchir.
 refuse, refuser.
 regard, with — to, à propos de.
 regret, regretter.
 reign, *n., règne, m.*
 reign, *v., régner.*
 relate, raconter.
 relation, relative, parent, *m.*
 relish, 'hors-d'œuvre, *m.*
 remain, rester.
 remarkable, remarquable.
 remember, se rappeler, se souve-
 nir de, retenir.
 render, rendre.
 repair, réparer.

reply, répondre, répliquer.
 represent, représenter.
 republican, républicain, *m.*
 reputation, réputation, *f.*
 required, is —, il faut.
 resemble, ressembler (à).
 resort, station, *f.*; summer —,
 station d'été.
 respect, respecter.
 rest, the —, le reste; les autres.
 restaurant, restaurant, *m.*
 restore, restaurer, remettre, ré-
 tablir.
 retreat, retraite, *f.*
 return, *n.*, retour, *m.*
 return, *v.*, revenir (*come back*), re-
 tourner (*go back*); — home, ren-
 trer (chez soi).
 rhinoceros, rhinocéros, *m.*
 Rhone, Rhône, *m.*
 rich, riche.
 richly, richement.
 ride, go for (*take*) a —, se pro-
 mener à cheval.
 right, droit, *m.*; raison, *f.*; (*of time*)
 à l'heure; on the —, à (la) droite;
 he is (in the) —, il a raison.
 ring, sonner.
 ripe, mûr.
 ripen, mûrir.
 rise, se lever, s'élever; lever.
 river, rivière, *f.*; (*falling into the*
 sea) fleuve, *m.*
 road, chemin, *m.*, route, *f.*
 roaring, rugissement, *m.*
 roast, *n.*, rôti, *m.*
 roast, *v.*, rôtir.
 robbery, vol, *m.*
 Robert, Robert.
 rôle, rôle, *m.*
 roll, *n.*, petit pain, *m.*
 roll, *v.*, rouler.
 rolling, *n.*, roulis, *m.*
 roof, toit, *m.*
 room, pièce, *f.*, salle, *f.*, chambre, *f.*
 rose, rose, *f.*

rule, règle, *f.*
 run, courir, marcher; (*of liquids*)
 couler; — off the track, dérailler;
 get — over, se faire écraser.
 rush, se précipiter.

S

sack, sac, *m.*
 sack coat, veston, *m.*
 safe, sauf; — and sound, sain et
 sauf.
 saint, saint, *m.*
 salad, salade, *f.*
 salute, saluer; — each other, se
 saluer.
 same, même; at the — time, en
 même temps; it is all the — to
 me, cela m'est égal.
 sand, sable, *m.*
 sardine, sardine, *f.*
 satisfactory, satisfaisant; not be
 —, laisser à désirer.
 satisfied, satisfait, content.
 Saturday, samedi, *m.*
 save, économiser, épargner.
 sawmill, scierie, *f.*
 say, dire; they —, on dit.
 scaffolding, échafaudage, *m.*
 scene, scène, *f.*
 scholar, écolier, -ère.
 school, école, *f.*, collège, *m.*; at —,
 à l'école; —boy, écolier; —girl,
 écolière.
 scissors, ciseaux, *m.* *pl.*
 score, vingtaine, *f.*
 sea, mer, *f.*; —port, port (*m.*) de
 mer; be —sick, avoir le mal de
 mer.
 seashore, bord de la mer.
 seaside resort, station (*f.*) balné-
 aire, bains (*m.*) de mer.
 season, saison, *f.*
 seat, place, *f.*, siège, *m.*, banc, *m.*
 seated, be —, s'asseoir, être assis.
 second, deuxième, second; deux.

- see, voir; **be seen**, se voir; — about (after), s'occuper de; — each other, se voir.
- seek**, chercher.
- seem**, sembler, paraître.
- Seine**, Seine, *f.*
- seize**, saisir.
- select**, choisir.
- sell**, vendre, se vendre; — again, revendre.
- senate**, sénat, *m.*
- send**, envoyer; — for, envoyer chercher, faire venir.
- separate**, séparer.
- serious**, grave, sérieux.
- servant**, bonne, *f.*, servante, *f.*, domestique, *m. or f.*
- serve**, servir.
- service**, service, *m.*
- set**, mettre; — out, partir; — the table, mettre la nappe (le couvert).
- seven**, sept.
- seventeen**, dix-sept.
- seventy**, soixante-dix.
- seventy-five**, soixante-quinze.
- several**, plusieurs.
- severe**, rude.
- sew**, coudre.
- sewing**, couture, *f.*
- shade**, nuance, *f.*; ombre, *f.*; in the —, à l'ombre.
- shake**, secouer; — hands, se donner la main, se serrer la main.
- shall**, *sign of fut.*; what — I do? que voulez-vous que je fasse?
- she**, elle, ce.
- sheep**, mouton, *m.*
- shelter**, abri, *m.*; sheltered from, à l'abri de.
- ship**, navire, *m.*, vaisseau, *m.*
- shoe**, soulier, *m.*
- shoemaker**, cordonnier, *m.*
- shop**, magasin, *m.*, boutique, *f.*; at the — of, chez; go shopping,
- faire des emplettes, courir les magasins.
- shore**, bord, *m.*, côte, *f.*; go on —, débarquer.
- short**, court.
- should**, *sign of cond.*; one —, on devrait; you — have, vous auriez dû.
- shout**, crier.
- show**, *n.*, concours, *m.*
- show**, *v.*, montrer; faire voir; — in, faire entrer; — up(stairs), faire monter.
- shut**, fermer.
- sick**, malade; — people, malades.
- sickle**, fauille, *f.*
- side**, côté, *m.*; by the — of, à côté de.
- sideboard**, buffet, *m.*
- sidewalk**, trottoir, *m.*
- sight**, vue, *f.*, coup (*m.*) d'œil; fine sights, beautés, *f. pl.*
- sign**, signe, *m.*
- silk**, soie, *f.*; — worm, ver (*m.*) à soie; — dress, robe (*f.*) de soie; — goods, soieries *f. pl.*; — room, salon (*m.*) des soieries.
- silver**, argent, *m.*
- silverware**, argenterie, *f.*
- simple**, simple.
- since**, depuis (que); que; puisque; it is a long time —, il y a longtemps que . . . ne . . .
- sing**, chanter.
- singer**, chanteuse, *f.*
- singing**, chant, *m.*
- single**, seul.
- sir**, monsieur.
- sister**, sœur.
- sit (down)**, s'asseoir, se mettre à table.
- sitting**, assis.
- situated**, situé.
- six**, six.
- sixteen**, seize.
- sixty**, soixante.

- skate, *n.*, patin, *m.*
 skate, *v.*, patiner.
 skirt, jupe, *f.*
 sleep, dormir; coucher; go to —, s'endormir.
 sleeping car, wagon-lit, *m.*
 sleigh, traîneau, *m.*; go sleighing, aller (se promener) en traîneau.
 slice, tranche, *f.*; — of bread and butter, tartine (*f.*) de beurre.
 slippery, glissant.
 slow, lent; be too —, retarder.
 slowly, lentement, doucement.
 small, petit.
 smell, sentir; — sweet, sentir bon.
 smoke, fumer.
 sneeze, éternuer.
 snow, *n.*, neige, *f.*
 snow, *v.*, neiger.
 so, si, ainsi; le; not —, pas si, moins; — much, — many, tant, tellement; — that, de sorte que, pour que.
 soap, savon, *m.*
 society, société, *f.*
 solve, résoudre.
 some, du, etc.; quelque; quelconque; quelques-uns; en.
 somebody, some one, quelqu'un, on.
 something, quelque chose (de).
 sometimes, quelquefois.
 somewhere, quelque part.
 son, fils.
 song, chanson, *f.*
 soon, bientôt; sooner, plus tôt; as — as, aussitôt que; I would as —, j'aimerais autant.
 sore, I have a — throat, j'ai mal à la gorge.
 sorry, fâché; be —, regretter, être fâché.
 sort, espèce, *f.*, sorte, *f.*
 sound, *n.*, bruit, *m.*
 sound, *adj.*, sain.
 soup, potage, *m.*, soupe, *f.*
- sour, aigre.
 south, sud, *m.*, midi, *m.*
 sow, semer.
 speak, parler.
 spectacles, lunettes, *f. pl.*
 speed, vitesse, *f.*
 spend, dépenser (*money*), passer (time).
 splendid, superbe, magnifique.
 spoon, cuiller, *f.*
 sport, sport, *m.*
 spring, printemps, *m.*; (of water) source, *f.*
 spruce, sapin, *m.*
 square, carré.
 squirrel, écureuil, *m.*
 stable, (for cows) étable, *f.*, (for horses) écurie, *f.*
 stairway, escalier, *m.*
 stale, rassis.
 stand, se trouver, être debout, s'élever; standing, debout.
 start, partir; tressaillir.
 state, état, *m.*; — room, cabine, *f.*
 station, gare, *f.*
 statue, statue, *f.*
 stay, *n.*, séjour, *m.*
 stay, *v.*, rester.
 steal, voler.
 steam, vapeur, *f.*
 steamer, bateau (*m.*) à vapeur, paquebot, *m.*
 steel, acier, *m.*; — engraving, gravure (*f.*) sur acier.
 step, pas, *m.*
 stick, bâton, *m.*, canne, *f.*
 still, encore, toujours.
 St. John, saint Jean.
 St. Lawrence, Saint-Laurent, *m.*
 stone, pierre, *f.*
 stop, arrêter; s'arrêter.
 store, magasin, *m.*
 story, étage (of a house), *m.*
 story, histoire, *f.*
 strange, étrange.
 stranger, étranger, *m.*

straw, paille, <i>f.</i> ; — hat, chapeau (<i>m.</i>) de paille.	talk, parler.
strawberry, fraise, <i>f.</i>	tall, grand.
stream, ruisseau, <i>m.</i> , cours (<i>m.</i>) d'eau.	tapestry, tapisserie, <i>f.</i>
street, rue, <i>f.</i>	task, tâche, <i>f.</i> , devoir, <i>m.</i>
strike, frapper.	taste, <i>n.</i> , goût, <i>m.</i>
strong, fort.	taste, <i>v.</i> , goûter.
student, étudiant, <i>m.</i>	tax, reprocher.
study, étudier.	tea, thé, <i>m.</i> ; — cup, tasse (<i>f.</i>) à thé.
study table, table (<i>f.</i>) de travail.	teach, enseigner, instruire, ap-
stupid, bête, stupide.	prendre, montrer.
subject, sujet, <i>m.</i>	teacher, professeur, <i>m.</i> or <i>f.</i> ; (<i>pri-</i>
succeed, réussir; (<i>at examination</i>) être reçu.	<i>mary</i>) instituteur, <i>m.</i> , institu-
success, succès, <i>m.</i>	trice, <i>f.</i>
such, tel; — a, un tel; si.	tear (out), arracher.
suffer, souffrir.	tease, taquiner.
suffice, be sufficient, suffire.	tedium, ennui, <i>m.</i>
sugar, sucre, <i>m.</i>	telegraph, télégraphier.
suit (of clothes), vêtement, <i>m.</i> , complet, <i>m.</i>	telephone, téléphoner.
summer, été, <i>m.</i>	tell, dire, raconter.
sun, soleil, <i>m.</i>	temperature, température, <i>f.</i>
Sunday, dimanche, <i>m.</i>	ten, dix.
sunny, be —, faire du soleil.	tender, tendre.
superintend, surveiller.	tent, tente, <i>f.</i>
sure, sûr, certain.	terms, good —, bonne intelligence.
surface, surface, <i>f.</i>	terrible, terrible.
surround, entourer.	Thames, Tamise, <i>f.</i>
sweet, doux.	than, que; (<i>before numerals</i>) de.
swim, nager.	thank, remercier; thanks, merci, je vous remercie.
T	
table, table, <i>f.</i> ; — cloth, nappe, <i>f.</i> , couvert, <i>m.</i> , tapis, <i>m.</i> ; set the —, mettre la nappe (le couvert).	thankful, reconnaissant.
tailor, tailleur, <i>m.</i>	that, qui, que; ce, cet, cette; cela; celui(-là); que, de sorte que;
take, prendre; mener, conduire; — from, prendre à; — to, transpor- ter à; — a walk, faire une prome- nade, se promener à pied; — away, emporter; — out, sortir; — after, tenir de; — about, pro- mener; — off, ôter, quitter.	— one, celui-là; — is, voilà, c'est; is — your book? est-ce là votre livre?
taking, prise, <i>f.</i>	thaw, dégeler.
T	
the, le, la, les,	the, le, la, les,
theatre, théâtre, <i>m.</i>	theatre, théâtre, <i>m.</i>
thee, te, toi.	thee, te, toi.
their, leur, leurs; theirs, à eux (etc.); le leur (etc.).	their, leur, leurs; theirs, à eux
them, les, eux, elles, leur; of —, d'eux, en.	(etc.); le leur (etc.).
then, alors, puis, ensuite.	them, les, eux, elles, leur; of —,
there, là, y; — (it) is, voilà; — is (are), il y a.	d'eux, en.

- thermometer**, thermomètre, *m.*
they, ils, *m.*, eux, *m.*, elles, *f.*; ce; on.
thick, épais.
thief, voleur, *m.*
thimble, dé, *m.*
thin, mince.
thine, à toi, le tien (etc.)
thing, chose, *f.*; affaire, *f.*; some—, quelque chose.
think, penser, croire, réfléchir, trouver; what do you — of it? qu'en pensez-vous? comment le trouvez-vous? — of me, pensez à moi; what are you thinking of? à quoi pensez-vous?
third, troisième; tiers, *m.*
thirst, soif, *f.*; be thirsty, avoir soif; be very thirsty, avoir bien (très) soif, mourir de soif.
thirty, trente; about —, une trentaine.
this, ce, cet, cette; ce . . . -ci; ceci; — is, voici; — one, celui-ci.
thou, tu, toi.
though, bien que, quoique.
thousand (a), mille, mil, millier.
thread, fil, *m.*
three, trois.
thresh, battre.
throat, gorge, *f.*
through, par, à travers de.
throw, jeter, lancer; — away, jeter.
thumb, pouce, *m.*
Thursday, jeudi, *m.*
thy, ton, ta, tes.
ticket, billet, *m.*
tie, *n.*, cravate, *f.*
tie (up), *v.*, attacher.
tile, tuile, *f.*
till, jusque, jusqu'à.
time, temps, *m.*, fois, *f.*, heure, *f.*; moment, *m.*; three —s, trois fois; at what —? à quelle heure? on —, à l'heure, à l'heure exacte; from — to —, de temps en temps; have a good —, s'amuser (bien).
timid, timide.
tip, pourboire, *m.*
tired, fatigué.
to, à, en, pour; chez; jusqu'à.
to-day, aujourd'hui.
together, ensemble.
to-morrow, demain; the day after —, après-demain.
tongue, langue, *f.*; show the —, tirer la langue.
too, aussi; trop; — much, trop.
tool, outil, *m.*
tooth, dent, *f.*; —brush, brosse (f.) à dents; —ache, mal (*m.*) aux dents.
top, toupie, *f.*
Toronto, Toronto, *m.*
torrent, torrent, *m.*
toss, jeter, lancer.
touch, toucher (à).
towards, vers.
towel, serviette, *f.*
town, ville, *f.*; in —, en ville; to —, à la ville.
townsman, citadin.
toy, joujou, *m.*
train, train, *m.*
tramway, tramway, *m.*
translate, traduire.
travel, *n.*, voyage, *m.*
travel, *v.*, voyager.
tree, arbre, *m.* —
tremble, tressaillir.
trim, garnir.
trimming, garniture, *f.*
trip, voyage, *m.*, promenade, *f.*
trouble, peine, *f.*; what is the —? de quoi s'agit-il?
trout, truite, *f.*
true, vrai.
truly, vraiment, réellement.
trunk, malle, *f.*
try, tâcher; — (on), essayer.

Tuesday, mardi, *m.*
 twelve, douze; — o'clock, midi,
 m., minuit, *m.*
 twenty, vingt.
 twenty-five, vingt-cinq.
 twice, deux fois.
 two, deux.

U

umbrella, parapluie, *m.*
 uncle, oncle, *m.*
 under, sous; — it, dessous.
 understand, comprendre; not —
 at all, n'y comprendre rien.
 unfortunate, malheureux.
 unhappy, malheureux.
 United States, États-Unis, *m. pl.*
 university, université, *f.*
 unless, à moins de, à moins que
 ... ne.
 unsoiled, frais.
 until, jusque, jusqu'à; jusqu'à ce
 que, que.
 up, en haut; be all — with, en
 être fait de.
 upper, supérieur.
 upstairs, en haut; show —, faire
 monter.

us, nous.

use, *n.*, usage, *m.*; make — of, se
 servir de; what — is that? à quoi
 sert cela? that is no —, cela
 ne sert à rien.
 use, *v.*, se servir de, employer; I
 used to play, je jouais.
 useful, utile.
 utensil, ustensile, *m.*
 utilize, utiliser.

V

valise, valise, *f.*
 vase, vase, *m.*
 vast, vaste.
 veal, veau, *m.*
 vegetable, légume, *m.*
 Venus, Vénus.

verse, verset, *m.*; (*line of poetry*)
 vers, *m.*
 very, très, bien, fort; beaucoup.
 vessel, vaisseau, *m.*
 vice, vice, *m.*
 village, village, *m.*
 violent, violent.
 visit, *n.*, visite, *f.*; on a —, en
 visite.
 visit, *v.*, visiter, faire visite à,
 rendre visite à, aller voir.
 voice, voix, *f.*
 volume, volume, *m.*, tome, *m.*
 vote, *n.*, voix, *f.*; voting, vote, *m.*
 vote, *v.*, voter.

W

wages, gages, *m. pl.*
 wainscoting, boiserie, *f.*
 waist, corsage, *m.*
 waistcoat, gilet, *m.*
 wait (for), attendre; keep waiting,
 faire attendre.
 waken, réveiller; se réveiller.
 walk, promenade, *f.*; go for a —,
 (aller) faire une promenade.
 wall, mur, *m.*
 walnut, noix, *f.*; — tree (or wood),
 noyer, *m.*
 want to, vouloir, désirer.
 warm, adj., chaud; it is —, il fait
 chaud.
 warm, *v.*, chauffer.
 warmth, chaleur, *f.*
 wash, laver; se laver; (*linen*)
 blanchir.
 waste, gaspiller.
 watch, montre, *f.*
 water, eau, *f.*; —fall, cascade, *f.*
 way, façon, *f.*, manière, *f.*; chemin,
 m.; moyen, *m.*; by the —, à pro-
 pos; there is no —, il n'y a pas
 moyen; in such a — that, de
 telle façon que.
 we, nous; on.
 weak, faible.

- wealth**, richesse(s), *f.*
wear, porter.
weather, temps, *m.*; the — is fine, il fait beau; in cold —, par le temps froid.
week, semaine, huit jours; next —, la semaine prochaine; a — from to-day, d'aujourd'hui en huit; **two weeks**, deux semaines, quinze jours, une quinzaine.
well, bien; — then, eh bien; **very** —, très bien, je veux bien; **not be very** —, être souffrant; **get** —, guérir; — off (-to-do), heureux, ais; **be** —, se porter bien.
were, *see be*.
west, ouest, *m.*
what, que, quoi, ce qui, ce que; quel? qu'est-ce qui? qu'est-ce que?
whatever, quoi que; quel que; quelconque; quelque . . . que, n'importe quel.
wheat, blé, *m.*
when, quand, lorsque, où; à quelle heure?
whenever, quand, toutes les fois que.
where, où.
wherever, en quelque lieu que, partout où, où que.
whether, si; soit que, que.
which, qui, que, ce qui, ce que, lequel; quel; of —, dont.
while, whilst, pendant que, tandis que; en.
whistie, siffler.
white, blanc.
who, qui, lequel (etc.).
whoever, qui que, quiconque.
whole, tout, seule; the — day, toute la journée.
whom, qui, que, lequel (etc.).
whose, de qui, à qui, dont, duquel (etc.).
why, pourquoi.
wide, large.
wife, femme.
wild, sauvage.
will, sign of fut.; vouloir; when you —, quand vous voudrez; — you kindly? voulez-vous bien?
William, Guillaume.
win, gagner, l'emporter; — the day, l'emporter.
wind, vent, *m.*; there is —, il fait du vent.
window, fenêtre, *f.*; (front) shop —, devanture, *f.*
window blind, store, *m.*
windy, be —, faire du vent.
wine, vin, *m.*; —glass, verre (*m.*) à vin.
winter, hiver, *m.*
wise, sage, intelligent, raisonnable.
wish, désirer, vouloir; I — (should like), je voudrais.
with, avec, de, chez, contre, au-près de.
without, sans, sans que.
woman, femme; — doctor, femme docteur.
wonder, se demander.
wonderful, remarquable, étonnant, merveilleux.
wonderfully, à merveille.
wood, bois, *m.*
woodcutter, bûcheron, *m.*
wooden, de bois, en bois.
woollens, lainages, *m. pl.*
word, mot, *m.*
work, *n.*, travail, *m.*, ouvrage, *m.*
work, *v.*, travailler; faire marcher; exploiter; fonctionner.
workman, ouvrier, *m.*
world, monde, *m.*
worm, ver, *m.*
worse, adj., pire, plus mauvais; adv., pis, plus mal.
worth, be —, valoir; — while, valoir la peine; have 5 francs —

of, en avoir pour 5 francs; — a million, riche d'un million.
 worthy, brave, digne.
 would, sign of condl. and of *impf.* *ind.*; voudrais, voulais.
 write, écrire; — to each other, s'écrire.
 wrong, mauvais; tort, *m.*; he is —, il a tort.
 wrought-iron, fer (*m.*) forgé.

Y

yard, cour, *f.*; mètre, *m.*
 year, an, *m.*, année, *f.*; every —, tous les ans; this —, cette année.

yeast, levain, *m.*
 yellow, jaune; become —, jaunir.
 yes, oui, si.
 yesterday, hier; the day before —, avant-hier.
 yet, encore; déjà; cependant; not —, pas encore.
 yield, donner.
 yonder, là-bas.
 you, vous; tu, te, toi; on.
 young, jeune.
 your, votre, vos; ton, ta, tes;
 yours, à toi, à vous; le tien (etc.),
 le vôtre (etc.).
 yourself, vous, vous-même.

Happy
New
Year

INDEX

a: denoting place, § 12; repetition of, § 12; contraction with definite article, §§ 12, 83, 87, 92; denoting indirect object, § 21; before infinitive, § 60; with place-names, § 108; before venir, § 170; required after certain verbs, § 180; à + disjunctive pronoun for possessive, Lesson XXII and § 211; forming adjectival phrases, § 221.

accents, Introduction, *A.*

adjectives: feminine, plural and agreement, §§ 14, 207; irregular plural of, § 32; position of, § 33; irregular feminine of, § 34; adjectives and nouns, feminine of, § 206; when invariable, § 207; with *avoir l'air*, § 207; agreement with *gens*, § 207; adverbs from adjectives, § 216; see also possessive, demonstrative, etc.

adverb: position, § 48; comparison, § 59; numeral adverb, § 127; from adjectives, § 216; distinctions, § 217.

age, expressions of, § 135.

agir, impersonal, § 185.

agreement: verb and subject, §§ 4, 160; personal pronoun and antecedent, § 7; adjectives, §§ 14, 207; possessive adjective, § 16; relative pronoun, § 36; past participle, §§ 49, 51, 120, 196.

aller + infinitive, § 169; + chercher, § 174.

alphabet, Introduction, *A.*

à moins que, with ne, § 220.

apposition, § 200; apparent, § 200.

article, see definite and indefinite.

au = à + le, §§ 12, 83, 87, 92. aucun, § 104.

au-dessous de, § 222.

au-dessus de, § 222.

au-près de, § 222.

aussi, in comparison, §§ 56-59; = hence, word-order, § 161.

autant, § 217.

autre, § 101; l'un l'autre, § 117.

autrui, § 101.

aux = à + les, §§ 12, 83, 87, 92.

auxiliary function, § 163 and following.

auxiliary verbs: conjugation, Appendix, *C*, 2; in compound tenses, §§ 45, 51, 113; in passive, § 118; word-order with, §§ 48, 113.

avant, § 222.

avant que, with ne, § 220.

avoir: conjugation, Appendix, *C*, 2; use in compound tenses, § 45; y avoir, §§ 31, 114, 185, 187; avoir + besoin (chaud, etc.), § 202; avoir l'air, § 207.

bien, of quantity, § 26.

ça, for cela, § 79.

can, distinctions, §§ 165, 166.

capitals, Introduction, *Q.*

cardinals, § 121.

ce, demonstrative adjective, § 43.

ce: pronoun, § 35; + être, § 54; as real subject, §§ 80, 182; ce qui (que), recapitulatory use, § 98; c'est and il est, § 182; ce and il(s), elle(s), § 183.

conditional anterior; § 112; replaced by imperfect indicative, § 188; replaced by pluperfect subjunctive, § 193.

conditional sentences, § 113.

conditional tense, §§ 110, 111; of deferential statement, § 190; of probability, etc., § 190; of concession, with quand (même) or que, § 190; of implied futurity, § 190; of hearsay information, § 190.

conjunctions: requiring subjunctive, §§ 147, 224; requiring past anterior, § 153; various distinctions of, § 223; corresponding to prepositional phrases, § 223.

conjunctive personal pronouns, §§ 22, 23; position, §§ 68, 72; as indirect object of reflexives, § 116.

consonants, pronunciation, Introduction, *M.*

contractions: de + definite article, §§ 10, 83, 87, 92; à + definite article, §§ 12, 83, 87, 92.

could, distinctions, § 165.

dans = in, § 12, note.

dates: year, § 129; month, § 134.

days, of week, § 132.

de: of possession, § 10; repetition of, § 10; contraction with definite article, §§ 10, 83, 87, 92; in adjectival phrases, §§ 30, 221; with superlative, § 57; after plus, moins, § 59; before infinitive, § 60; with place-names, § 108; with passive, § 118; of dimension, § 131; before venir, § 170; after certain verbs, § 180; with historical infinitive, § 191; causing omission of partitive de, § 198.

definite article: forms, repetition, § 2; contractions

- with *de* and *à*, §§ 10, 12, 83, 87, 92; omission with partitive, § 28; use in superlative, § 57; with place-names, § 108; denoting possession, § 117; distributively, § 124; with titles, § 199; with appositive noun, § 200; omitted in certain expressions, § 202; for possessive adjective, § 203.
- demi*, agreement, § 126.
- demonstrative adjective: forms, repetition, § 43.
- demonstrative pronoun, §§ 35, 79; see also *ce*, *ce-lui*, etc.
- depuis* (quand?), with present and imperfect indicative, §§ 187, 188.
- depuis que* and *puisque*, § 223.
- dernier* + subjunctive, § 146.
- des* = *de + les*, §§ 10, 83, 87, 92; denoting plural of *un*, § 25.
- dessous*, § 217.
- dessus*, § 217.
- devant*, § 222.
- devoir* + infinitive, § 168.
- dimensions, § 131.
- disjunctive personal pronouns, §§ 52–54.
- donner*, conjugation, Appendix, C, 1.
- dont*, § 94.
- du* = *de + le*, §§ 10, 83, 87, 92.
- e*, *é*, of stem syllable, Appendix, D.
- eler*, verbs in, Appendix, D.
- elision*, Introduction, O.
- empêcher*, with *ne*, § 220.
- en*: pronominal adverb, § 27; position, §§ 68, 72; with indefinite antecedent, § 210.
- en*: preposition, with place-names, § 108; with participle, § 139; forming adjectival phrases, § 221.
- encore un*, § 101.
- en quelque lieu que* = *where-ever*, § 217.
- entendre* + infinitive, § 172; + *dire*, + *parler de*, § 174.
- entendu*, agreement, § 196.
- entre*, § 222.
- envers*, § 222.
- environ*, § 222.
- envoyer chercher*, § 174.
- est-ce que*, § 20.
- été*, invariable, § 118.
- eter*, verbs in, Appendix, D.
- être*: conjugation, Appendix, C, 2; use in compound tenses, §§ 51, 119.
- eur*, feminine of, § 206.
- éviter*, with *ne*, § 220.
- faire*: of weather, temperature, etc., §§ 114, 204; causatively, and government of, § 172; + attendre, + savoir, + venir, § 174.
- faire*, when invariable, § 172.
- finir*: conjugation, Appendix, C, 1; + *par*, § 178.
- fois* (une fois, etc.), § 122.
- fractions*, § 126.
- future anterior*, § 78; of probability, etc., § 189.
- future tense*, §§ 74–76; of probability, etc., § 189.
- gender*, of nouns, § 1, also Appendix, A.
- general noun*, § 24.
- gens*, gender and agreement, § 207.
- ger*, verbs in, Appendix, D.
- guère*, with *ne*, §§ 104, 218.
- holidays*, § 136.
- however*, §§ 146, 217.
- il*: impersonal, § 114; invariable, § 210; anticipating real subject, § 185.
- il est* and *c'est*, § 182; – *il y a*, § 185.
- il (s)*, *elle (s)* and *ce*, § 183.
- il s'agit*, § 185.
- il se peut*, § 185.
- il y a*, §§ 31, 114, 185; *il y a que*, with present and imperfect indicative, § 187.
- imperative mood*, §§ 69, 70; negatively, § 71; with pronoun objects, § 72; of reflexives, § 116; 3d singular and plural of, § 148; replaced by infinitive, § 191.
- imperfect indicative*, §§ 63–65; with *depuis*, etc., denoting how long, § 188; replacing conditional anterior, § 188.
- imperfect subjunctive*, §§ 154–156.
- impersonal verbs*, §§ 114, 185.
- indefinite adjectives*, §§ 40, 100–105.
- indefinite article*: forms, repetition, § 1; omission, §§ 200, 202; employed contrary to English usage, § 202.
- indefinite pronouns*, §§ 40, 100–105.
- indirect object*, § 21.
- ing* forms, §§ 60, 141.
- infinitive mood*: after verbs, nouns, adjectives, § 60; for *-ing* forms, §§ 60, 141; replacing subjunctive, § 156, note; for noun clause, § 176; preceded by *par*, *pour*, § 178; after prepositional phrases, § 178; for imperative, § 191; historical infinitive, § 191; infinitive or subjunctive, § 195.
- interrogation*, §§ 8, 9, 20, 87–91; forms with relative pronoun, § 37.
- interrogative adjective*, § 50.
- interrogative locutions*, § 91.
- interrogative pronouns*, §§ 87–91.
- irregular verbs*, remarks on, § 158; exercise form for, § 159; list of, Appendix, E.
- jamais*, with *ne*, § 104.
- là*, compared with *y*, § 39.
- là*, §§ 43, 82.
- laissé*, agreement, § 196.
- laisser* + infinitive, § 172.
- le* (*la*, *les*), see also definite article and personal pronoun; *le*, invariable, § 210; *le*, predicative, § 210.
- lequel*, § 95.
- lequel?* § 90.
- liaison*, Introduction, N.
- lorsque* and *quand*, § 223.
- l'un*, *l'autre*, § 117.

measures, French, § 123.
mill, in dates, § 129.
moi, for me, § 72.
moins, in comparison, §§ 56–
59; as adverb of quantity,
§ 59.

mon, in address, § 211.

money, French, § 123.

months, § 133.

multiplicatives, § 122.

nasal vowels, Introduction,
K.

ne: with pas, point, etc.,
§§ 11, 104, 218; position,
§§ 48, 218; in comparisons,
§ 208; omitted, § 218;
without pas, etc., § 219;
redundant, § 220; ne . . .
que, §§ 104, 198, 217; ne
. . . pas que, § 217.

negation: ne . . . pas, § 11;
with indefinites, § 104;
summary of forms, §§ 104,
218; pas, etc., omitted,
§ 219; ne redundant,
§ 220.

neither . . . nor, § 218.

n'importe, §§ 215, 219.

non, § 218; que non, § 217.

noun: general and partitive,
§§ 24, 25; plural of, §§ 2,
32 and Appendix, *B*;
gender of, § 1 and Appendix,
A; in -eur, -teur,
feminine of, § 206; femin-
ine like adjectives, § 206.

nul, § 104.

numerals, §§ 121–137; car-
dinals, § 121; ordinals,
§ 125.

on (*l'on*), § 38; replacing
passive, § 38; repetition
of, § 214.

only, how expressed, § 217.

ordinals, § 125.

où, as relative pronoun,
§ 96; où que = wherever,
§ 217.

oui: que oui, § 217.

ou, how expressed, § 211.

par, with passive, § 118; of
price, § 124; with faire,
construction, § 172; after
commencer and finir,
§ 178.

parmi, § 222.

participles: used as adjecti-

tives, § 33; see also,
present, past, perfect par-
ticiples.

partitive noun, § 25; omis-
sion of article, § 28; omis-
sion of partitive sign,
§§ 29, 198; exceptional
cases of, § 198.

partout où = wherever, § 217.

pas, with ne, §§ 11, 104, 218;
ne omitted, § 218; posi-
tion, § 218; pas un, § 104.

passive voice, § 118; re-
placed by on, §§ 38, 118;
replaced by reflexives,
§ 117.

past anterior, §§ 151, 153.

past definite, §§ 149, 150,
152, 153.

past indefinite, §§ 46, 47.

past participle, § 44; in com-
pound tenses, §§ 45, 51;
agreement of, §§ 49, 118,
120, 140, 196; with im-
personal verb, §§ 185,
196; special cases, § 196.

pendant que and tandis que,
§ 223.

perfect participle, §§ 138,
140.

personal pronouns: in ad-
dress, § 5; agreement with
antecedent, §§ 7, 210; use
and position as objects,
§§ 18, 21, 23, 68, 72; con-
junctive, §§ 22, 23; dis-
junctive, §§ 52–54; re-
flexive object, § 116.

personne, § 104.

peut-être (que), word-order
after, § 161.

pluperfect indicative, § 67;
pluperfect and past an-
terior, § 153; replaced by
pluperfect subjunctive,
§ 193.

pluperfect subjunctive,
§§ 155, 156; replacing plu-
perfect indicative or con-
ditional anterior, § 193.

plural: of nouns and adje-
ctives, §§ 2, 32.

plus: in comparison, §§ 56–
59; as adverb of quanti-
ty, § 59; with ne, §§ 104,
218; position of, § 218.

point, with ne, §§ 104, 218.

possession, how denoted,
§§ 10, 85, 117, 203.

possessive adjective: forms,
§ 15; agreement and re-
petition, § 16; replaced by
definite article, § 203; in
polite address, § 211; in-
definite son, § 214.

possessive pronoun, §§ 83–
85; absolutely, § 211.

pour, of purpose, § 178; after
assez, trop, § 178; = how-
ever, § 217.

pouvoir + infinitive, § 165;
il se peut, § 185.

premier: in dates, § 134; in
titles, § 130; + subjunc-
tives, § 146.

preposition: with infinitive,
§ 80; distinctions, § 222;
corresponding to con-
junctions, § 223.

près de, § 222.

present indicative, idiomat-
ic use, § 187.

present participle, §§ 138,
139.

present subjunctive, §§ 142–
148; for imperfect sub-
junctive, § 156.

principal parts, formation
of tenses from, § 157.

pronominal adverbs, §§ 27,
39; position, §§ 68, 72.

pronouns, see personal, pos-
sessive, etc.

propre, § 211.

puisque and depuis que,
§ 223.

punctuation, Introduction,
P.

quand and lorsque, § 223.

quand (même), conditional
after, § 190.

quantity: expressions of,
§ 26; agreement of past
participles with, § 160, 196.

quantity, of vowels, Intro-
duction, *F.*

que, relative pronoun, § 36.

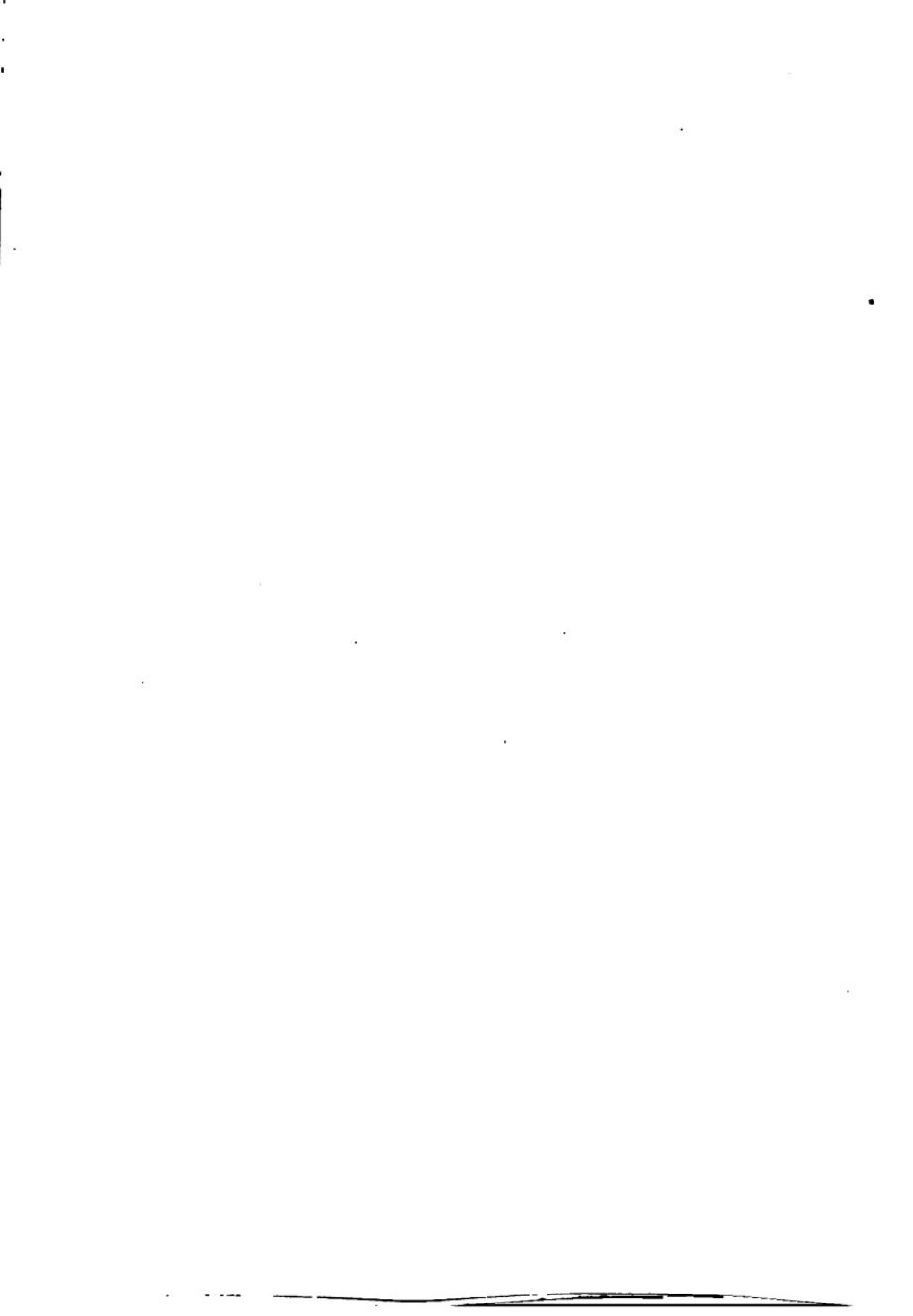
que? §§ 9, 89.

que, conjunction: in com-
parison, § 56; with sub-
junctive, § 142; not omit-
ted, § 144; replaced by
comme, § 208; replacing
other conjunctions, § 193.

quel? § 50; for qui? § 88;
compared with lequel?
§ 90.

- quel § 50.
 quelconque, § 215.
 quel que + subjunctive, § 146.
 quelque = however, § 217.
 quelque chose, § 103.
 quelque . . . que + subjunctive, § 215.
 quelqu'un, § 102.
 qu'est-ce que? §§ 37, 89.
 qui: relative pronoun, § 36; after preposition, § 93; = he who, etc., § 212; qui . . . qui, § 212.
 qui? §§ 9, 88.
 quiconque, § 215.
 qui que + subjunctive, § 215.
 quoi, § 97; de quoi, § 212.
 quoi? § 89.
 quoi que + subjunctive, § 215.
- reciprocal verbs, § 117.
 reflexive verbs, §§ 115–117; for English passive, § 117; compound tenses, § 119; omission of se, § 172.
 relative pronoun, §§ 36, 92–98, 212; agreement, § 36; not omitted, § 36; in interrogative locutions, § 37.
 rien, § 104.
- rompre, conjugation, Appendix, C, 1.
- sache, deferential statement, § 193.
- savoir + infinitive, § 166.
- se, reflexive to on, § 214.
- sembler, il (me) semble, construction, § 193.
- semi-vowels, Introduction, L.
- s'en aller, conjugation, Appendix, C, 5.
- seul + subjunctive, § 146.
- seulement, § 217.
- si: —aussi, § 56; —whether (if), § 113; replaced by que, § 193; —yes, § 217; —however, § 217.
- soi, indefinitely, § 54.
- subject, position of, § 161.
- stress, Introduction, E.
- subjunctive mood, §§ 142–148, 154–158; in noun clause, § 144; in adjectival clause, § 146; in adverbial clause, § 147; in principal sentence, § 148; tense sequence, §§ 145, 156; after negation, etc., § 193; subjunctive or infinitive, § 195; required after certain conjunctions, § 224.
- superlative of adjectives, § 57; of adverbs, § 59.
- sur: of dimension, § 131; in adjectival phrases, § 221.
- syllabification, Introduction, D.
- t-, in interrogation, § 8.
- tandis que and pendant que, § 223.
- tant, § 217.
- tel, § 105.
- tenses: various English forms, § 19; formation of compound tenses, §§ 45, 51, 119; from principal parts, § 157; see also present, imperfect, etc.
- teur, feminine of, § 206.
- there is (are), §§ 17, 31.
- time, how denoted, § 137.
- titles: numerical, § 130; with definite article, § 199.
- toi, for te, § 72.
- tout, § 40; with gens, § 207; as adverb, § 217; = however, § 217; toutes les fois que, § 217.
- tu = you, § 5.
- un, article or numeral, § 1.
- unique + subjunctive, § 146.
- venir + infinitive, or + à, or + de, § 170; + chercher, prendre, § 174.
- verb: regular conjugations, Appendix, C, 1; auxiliary, Appendix, C, 2; agreement with subject, §§ 4, 160; government of, § 180; constructions with two objects, § 195.
- verb-phrases, §§ 164–166, 168–170; 172, 174.
- vers, § 222.
- voici, § 17; voici . . . que, with present indicative, § 187.
- voilà, § 17; voilà . . . que, with present indicative, § 187; compared with il y a, §§ 17, 31.
- vouloir + infinitive, § 164.
- vous = you, § 5.
- vowels, pronunciation, Introduction, G–K.
- vu, agreement, § 196.
- weights, French, § 123.
- what = that which, § 98.
- what? §§ 9, 89.
- whatever, §§ 146, 215.
- whenever, § 217.
- wherever, § 217.
- which, in summing up, § 98.
- whoever, §§ 146, 215.
- whose, § 94.
- whose? § 88.
- will, distinctions, § 164.
- would, distinctions, § 164.
- y, pronominal adverb, § 39; y and là, § 39; position, §§ 39, 68, 72; omission with irai(s), § 168, note; with indefinite antecedent, § 210.
- yer, verbe in, Appendix, D.
- you, how translated, § 5.

ADVERTISEMENTS



Heath's Modern Language Series

FRENCH GRAMMARS, READERS, ETC.

- Anecdotes Faciles (Super). 25 cts.
Blanchaud's Progressive French Idioms. 60 cts.
Bouvet's Exercises in French Syntax and Composition. 75 cts.
Bowen's First Scientific French Reader. 90 cts.
Bruce's Dictées Françaises. 30 cts.
Bruce's Grammaire Française. \$1.15.
Bruce's Lectures Faciles. 60 cts.
Capus's Pour Charmer nos Petits. 50 cts.
Chapuzet and Daniel's Mes Premiers Pas en Français. 60 cts.
Clarke's Subjunctive Mood. An inductive treatise, with exercises. 50 cts.
Comfort's Exercises in French Prose Composition. 30 cts.
Davies's Elementary Scientific French Reader. 40 cts.
Edgren's Compendious French Grammar. \$1.15. Part I, 35 cts.
Fontaine's En France. 90 cts.
Fontaine's Lectures Courantes. \$1.00.
Fontaine's Livre de Lecture et de Conversation. 90 cts.
Fraser and Squair's Abridged French Grammar. \$1.10.
Fraser and Squair's Complete French Grammar. \$1.15.
Fraser and Squair's Shorter French Course. \$1.10.
French Anecdotes (Giese and Cool). 40 cts.
French Verb Blank (Fraser and Squair). 30 cts.
Grandgent's Essentials of French Grammar. \$1.00.
Grandgent's French Composition. 50 cts.
Grandgent's Materials for French Composition. Each, 12 cts.
Grandgent's Short French Grammar. 75 cts.
Heath's French Dictionary. Retail price, \$1.50.
Hénin's Méthode. 50 cts.
Hotchkiss's Le Premier Livre de Français. 35 cts.
Knowles and Favard's Grammaire de la Conversation. \$0.00.
Mansion's Exercises in French Composition. 60 cts.
Mansion's First Year French. For young beginners. 50 cts.
Méras' Le Petit Vocabulaire. 20 cts.
Pattou's Causeries en France. 70 cts.
Pellissier's Idiomatic French Composition. \$1.00.
Perfect French Possible (Knowles and Favard). 35 cts.
Prisoners of the Temple (Guerber). For French Composition. 25 cts.
Roux's Lessons in Grammar and Composition, based on *Colomba*. 18 cts.
Schenck's French Verb Forms. 20 cts.
Snow and Lebon's Easy French. 60 cts.
Story of Cupid and Psyche (Guerber). For French Composition. 18 cts.
Super's Preparatory French Reader. 70 cts.

Death's Modern Language Series

ELEMENTARY FRENCH TEXTS.

- Assolant's Récits de la Vieille France. Notes by E. B. Wauton. 25 cts.
Berthet's Le Pacte de Famine (Dickinson). 25 cts.
Bruno's Les Enfants Patriotes (Lyon). Vocabulary. 25 cts
Bruno's Tour de la France par deux Enfants (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Claretie's Pierrille (François). Vocab. and exs. 40 cts.
Daudet's Trois Contes Choisir (Sanderson). Vocabulary. 20 cts.
Desnoyers' Jean-Paul Choppert (Fontaine). Vocab. and exs. 40 cts.
Enault's Le Chien du Capitaine (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Erckmann-Chatrian's Le Conscrit de 1813 (Super). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Erckmann-Chatrian's L'Histoire d'un Paysan (Lyon). 25 cts.
Erckmann-Chatrian's Le Juif Polonais (Manley). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Erckmann-Chatrian's Madame Thérèse (Manley). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Fabliaux et Contes du Moyen Age (Mansion). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
France's Abeille (Lebon). 25 cts.
French Fairy Tales (Joynes). Vocabulary and exercises. 35 cts.
French Plays for Children (Spink). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Gervais's Un Cas de Conscience (Horsley). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
La Bedoulière's La Mère Michelet et son Chat (Lyon). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Labiche's La Grammaire (Levi). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Labiche's La Poudre aux Yeux (Wells). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Labiche's Le Voyage de M. Perrichon (Wells). Vocab. and exs. 30 cts.
Laboulaye's Contes Bleus (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
La Main Malheureuse (Guerber). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Laurie's Mémoires d'un Collégien (Super). Vocab. and exs. 50 cts.
Legouvé and Labiche's Cigale chez les Fourmis (Witherby). 20 cts.
Lemaître, Contes (Rensch). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Mairêt's La Tâche du Petit Pierre (Super). Vocab. and exs. 35 cts.
Maistre's La Jeune Sibérienne (Fontaine). Vocab. and exs. 30 cts.
Malot's Sans Famille (Spiers). Vocabulary and exercises. 40 cts.
Meilhac and Halévy's L'Eté de la St. Martin (François) Vocab. 25 cts.
Moinaux's Les deux Sourds (Spiers). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Müller's Grandes Découvertes Modernes. Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Récits de Guerre et de Révolution (Minssen). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Récits Historiques (Moffett). Vocabulary and exercises. 45 cts.
Saintine's Picciola (Super). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Ségur's Les Malheurs de Sophie (White). Vocab. and exs. 45 cts.
Selections for Sight Translation (Bruce). 15 cts.
Verne's L'Expédition de la Jeune Hardie (Lyon). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Death's Modern Language Series

INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

- About's *Le Roi des Montagnes* (Logie). 40 cts. With vocab. 50 cts.
About's *La Mère de la Marquise* (Brush). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Balzac: *Cinq Scènes de la Comédie Humaine* (Wells). Glossary. 55 cts.
Balzac's *Eugénie Grandet* (Spiers). Vocabulary. 55 cts.
Balzac's *Le Curé de Tours* (Super). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Chateaubriand's *Atala* (Kuhns). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Contes des Romanciers Naturalistes (Dow and Skinner). Vocab. 55 cts.
Daudet's *La Belle-Nivernaise* (Boielle). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Daudet's *Le Petit Chose* (Super). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Daudet's *Tartarin de Tarascon* (Hawkins). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Dumas's *Duc de Beaufort* (Kitchen). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Dumas's *La Question d'Argent* (Henning). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Dumas's *La Tulipe Noire* (Fontaine). 40 cts. With vocabulary. 50 cts.
Dumas's *Les Trois Mousquetaires* (Spiers). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Dumas's *Monte-Cristo* (Spiers). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Feuillet's *Roman d'un jeune homme pauvre* (Bruner). Vocabulary. 55 cts.
Gautier's *Voyage en Espagne* (Steel). 30 cts.
Gréville's *Dosia* (Hamilton). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Hugo's *Bug Jargal* (Boielle). 40 cts.
Hugo's *La Chute*. From *Les Misérables* (Huss). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Hugo's *Quatre-vingt-treize* (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 50 cts.
Lebiche's *La Cagnotte* (Farnsworth). 30 cts.
La Brète's *Mon Oncle et mon Curé* (Colin). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Lamartine's *Graziella* (Warren). 40 cts.
Lamartine's *Jeanne d'Arc* (Barrère). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Lamartine's *Scènes de la Révolution Française* (Super). Vocab. 40 cts.
Lesage's *Gil Blas* (Sanderson). 45 cts.
Maupassant: *Huit Contes Choisis* (White). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Michelet: *Extraits de l'histoire de France* (Wright). 35 cts.
Musset: *Trois Comédies* (McKenzie). 30 cts.
Sarcey's *Le Siège de Paris* (Spiers). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Taine's *L'Ancien Régime* (Giese). Vocabulary. 65 cts.
Theuriet's *Bigarreau* (Fontaine). Vocab. and exercises. 35 cts.
Tocqueville's *Voyage en Amérique* (Ford). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Vigny's *Cinq-Mars* (Sankey). Abridged. 60 cts.
Vigny's *Le Cachet Rouge* (Fortier). 25 cts.
Vigny's *La Canne de Jonc* (Spiers). 40 cts.
Voltaire's *Zadig* (Babbitt). Vocabulary. 45 cts.

Death's Modern Language Series

INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

- Augier's *Le Gendre de M. Poirier* (Wells). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Bazin's *Les Oberlé* (Spiers). Vocabulary. 50 cts.
- Beaumarchais's *Le Barbier de Séville* (Spiers). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- French Lyrics (Bowen). 60 cts.
- Gautier's *Jettatura* (Schinz). 35 cts.
- Halévy's *L'Abbé Constantin* (Logie). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Halévy's *Un Mariage d'Amour* (Hawkins). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Historiettes Modernes (Fontaine). Vol. I, 35 cts. Vol. II, 35 cts.
- La France qui travaille (Jago). Vocabulary. 50 cts.
- Lectures Historiques (Moffett). Vocabulary. 55 cts.
- Leti's *Pêcheur d'Islande* (Super). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Loti's *Ramuntcho* (Fontaine). 35 cts.
- Loti's *Roman d'un Enfant*. (Whittem). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
- Marivaux's *Le Jeu de l'amour et du hasard* (Fortier). Vocab. 35 cts.
- Merimée's *Chronique du Règne de Charles IX* (Desages). 30 cts.
- Merimée's *Colomba* (Fontaine). 35 cts. With vocabulary, 45 cts.
- Molière en Récits (Chapuzet and Daniels). Vocabulary. 50 cts.
- Molière's *L'Avare* (Levi). 35 cts.
- Molière's *Le Bourgeois Gentilhomme* (Warren). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Molière's *Le Médecin Malgré Lui* (Hawkins). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Pailleron's *Le Monde où l'on s'ennuie* (Pendleton). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Poèmes et Chants de France (Daniels and Travers). Vocabulary. 50 cts.
- Racine's *Andromaque* (Wells). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Racine's *Athalie* (Eggert). 30 cts.
- Racine's *Esther* (Spiers). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Renan's *Souvenirs d'Enfance et de Jeunesse* (Babbitt). 75 cts.
- Sand's *La Mare au Diable* (Sumichrast). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Sand's *La Petite Fadette* (Super). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Sandeau's *Mlle de la Seiglière* (Warren). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Sardou's *Les Pattes de Mouche* (Farnsworth). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Scribe's *Bataille de Dames* (Wells). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Scribe's *Le Verre d'Eau* (Eggert). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Sept Grands Auteurs du XIX^e Siècle (Fortier). Lectures. 60 cts.
- Souvestre's *Un Philosophe sous les Toits* (Fraser). 50 cts. Vocab. 55 cts.
- Thiers's *Expédition de Bonaparte en Egypte* (Fabregou). 35 cts.
- Verne's *Tour du Monde en quatre-vingts jours* (Edgren). Vocab. 45 cts.
- Verne's *Vingt mille lieues sous la mer* (Fontaine). Vocab. 45 cts.
- Zola's *La Débâcle* (Wells). Abridged. 60 cts.

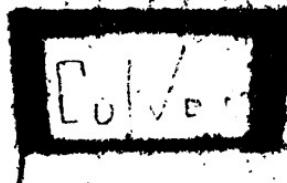
Eleanor Thomas

¶ b p

Claws of
love and
a kiss on
each wave
oh! dear.

Demonstrative adjective
This = ce - at cette
cey - before a noun
Demonstrated pronoun -
that = ce, cela, celle
celle, celi, celle

Relative Pronoun
that - que
Conjunction that = que
not omitted in French
but omitted in English



Demonstrative adjective
This = Ce - cet - cette
ces - before a noun
Demonstrative pronoun -
that = Ce, cela, celle
celle, ceul, celle

Relative Pronoun
that - que
Qui ^{que}
Conjunction that = que
John Smith ^{que} ~~the~~ ^{John} ~~the~~
is often omitted in English